



U.S. Department of Justice

Federal Bureau of Investigation

Washington, D.C. 20535

*appealed  
9/29/04*

MR ERNIE LAZAR  
APARTMENT #6  
577 SOUTH THORNHILL ROAD  
PALM SPRINGS, CA 92264 7884

September 21, 2004

*#1 = 12/28/59*

*#37 = 3/29/61*

*179 pp  
remaining  
av #38. end of file*

*✓ Houston - JBS*  
Subject: FILE 62 1521

FOIPA No. 0997470- 000

*includes  
File Index  
1) date of John Birch  
2) Source and July-Aug 1959  
3) Why people become Cuts  
by label*

Dear Mr. Lazar:

The enclosed documents were reviewed under the Freedom of Information/Privacy Acts (FOIPA), Title 5, United States Code, Section 552/552a. Deletions have been made to protect information which is exempt from disclosure, with the appropriate exemptions noted on the page next to the excision. In addition, a deleted page information sheet was inserted in the file to indicate where pages were withheld entirely. The exemptions used to withhold information are marked below and explained on the enclosed Form OPCA-16a:

*FOI*  
*Elizabeth C. Brown*  
*Chubb and Co. page 1000*  
**Section 552**

*book "The Enemy  
At His Back"  
per RW "the full  
length of Cat  
renovation &  
subversion in  
the U.S.  
Freedom"*

*James J. Kilpatrick  
The Sovereign State*

*Arthur Bliss Lane  
1948  
"I Saw Poland  
Betrayed" 1948*

*James O'Neal  
- G. A. Warner  
American Com*

*b: 1895  
1947 bk: report  
1972*

☐ (b)(1)  
☐ (b)(2)  
☐ (b)(3) \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

☐ (b)(4)  
☐ (b)(5)  
☐ (b)(6)

☐ (b)(7)(A)  
☐ (b)(7)(B)  
☒ (b)(7)(C)  
☒ (b)(7)(D)  
☐ (b)(7)(E)  
☐ (b)(7)(F)  
☐ (b)(8)  
☐ (b)(9)

**Section 552a**

☐ (d)(5)  
☐ (j)(2)  
☐ (k)(1)  
☐ (k)(2)  
☐ (k)(3)  
☐ (k)(4)  
☐ (k)(5)  
☐ (k)(6)  
☐ (k)(7)

296 page(s) were reviewed and 282 page(s) are being released.

☐ Document(s) were located which originated with, or contained information concerning other Government agency(ies) [OGA]. This information has been:

- ☐ referred to the OGA for review and direct response to you.
- ☐ referred to the OGA for consultation. The FBI will correspond with you regarding this information when the consultation is finished.

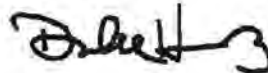
☒ You have the right to appeal any denials in this release. Appeals should be directed in writing to the Co-Director, Office of Information and Privacy, U.S. Department of Justice, Flag Building, Suite 570, Washington, D.C. 20530-0001 within sixty days from the date of this letter. The envelope and the letter should be clearly marked "Freedom of Information Appeal" or "Information Appeal." Please cite the FOIPA number assigned to your request so that it may be easily identified.

*Appeal  
a) no reply to  
serial #1  
b) process  
1959 BB  
ask for photo  
reduction  
2 pp on 1 sheet*

☐ The enclosed material is from the main investigative file(s) in which the subject(s) of your request was the focus of the investigation. Our search located additional references, in files relating to other individuals, or matters, which may or may not be about your subject(s). Our experience has shown, when ident, references usually contain information similar to the information processed in the main file(s). Because of our significant backlog, we have given priority to processing only the main investigative file(s). If you want the references, you must submit a separate request for them in writing, and they will be reviewed at a later date, as time and resources permit.

☐ See additional information which follows.


Sincerely yours,



David M. Hardy  
Section Chief  
Record/Information  
Dissemination Section  
Records Management Division

Enclosure(s) (2)

As per your request only 300 pages were processed. There are 179 pages that have not been processed. These pages consist of newspaper articles and letters requesting information about the John Birch Society.





FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION  
FOIPA  
DELETED PAGE INFORMATION SHEET

Serial Description ~ COVER SHEET

12/28/1959

Total Deleted Page(s) ~ 14

Page 241 ~ b7C  
Page 242 ~ b7C  
Page 247 ~ b7C  
Page 248 ~ b7C  
Page 249 ~ b7C  
Page 251 ~ b7C  
Page 252 ~ b7C  
Page 263 ~ b7C  
Page 267 ~ b7C  
Page 268 ~ b7C  
Page 277 ~ b7C  
Page 279 ~ b7C  
Page 280 ~ b7C  
Page 288 ~ b7C

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX



**Federal Bureau of Investigation**  
**Freedom of Information / Privacy Acts**  
**Release**

**Subject: FILE 62 1521 (F0)**

TRUE COPY

REYERSON & COMER  
Attorneys at Law  
Citizens Bank Building  
Hutchinson, Minnesota

Telephone 1355 or 75305

b7C

December 28, 1959

Hon. J. Edgar Hoover  
Director, Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir:-

It is possible that I am barking up the wrong tree in writing you about the matter hereinafter set forth, but I am going to impose on someone in your department, hoping they will read this letter and then answer it in some way.

As back-ground material, I am a U. S. Citizen, born in Minnesota in 1897, served in the Air Corps as a 2nd Lt. in World War I and then enlisted and put in around three years in World War II as a Major in Combat Intelligence, being assigned to the 82nd Fighter Group in North Africa and Italy. I am married, have two daughters, the younger one married, lived in Cody, Wyoming, and within the past year moved to Houston, Texas. She has two boys and one girl, is of the "worrying" type, worried about the welfare of her children, what the future holds for them, whether our Democratic form of government will survive or whether the Commies will take over.

My daughter's husband is working in the house construction business in Houston, is associated with a man named [redacted] I believe, who has been in the construction business for some time in and around Houston but who has recently moved either to San Antonio or Austin.

b7C

It seems that ever since my daughter and her husband have been in Houston they have been exposed to talk and a campaign by this man [redacted] to show that this country is being sold down the river, that the Commies will take over without question by 1965, that President Eisenhower is a communist along with all the top officials in the country, that they have sold out to Khrushchev at Camp David, and in general talking a campaign of "fear" so that it has gotten my daughter down. She is home here for the holidays, and after some discussions I suggested she call your office in Houston and get the low down on the situation there.

b7C

TRUE COPY

JAN 8 1960

62-1521-1



TRUE COPY

It seems this is all brought about by an organization known as "The John Birch Society", founded in the name of some man who worked against the Commies in China, was later killed by the Commies. This Society has published a "blue book", which I tried to read, but it was filled with statements for which I could find no factual backing, hence I did not put much stock in it. Then when my daughter came home I found out how serious this book was being taken, what views were held as to our top officials and leaders in this country. Now I am told they have put out a "black book", only eleven of them printed. When I try to pin her down as to why all of this is not exposed in the newspapers and magazines I am told they are all "red" and will not print the truth.

My impression of this is a little like that of what Goebels did psychologically with the German people prior to the outbreak of World War II, tell a big enough lie often enough and people will believe it. Frankly this whole matter smells to me of the possibility that the Commies are promoting this to discredit our leaders, including the President, that they deliberately are trying to instill "fear" in the hearts of Americans that by 1965 the Commies are going to take over, that it is inevitable, and try and stampede people in to giving up.

Can you check the "John Birch Society", or do you have any information on all this activity where our top men are branded as being Communists? I realize that this may sound like the ramblings of a person who has lost most of his marbles, but I assure you I would like to pin down some of this talk, then get my daughter straightened out so she will not lose her mind worrying about what is going to happen by 1965. What worries me too is the fact that this could be a line of action, psychologically, that would hit its mark, for these members of the "John Birch Society" protest too loudly, I believe, that they are against Communism and that they cannot get their views across to the people generally because the press, etc. is "red" and will not disseminate the information.

I shall be only too happy to hear from someone in your department in answer to this letter.

Very truly yours,

[Redacted Signature]

b7C

TRUE COPY

(A) Nine booklets re John Birch Society.

(7-5-60)

62-1521-1A

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUL 5 1960	
FBI - WASHINGTON	

b7C

6-30-60

PUBLICATIONS RECEIVED FROM [REDACTED]

RELATIVE TO THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY; BP SA. [REDACTED]

1. The Blue Book of the John Birch Society
2. Bulletin for March 1960
3. Bulletin for June 1960
4. Booklet - Why People Become Communists
5. Pamphlet - The Scoreboard
6. Application form for membership in the John Birch Society
7. January 1959 issue of American Opinion
8. March 1960 issue of American Opinion
9. Publication in sheet form from Christian Anti-Communist Crusade,  
titled "WILL YOU BE FREE TO CELEBRATE CHRISTMAS IN THE FUTURE?"

✓ NOT TO BE RETURNED

62-1521- 1A1



The Blue Book  
of  
THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

Second Printing  
Copyright 1959 by Robert Welch

# AMERICAN OPINION

*In this number*

**ONE HUNDRED STEPS  
TO THE TRUTH**

**AN INFORMAL REVIEW**

**Volume II Number 1**

**JANUARY 1959**

**50¢**

62-1521-



## AMERICAN OPINION

### Editor

ROBERT WELCH

### Associate Editors

HUBERT KREGELOH  
J. B. MATTHEWS  
WILLIAM S. SCHLAMM  
HANS SENNHOLZ

### Contributing Editors

COLM BROGAN  
MEDFORD EVANS  
RODNEY GILBERT  
EDWIN McDOWELL  
ELIZABETH WILSON

### Editorial

#### Advisory Committee

The following group of distinguished Americans give the editor comments and advice which are helpful in determining the editorial policy, contents, and opinions of this magazine. But no responsibility can be attributed to any members of this Committee for any specific articles, items, or conclusions which appear in these pages.

— GEORGE W. ARMSTRONG, JR.  
— JOHN U. BARR  
— K. G. BENTSON  
— LAURENCE E. BUNKEA  
— F. GANO CHANCE  
— JAMES L. COXER  
— KENNETH COLEGROVE  
— MARTIN J. CONDON, III  
— ROBERT B. DRESSER  
— CHARLES EDISON  
— WM. J. GREDE  
— FRANK E. HOLMAN  
— B. E. HUTCHINSON  
— ALFRED KOHLBERG  
— J. BRACKEN LEE  
— CLARENCE MANION  
— FRANK E. MARLAND, JR.  
— N. FLOYD MCGOWIN  
— W. L. MCGEATH  
— W. B. McMILLAN  
— ADOLPHE MENJOU  
— LUDWIG VON MIES  
— COLA G. PARKER  
— J. HOWARD FEW  
— J. NELSON SHEPHERD  
— ROBERT W. STODDARD  
— ERNEST G. SWIGERT  
— A. C. WEDEMETER  
— W. H. WILBUR  
— GEORGE H. WILLIAMSON

CONTENTS—JANUARY, 1959

## Old Books and New Reviews

January 1, 1959

Dear Reader:

This issue of *American Opinion* is an autonomous island, outside the usual boundaries of our effort.

It is intended primarily for reference purposes. Its contents are not tied, by timeliness or subject matter, to any particular publication date. Partly for this reason, it was held out of the Christmas and New Year mails, and may not actually reach you until after the February number — which must be mailed as early in January as the printer can make possible.

✓ The criminal irresponsibility of so much of the American press has never been shown more clearly than on this very day. Fidel Castro, as murderous and cunning an agent of the Kremlin as Mao Tze-tung or Janos Kadar, is right now taking over Cuba. He has the blessing of our government. Our newspapers are full of headlines and news stories glorifying the event, with hardly a line to tell us of Castro's Communist connections and support. Moscow is establishing a terrifically important Communist beachhead right at our shores, without the American people having any chance to learn this truth from their papers, radio, TV, or magazines of large circulation.

To find out what has really happened over the past quarter of a century, and what is now happening at so rapidly increased a rate, becomes daily more difficult—and daily more important. For those who have the patriotism and the courage, to seek to learn the frightening truth, we hope that the bibliography contained in these pages will be helpful and encouraging.

Sincerely,

*Robert Welch*

AMERICAN OPINION—is published eleven months in the year by Robert Welch, Inc., Belmont 78, Massachusetts, U. S. A. Subscription rates are five dollars per year in the United States and Canada; seven dollars elsewhere. Copyright 1958 by Robert Welch, Inc. We use almost no articles except those written to order to fit our specific needs, and can assume no responsibility for the return of unsolicited manuscripts.



## ONE HUNDRED STEPS TO THE TRUTH

✓ The next two or three years may determine the fate of the American Republic. We implore our readers to take this warning literally. So precise an estimate is neither a nervous guess nor the product of an overwrought imagination. It follows directly from any systematic study of the Communist time table for world conquest. For we are faced with an *open* conspiracy. And the failure of America to preserve its promise and its life will not be due, finally, to America's weakness at decisive moments. It will be due to the refusal of the American people to see the obvious, to recognize the truth that is being flaunted before our eyes, to read what the enemy has openly put on paper.

The Communists have never disguised their intent—nor their strategy. For the first time in history a would-be conqueror of the world has contemptuously specified his plans, explained his techniques, and even announced his time-table, from the beginning of his attack—which was forty years ago. The advance of Communism, from a negligible splinter party of professional Russian rabble rousers in 1917, to a world-wide empire of more than a billion slaves in 1958, has proceeded exactly according to a brazenly publicized schedule. Nothing was ever kept secret; and yet nothing had to be changed. The conspiracy flourished in the open because the Communists were entirely correct in assuming that the comfort-loving West would refuse to believe what the Communists disdained to deny.

A future historian of our times will have no doubt that the most effective secret weapon, in the hands of the victorious Communists was the handling of public opinion in America. They have always reckoned, and always correctly, that the desire of the American people "not to be bothered" would, at every critical moment, prove greater than their considerable native intelligence, and even greater than the basic human need for self-preservation. It always was. It still is. America is being strangled by its love of comfort.



## One Hundred Steps To The Truth

We are offering this special issue of *AMERICAN OPINION* as one means of trying to pierce the complacent smugness of the comfortable. We know how compulsively the red-blooded American, exhausted by his business and his hobbies, shies away from getting involved in a serious study of the sinister truth. And no man can be compelled to seek the truth. But we may at least tell where that truth can be found. And we can say one thing to all who will listen: "If it is comfort you want, simply keep on inhaling the vapors from the soothing news magazines; but if you prefer awareness and survival to comfort and decay, then here are a hundred books which you had better read."

These one hundred books are arranged alphabetically (by authors' names), and are reviewed as concisely as the editors know how to do it. They have been selected from one specific point of view: How can a patriotic American, stringently limited in time and confined to the demands of a strenuous job, acquaint himself with the facts of—and come to understand—the open conspiracy that is engulfing our land? There are other excellent books for this purpose, besides those we have listed, of course. And there may be many better ones published in the time we still have left. But this list has been compiled by men who have spent most of their lives in studying its general subject matter. These hundred books can be read in one thousand hours. So that a person who had read none of them (an unlikely assumption), and who decided to devote three hours a day to the hard labor of serious reading, could have digested all of them by the end of 1959. Nor do we know of a better, or more rewarding, resolution for the New Year.

Most of the one hundred books either have not been reviewed at all by the nation's great newspapers, or else they have been ironically dismissed as the irrelevant outpourings of fanatical sectarians. A most important part of the Communist open conspiracy has been to smear and silence those who recognized and exposed it. Encouraged and protected by the tired cynicism of the lords of America's "liberal" press, scores of Communist agents and fellow-travelers have been entrenched as professional

## One Hundred Steps To The Truth

book-reviewers for years. They have seen to it that Americans read little except what would increase our ignorance and further our destruction. The urgent literature, the books vitally concerned with the juggernaut that is moving in on us, never came out of quarantine. (Two of the listed one hundred books tell of this manipulation in great detail—John T. Flynn's *While You Slept* and Frank Hughes' *Prejudice and the Press*.)

The dedicated groups of American patriots, who fight this conspiracy, are stymied by various obstacles, from poverty to calumny. But no other obstacle is so hard to overcome as the tendency of their compatriots simply to dismiss facts. What keeps our country steadily losing this struggle for national survival is not any basic superiority of the foe, nor any corruption in the core of the American character, but the stubborn American determination to shrug off adversity and to keep a blind spot for the disagreeable. It has been called "invincible ignorance."

In private life this type of deliberate optimism may do wonders. But in the broader social existence permeated by an international conspiracy, it is suicidal. Our enemy, confronted with a society of Pollyannas, wins battle after battle — without fighting. AMERICAN OPINION, considering itself at war since its inception, wants to do its part in that war in every way it can. One logical contribution is for us to make it just a little easier for patriotic Americans to break down that shield of their own blindness, behind which the foe steadily advances. In a spirit of urgency we present our list of the hundred books, as a diet of historical truth, for those who wish to preserve the freedom that only the truth can save.



## ORDER BLANK

You may order the books reviewed or advertised in AMERICAN OPINION from THE BOOKMAILER — the Complete Bookstore-by-Mail representing all United States publishers. All books reviewed in this issue (except the three U. S. Government publications) are listed on our order blanks on either Page 4, the inside back cover, or the back cover. You pay only the bookstore price. On the out-of-print volumes we shall be glad to quote you the price of those found for you by our out-of-print service. THE BOOKMAILER pays the postage, anywhere in the world.

(No. of copies)

Barmine: <i>One Who Survived</i> .....	Out of Print
Barron: <i>Inside the State Department</i> .....	\$3.00
Bastiat: <i>The Law</i> .....	.65
Bentley: <i>Out Of Bondage</i> .....	3.50
Borkenau: <i>European Communism</i> .....	6.50
Brown: <i>The Enemy At His Back</i> .....	4.00
Buckley and Bozell: <i>McCarthy And His Enemies</i> ..	5.00
Budenz: <i>The Techniques Of Communism</i> .....	5.00
Bundy: <i>Collectivism In The Churches</i> .....	5.00
Burnham: <i>The Web Of Subversion</i> .....	Out of Print
Caldwell: <i>Still The Rice Grows Green</i> .....	3.75
Caldwell: <i>South Of Tokyo</i> .....	3.50
Castle: <i>Billions, Blunders And Baloney</i> .....	3.50
Chamberlin: <i>America's Second Crusade</i> .....	Out of Print
Chambers: <i>Witness</i> .....	2.95
Ciechanovski: <i>Defeat In Victory</i> .....	Out of Print
Creel: <i>Russia's Race For Asia</i> .....	Out of Print
Dallin: <i>Soviet Russia And the Far East</i> .....	5.00
Dallin: <i>Forced Labor In Soviet Russia</i> .....	Out of Print
Dayton: <i>Walter Reuther</i> .....	4.50
Dies: <i>The Trojan Horse In America</i> .....	Out of Print
Draskovich: <i>Tito: Moscow's Trojan Horse</i> .....	5.00
Eastman: <i>Reflections On The Failure Of Socialism</i> ..	2.75
Evans: <i>The Secret War For The A-Bomb</i> .....	3.95
Fitch: <i>Formosa Beachhead</i> .....	Out of Print
..... Total number of books ordered      Total price \$ .....	

THE BOOKMAILER,  
Box 101, Murray Hill Station, New York 16, New York.

Please send the books checked above to:

Name .....

Street .....

City ..... Zone ..... State .....

Enclosed find \$ .....



## OLD BOOKS AND NEW REVIEWS

Alexandre Barmine: ONE WHO SURVIVED  
(Putnam, N. Y.; 337 pages, Out of Print)

A young and attractive Soviet dignitary, who had made a fast career in the military and diplomatic service of his country, left the Reds in 1937. Though he had a much greater opportunity than most Soviet citizens to learn about the outside world, he knew woefully little about "capitalism." His autobiography and confessional remains a revealing document, not only because of the intimate inside information it contains, but also because it tells, rather fascinatingly, about the pressures and temptations that cajole and seduce a young Russian to comply obediently with the demands of the regime. Though it appeared many years before the term "brainwashing" was coined, *One Who Survived* presents in a nutshell the fundamental techniques the Communists have developed in their successful bid for totalitarian control over man's mind.

Bryton Barron: INSIDE THE STATE DEPARTMENT  
(Comet, N. Y.; 178 pages, \$3.00)

Mr. Barron, a former officer of the State Department, was quietly working on his assignment — the collection and evaluation of State Department papers pertaining to certain important aspects of our wartime and postwar policies. And suddenly the roof fell in on him. He had, with a perfectly unperturbed conscience, and entirely within his sworn duties as a State Department historian, edited his findings for publication. But the New Deal-Fair Deal-Eisenhower Establishment prosecutes any attempt at keeping the American people informed, about the doings of its "leaders," as a crime. And naturally Mr. Barron lost his job. But the American public gained an excellent chance to learn about the jungle mores that prevail inside the State Department Bureaucracy and about the



## Old Books And New Reviews

*rigid censorship that Washington, if it is to have its way, means to impose on the essential information on which the Constitutional sovereignty of the American people is built.*

Frederic Bastiat: *THE LAW*

(Foundation for Economic Education, Irvington, N. Y.; 75 pages, \$0.65)

Despite having been written over a hundred years ago in France, *The Law* has never been more pertinent than it is to America today. Immediately after the Revolution of 1848, Bastiat — French statesman, economist and author — noticed how irrevocably his country was advancing down the illusory road to socialism. With amazing insight and deftness he exposed each socialistic fallacy, explaining how that system — regardless of its original good intentions — must inevitably degenerate into Communism.

Today in America, as in Bastiat's France, the same situation is being enacted. Socialism (ironically enough, often through majority vote) has replaced the original American idea of self-reliance. Life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness — at one time self-evident endowments of God — are being more and more bequeathed and administered by the State. Only after one reads *The Law*, and realizes that it was written not about present day America, but about France of a century ago, can he appreciate Santayana's dictum that man, if he ignores the mistakes of history, is destined to repeat them.

Elizabeth Bentley: *OUT OF BONDAGE*

(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 311 pages, \$3.50)

Miss Bentley was the first witness before a Congressional Committee who somehow electrified the American public. Even before the Hiss-Chambers case engulfed the American scene with an epochal flood of soul-searching, Miss Bentley's testimony about her own experience inside the Soviet underground in this country awakened the numb American senses. In *Out Of Bondage*, she tells with moving simplicity and feminine warmth



## Old Books And New Reviews

*how a native American girl of quality, charm and a sense of family-ties, could get involved in treacherous activities; how the exposure to Communist ruthlessness and trickery destroys even a romantic's naive illusions; and how a woman recovers her balance by returning to the faith of her fathers.*

➤ **Franz Borkenau: EUROPEAN COMMUNISM**  
(Harpers, N. Y.; 564 pages, \$6.50)

The late Professor Borkenau, a scholar with meticulous attention to detail, understood Communism not so much for its theoretical aspects and its great strategic conceptions, as for its tactical routine. In *European Communism*, he gives a down-to-earth analysis of the persons, the national peculiarities, the historical episodes that have been forming the various European branches of International Communism. It is a kaleidoscopic view of Europe's political underground, seen through the eyes of a learned insider and presented with considerable common sense. The book, true enough, should be read with some caution. Borkenau tends to overestimate the seriousness of internal Communist conflicts and, therefore, underrates the staying power of the "apparatus." But his book is the best available history of the European Communist movement, that remains the main cadre of the great Soviet attack.

**Elizabeth Churchill Brown: THE ENEMY AT HIS BACK**  
(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 234 pages, \$4.00)

The question future American generations will restlessly ponder is this: How could the United States, in 1945, at the very peak of its military power and political impact abroad, lose the world in such a jiffy? Elizabeth Churchill Brown (the wife of one of Washington's most distinguished correspondents) has diligently, and with magnificent instincts, ploughed through the mountainous records — the printed memoirs, the government publications, and the over-sized archives. Out of this massive documentation emerges the full design of Communist penetration and subversion in the United States officialdom. Of



## Old Books And New Reviews

particular interest is Mrs. Brown's illuminating discussion of the crucial weeks in 1945, during which time the dupes, agents and stooges of Communism, inside the United States Government, assured the Soviets of an immense and dirt-cheap booty in Asia — when the United States had already won the war against Japan.

Wm. F. Buckley, Jr. and L. Brent Bozell:

### McCARTHY AND HIS ENEMIES

(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 413 pages, \$5.00)

*What was it that made a young Senator from Wisconsin the most maligned, the best known and perhaps the most significant American of his generation? His record — the dedicated work that the Communists all around the world had so successfully labeled "McCarthyism" — has been falsified beyond recognition by the "liberal" press. In McCarthy And His Enemies, the authors undertake to re-create this record with painstaking accuracy. They examine every step in McCarthy's lamentably short career. They restore the circumstances and the demonstrable facts in all the "cases" through which the tireless Senator attempted to prove the mortally perilous penetration of our government. And, having substituted the incontrovertible facts for the slanderous "liberal" fancy, the authors then proceed to define society's correct response to subversion. An introduction by William S. Schlamme discusses the intellectual scandal of "Anti-McCarthyism" — that hysterical outbreak of all the typical obsessions that have taken hold of our disoriented "intelligentsia."*

➤ Louis Budenz: THE TECHNIQUES OF COMMUNISM  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 342 pages, \$5.00)

Budenz will indubitably go down in history as one of the most important scholars in the murky field of "social research." His sole theme is American Communism and he attacks it, with every new book, as if his life depended on his analytical success — as indeed it does. This personal participation that shows on



## Old Books And New Reviews

every page has been held against Budenz as proof of his "unscientific" approach. But it is a fallacy to demand from the social scientist the remote indifference toward his object that remains the duty of the *natural* scientist. The social scientist deals with a unique and infinitely precious material — the fate of man which, unlike the inanimate objects of nature, cannot be "coolly" studied under laboratory conditions. Budenz, who once occupied a high position in the American Communist movement, has, even after his conversion, retained the sense of urgency that had originally misled him into the enemy's camp. Every book of his (and particularly the recommended one) therefore remains an event — not only because it is a gold mine of factual information, but also because it takes, accurately, the pulse of our times.

➤ Edgar C. Bundy: *COLLECTIVISM IN THE CHURCHES*  
(Church League of America, Wheaton, Ill.; 354 pages, \$5.00)

Mr. Bundy, a Protestant lay theologian, has produced an encyclopaedia of those church people and organizations that have been "neutralized" by Communist penetration. He explores and explains how the Communists have been able to distort the teachings of Christ until they seem identical with Marxian tenets — a process known to all students of the heresy as the "social gospel movement." Bundy names hundreds of names, unearths detailed evidence of surreptitious cross-relations, and discusses the unwarranted intervention of various church groups in politics and legislation — an intervention that always turns out to give support to the Socialist cause.

➤ James Burnham: *THE WEB OF SUBVERSION*  
(John Day, N. Y.; 248 pages, Out of Print)

*One of the toughest problems in the self-education of an American patriot is to find his way through the maze of exposés and information, pouring in cascades of words from competent sources. Burnham has filtered, organized and correlated the huge material on subversion within our government into a suspense-*



## Old Books And New Reviews

ful report on the essence of the Communist conspiracy. It is a true primer, and at the same time, an advanced textbook on the subject. And it is impossible to read *The Web of Subversion* without a growing stupefied amazement: How could a literate country be so easily taken in by such an open conspiracy? For the most frightening part of Burnham's concise tale is not his report on the objectives and the shrewdness of the operators — it is the credulity and irresponsibility of respectable and reputable citizens who continue to serve as the front for subversion.

John C. Caldwell: *STILL THE RICE GROWS GREEN*  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 312 pages, \$3.75)

### *SOUTH OF TOKYO*

(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 160 pages, \$3.50)

Too few Americans have comprehended yet, to the point of "feeling it in their bones," that the Far East is an American area of decision. But it is. What happens in China, in Japan, and in Korea will determine the life expectancy of our children in Detroit, Richmond and Boston. Of all the experts who write on the Far East, none is better equipped than John C. Caldwell. He was born in China, the son of an American missionary who, for fifty years, had preached and doctored in Haitang Island. He speaks several Chinese dialects and Korean, has been personally acquainted with most protagonists in the great Asian drama, and has held important jobs for the United States Government in China and Korea (where he helped to establish the South Korean Government). He also knows Japan and the Philippines intimately.

The recommended two books give a crucial part of the record of stupidity, ignorance, poor judgment and outright treason — all the American "mistakes" — that were instrumental in throwing one-fourth of all mankind to the Communist wolves. In *South of Tokyo*, Caldwell shows how another 170 million people in Southeast Asia are, before our eyes, being swallowed by the Communist tide — and their fate arouses little more than yawning in the United States. But the forth-



## Old Books And New Reviews

coming fall of Southeast Asia will deliver India and the few other remaining "neutralist" nations of Asia, and then Western Europe as well, into the Red orbit.

Eugene W. Castle: *BILLIONS, BLUNDERS AND BALONEY*  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 288 pages, \$3.50)

An American businessman, who has also served his government in important assignments at home and abroad, takes a realistic look at what is known as "Foreign Aid." Castle, who has travelled widely and who has studied "Foreign Aid" in operation, is not one to be impressed by the usual pious protestations of our "One-Worlders," who habitually bury the problem under thick layers of "do-gooding" phraseology. He is, however, concerned with three-dimensional reality. He investigates on the spot; and, right on the face of it, he knows what he is talking about. The story of ludicrous blunder, of criminal waste and of subversive machinations against the welfare of the United States, that unfolds in *Billions, Blunders and Baloney*, is also the story of perhaps the greatest political scandal of our age.

William Henry Chamberlin:  
*AMERICA'S SECOND CRUSADE*

(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 372 pages, Out of Print)

Chamberlin, who for many years was stationed in Moscow as the correspondent of the *Christian Science Monitor*, combines a superlative knowledge of world affairs with the principled convictions of a true educator. His book on the futile struggle of a naive West against a bold and purposeful Communist East is, among other things, a devastating history of the follies and betrayals that have mortgaged American destiny under the Roosevelt and Truman Administrations. The author's authority is unchallenged and indeed unquestionable. Though he is, and has been for decades, an outstanding newspaperman and columnist, he is never interested in the "sensational" exposé. He writes with the simplicity of a true craftsman.



## Old Books And New Reviews

✓ Whittaker Chambers: *WITNESS*  
(Random, N. Y.; 808 pages, \$2.95)

The pains of his personal experiences, and the extraordinary talents of Whittaker Chambers, have made his book a classic in our time. It is surely impossible to comprehend the stresses of this age without a careful reference to *Witness*. Of the many confessional books by former Communists, this is the only one written from the point of view of true spiritual conversion. When he wrote *Witness*, Chambers had reached the depth and the psychological understanding that only a profound religious experience can give. But his power of recollection has not been affected by his conversion. With an unprecedented faithfulness to detail, Chambers bares the emotions and the reasoning of an "apparatchick" in America. It is only an ephemeral value of the book that *Witness* remains the definitive statement on *l'affaire Hiss*. Its lasting importance is the mature insight with which Chambers analyzes the intellectual makings and the life of a Communist.

Jan Ciechanovski: *DEFEAT IN VICTORY*  
(Doubleday, N. Y.; 397 pages, Out of Print)

A Polish diplomat and officer of the highest caliber presents here, with the authenticity that only personal participation in history can supply, the undiluted record of what remains the epitome of Rooseveltian shame — the naked betrayal of Poland. This (Ciechanovski does not for a moment allow his reader to forget) was, after all, the nation over whose integrity the Allies started World War II. With superb calm, Ciechanovski recites chapter and verse of every single move and jerk that pushed the Allies towards the ultimate murder of Polish freedom and independence. The book keeps the promise of its title; it explains how and why the mighty coalition of democracies, led by the United States, snatched defeat from the jaws of victory.

Ciechanovski and Mikolajczyk and Arthur Bliss Lane have all three written this chapter of history, each independently of the other, with a carefulness deserved by its importance.



## Old Books And New Reviews

George Creel: *RUSSIA'S RACE FOR ASIA*

(Bobbs-Merrill, Indianapolis; 264 pages, Out of Print)

A life-long Democrat, Creel was chief of the U. S. Information Service in World War I. (the same "service" that, under F.D.R. — in Elmer Davis' "Office of War Information" — was the sinecure of thousands of leftist bureaucrats and hundreds of dangerous Communists.) A sane respect for the tax-payer's money, and the civic morality that goes with it, has remained, to the end, Creel's personal style in public affairs. In *Russia's Race For Asia* he applies the lucidity of an impeccable journalistic competence to depicting the cabal inside the United States Government, crucially supported by a manipulated "public opinion" — the historic result of which was the conquest of the Chinese mainland by the Communists. The matter-of-fact approach of the genuine reporter adds immeasurably to the impact of Creel's story. This is brief, incisive, superb history; the best single volume on the loss of China.

> David Dallin: *SOVIET RUSSIA AND THE FAR EAST*  
(Yale, New Haven; 398 pages, \$5.00)

*FORCED LABOR IN SOVIET RUSSIA* (with B. I. Nicolaevski)  
(Yale, New Haven; 331 pages, Out of Print)

Dr. Dallin's reputation as an expert on Soviet diplomacy is unimpeachable. In fact, his scholarly detachment quite often misleads him into a seeming indifference towards the human values at stake. Nevertheless, his *Soviet Russia And The Far East* is the best compilation of the events in Asia that may have upset the international balance of power beyond repair. It is also a thorough review of the Soviets' diplomatic strategy in undermining Western positions in Asia. Teamed with Professor B. I. Nicolaevski, an eminent Russian historian, Dallin has supplied, in *Forced Labor in Soviet Russia*, a devastatingly complete guide to the Soviet Labor Camps, in which millions of slaves are worked to death. It also lays bare the compulsive forces, working inside a "planned" economy, that make the incarceration of workers an inescapable corollary to the "planning."



Old Books And New Reviews

Eldorous L. Dayton: **WALTER REUTHER:  
AUTOCRAT AT THE BARGAINING TABLE**

(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 280 pages, \$4.50)

*Once upon a time, American labor simply wanted "more" — and unions were the tools used to get it. With the advent of Walter Reuther, an entirely new type of labor leader has attained power, not only over American labor, but over American society. He is the socialist, who uses unions to achieve political control, rather than the traditional United States union boss, who used politicians to achieve the union's material goals. Dayton's biography, of the man who is well on his way to becoming the absolute dictator of organized labor in America, clarifies beyond reasonable doubt that Reuther's aim is the "socialist transformation" of America, through the instrumentality of a "labor government."*

*For the moment, Reuther is satisfied with the "transformation" of the Democratic Party, although, because he has more money to spend in elections than the Republicans and Democrats combined, he is gradually attaining complete power over Congress. That Reuther claims to have no love for the Communists is beside the point. What matters is that they love him. And no wonder. His principles come straight out of Marx, and the consummation of his plans would of necessity make the United States a Soviet satrapy. Dayton's diligent research proves forcefully that the truly dangerous enemy of American Freedom, inside the United States labor movement, is not the hoodlum Hoffa, but the "statesman" Reuther.*

Martin Dies: **THE TROJAN HORSE IN AMERICA**

(Dodd, N. Y.; 366 pages, Out of Print)

*Twenty-five years ago, a Congressman from Texas had enough of American horsesense to understand the Communist game — and Martin Dies paid for his shrewd insight with his political life. With the cruel vindictiveness that, years later, drove Senator McCarthy to a premature death, the New Deal-Fair Deal Establishment systematically destroyed the health and*



## Old Books And New Reviews

the political career of Martin Dies. But before the Establishment finally succeeded, Dies (with the invaluable help of Dr. J. B. Matthews) had laid the foundations of a rising congressional committee, around which Americans could rally against the Communist penetration of the United States Government. The work of the "Dies Committee" is recapitulated in *The Trojan Horse In America* — an early, but amazingly apt, evaluation of Communist techniques which dissolve the fiber of free society.

Slobodan Draskovich:

### TITO: MOSCOW'S TROJAN HORSE

(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 368 pages, \$5.00)

*This book establishes Draskovich as the one unquestionable authority on his subject — the wiles and guiles of "Titoism." The very term, and its general use in political lingo, signifies a Communist triumph; for it implies that what Tito and his ilk stand for is not Communism, pure and simple, but something else. In the late forties, it became crucial for the further advance of Communism throughout the world that the West should be confused by the promises of a "national" Communism, that allegedly "insists on independence from Moscow." This was Tito's role in the Great Design. Draskovich takes the puppet apart and shows what he is made of. That Tito's foreign policy has never ceased to execute Moscow's signals obediently, not even the State Department is prepared to deny these days. But Draskovich proves that every bit of Tito's domestic policy, too, has supported the proud claim Tito himself makes, rather significantly, whenever he is interviewed by starry-eyed United States correspondents. Namely, that he is, every inch, a loyal disciple of Lenin — which, of course, means that he is a servant of Moscow's drive for power. No "liberal" who plans to continue his propaganda for "More Aid to Tito" can afford to read Draskovich's conclusive presentation. And no patriotic American, aware of the dangers facing his country, can afford not to read it.*



## Old Books And New Reviews

✓ Max Eastman: REFLECTIONS ON THE FAILURE OF SOCIALISM  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 128 pages, \$2.75)

A lifetime ago the editor of the Communist *New Masses*, Eastman has not even in maturity lost a deep-rooted concern with the ideas that dominated his youth. Having once believed in the blessings of Socialism with the optimistic enthusiasm of an indigenous American radical, he never stopped seeking for the reasons "why it didn't work." *Reflections On The Failure Of Socialism* is the result of decades of soul-and-mind-searching. Written with the urbanity and the sparkle of one of America's great popularizers, the book endorses the theoretical arguments of Mises and Hayek: Socialism fails — as productive system, but unfortunately *not* as a political regime of oppression — because the natural structure of man ties productivity to personal profit. The very fact that the Mises-Hayek-Eastman thesis is irrefutable poses the dilemma of our age in tragic proportions. The same Socialists who so miserably misread the laws of psychology in one area, remain incomparable masters of psychological cunning in another decisive area — that of education and politics.

✓ Medford Evans: THE SECRET WAR FOR THE A-BOMB  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 302 pages, \$3.95)

A strange, altogether new and profoundly dangerous figure has entered the innermost councils of the Republic — the nuclear scientist. He is, by no means accidentally, usually not only a Bohemian in personal conduct, but also a leftist in his political inclinations. And yet, his word — specifically, Robert Oppenheimer's word — counts more heavily than the consensus of Congress. National strategy is being determined by the philosophical perversions and the clandestine political commitments of a few certified "geniuses," whose backstage intrigues have already cost America more than a couple of military defeats in the field. The whole area is shrouded with utmost secrecy, and the average citizen has not the slightest chance to keep informed on most momentous national decisions, let alone the opportunity



## Old Books And New Reviews

to influence them. Unless, that is, he devours everything Medford Evans writes on the subject. Evans, who once was a security officer in the most hush-hush atomic establishment, has an uncanny knowledge of the most involved atomic problems and a rare lucidity of style in presenting them. Besides, he is driven by a burning love for his country and a sense of urgency. His unexcelled intellectual acumen and the cogency of his reasoning make *The Secret War For The A-Bomb* a book that even the reluctant reviewer will define as "must-reading."

Geraldine Fitch: FORMOSA BEACHHEAD

(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 267 pages, Out of Print)

The vile campaign against Chiang Kai-shek, America's only effective ally in Asia, continues relentlessly in this country. Its most effective propaganda weapon, perhaps, is the open or transparently veiled indictment that the Island of Formosa, the seat of China's legitimate government, is subjected to a cruel dictatorship of Chiang's "intruders." Miss Fitch went to Formosa to see for herself. Her report is brimful with facts about the astonishing development of the island, due to Chiang Kai-shek's manifold reform efforts. It is also a reassuring assessment of the military strength the Generalissimo keeps poised for the turn of the tide — the return of the nationalist forces to the occupied Chinese mainland. *Formosa Beachhead* clarifies with finality that Formosa will become either the springboard for a bold counter-offensive against the Chinese Communist monster; or it will become the grave of all American hopes for a free Asia which, in turn, remains an irreducible prerequisite for a free America.

> John T. Flynn: WHILE YOU SLEPT  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 192 pages, \$3.00)

THE ROAD AHEAD  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 160 pages, \$2.50)

Technically, no press in the world is equal to America's — but perhaps no press in all the world has so badly fallen down on its main job. The phenomenon of John T. Flynn is an excel-



## Old Books And New Reviews

lent yardstick by which to measure the failure of the United States press. This one courageous lone wolf, equipped with the temperament of a born pamphleteer, has done more to enlighten the great American audience about the corruption and the deadly consequences of the New Deal's mutilation of American principles than all the United States newspapers combined. There are more "scoops" and greater amounts of original research data in Flynn's books than in twenty volumes of the metropolitan dailies. Indubitably the Tom Paine of the coming American revolution against collectivism, John T. Flynn remains the dean of those true educators who have kept faith in first American principles. *While You Slept* gives the concise history of the Red influences on the Roosevelt-Truman Administration and on United States public opinion. *The Road Ahead* supplies readers with a thoroughly dependable chart by which to map the course of America's toboggan slide into socialism.

> Victor J. Fox: *THE PENTAGON CASE*  
(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 247 pages, \$3.95)

*Disguised as a work of fiction (and this choice of literary tools was perhaps the author's only mistake), The Pentagon Case is actually one of the most realistic records yet written of Communist techniques in penetrating the government. Its hero, Brett Cable, while he serves with the Department of Defense, happens to uncover subversion in the United States Government — and immediately he becomes himself the victim of a calculated vicious campaign that is meant to silence or destroy him. High government officials try by all known means of trickery and coercion to have him committed, as "insane," to a government hospital. What makes this superior "thriller-chiller" a truly important book is the fact that its material not only fantastically parallels several recent actual cases of Washington intrigue, but it evokes powerful memories of what may have been the greatest personal tragedy in postwar government — the destruction of James Forrestal, the late Secretary of Defense, who "prematurely" woke up to the Communist peril.*



## Old Books And New Reviews

Edmund Fuller: MAN IN MODERN FICTION  
(Random House, N. Y.; 171 pages, \$3.50)

Even people who do not read novels are substantially affected by the fiction produced in their times. For it is the imagery, the moral values, the human ideas as expressed in a nation's novels that finally sink, through an endless process of osmosis, into the entire national fiber. Edmund Fuller, a critic committed to standards of quality and morality, analyzes the concept of man as he emerges from our contemporary novel — a moronic creature driven by nothing but physical lust, mental perversions, a craving for the kicks of sensuality, and all the other mechanisms employed by what is called *avant-garde* literature. Fuller's witty style does not for a moment detract from his deadly serious intention — to show that the modish degradation of man in fiction must, of necessity, be followed by his degradation in life.

Garet Garrett: THE PEOPLE'S POTTAGE  
(Caxton, Caldwell, Idaho; 174 pages, \$3.00)

Few observers have so trenchantly analyzed the decline of the American Republic as has Garet Garrett, until his recent death one of America's most articulate libertarian writers. *The People's Pottage*, although originally written as individual essays, is an interwoven trilogy that discusses the silent revolution brought about by the New Deal planners. Even today, seeking respectability by using the innocuous title "social engineer," these same parasites are attempting to remake America in the image of the European Welfare State.

Garrett's final essay, "Rise of Empire," is of particular importance. For he believes, as he attempts to prove in his brilliant dissertation, that America has crossed the tenuous boundary that separates Republic and Empire. As in the case of the Roman Republic, which, according to historical concurrence, probably ended with ascension of Augustus Caesar, one cannot definitely point to a specific date when America's transformation occurred. For the advent of the Welfare State, while it chronicles



## Old Books And New Reviews

the rise of Empire, does not *de facto* record the death of Republic. This is left for Garrett to do, and he does the job with thorough competence.

➤ Benjamin Gitlow: *THE WHOLE OF THEIR LIVES*  
(Scribners, N. Y.; 387 pages, \$3.50)

The former Secretary General and one of the founders of the United States Communist Party, Benjamin Gitlow broke with Communism almost thirty years ago; and ever since he has devoted his life to repairing his mistake. In *The Whole Of Their Lives*, Gitlow recaptures the weird emotionalism and the doctrinaire intellectual perversions that fashioned the first generation of American Communism, and have remained formative to this day. The book supplies many an authoritative answer to the inquisitive mind that wants to understand the puzzling attraction Communism continues to exert on native Americans, as well as on immigrants from the Old World.

➤ Rosalie M. Gordon: *NINE MEN AGAINST AMERICA*  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 166 pages, \$3.00)

The most recent chapter of America's decline into collectivism has been aptly called "Revolution Of And By The Supreme Court." It is indeed probable that the determined meddling of that body in the political processes of this nation — processes that are expressly reserved by the Constitution for the sovereign people and its Congress — will play a major role in the final overthrow of the American system. Miss Gordon, longtime research assistant to John T. Flynn, submits an excellent study of the nine Justices who, with the not-so-tacit approval of Eisenhower, have usurped a position of command in United States politics. It is almost unbelievable that men entrusted with so much real legal authority, as well as with power to seize more, should be so totally devoid of legal training. Miss Gordon discusses at length "the eighteen bright young men who serve as the law clerks to the justices," and who "are not subject to the regular government security or loyalty checks." Also, Nine



## Old Books And New Reviews

*Men Against America offers a succinct review of the more important Supreme Court decisions which have disastrously altered the law of the land.*

Government Printing Office:

COMMUNISM IN ACTION (\$0.45)

THE COMMUNIST PARTY AS THE AGENT OF A FOREIGN  
POWER

100 THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT COMMUNISM (\$0.35)  
(G.P.O., Div. of Pub. Doc., Wash. 25.)

Of the three branches of our government, the Executive and the Judiciary have proved to be pushovers for the Communist penetrators. Only the Legislative has, so far, fulfilled its Constitutional obligations — at least inasmuch as the special committees of both Houses are concerned. For the last twenty years, these committees have been doing a first rate job of X-raying the enemy. The House Committee on Un-American Activities and the Senate Committee on Internal Security have not only made history (as in the Hiss case), but have also produced some of the most cogent educational presentations in print. The three booklets listed above supply, in the shortest possible form (and at practically no expense to the reader), the basic facts on the Communist conspiracy in this country. The material used consists mainly of sworn testimony, i.e., of evidence that will stand up before the most pussillanimous court. The conclusions drawn are supported by the authority of the two government agencies which, next to the F.B.I., over the years, have acquired the most sophisticated knowledge of the nature of the enemy.

Alberto Ostria Gutierrez: THE TRAGEDY OF BOLIVIA  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 224 pages, \$4.00)

This book — a straight account of the incredibly involved events in Bolivia's bloody history from 1943 to 1955—uncovers the most relevant Communist stratagem in the penetration of the Western Hemisphere. The Communist Parties of Latin



## Old Books And New Reviews

America do not seek, at the moment, political power for themselves, but they manage to obtain control over Latin-American nations by participating in "national-revolutionary" movements. In Bolivia's case, the Kremlin achieved its goal through the MNR, an openly fascist group that combines an adoration of Péron with subservience to Moscow. This, to anyone who really knows the Communist mind, should come neither as a paradox nor as a surprise. The enormous facility in adjusting to special local circumstances has always been a Communist trump. Alberto Ostria Gutierrez, a former Foreign Minister of the "Tin Republic," speaks for his suffering people with the quiet voice of superb knowledge.

Friedrich A. Hayek: *CAPITALISM AND THE HISTORIANS*  
(University of Chicago, Chicago; 187 pages, Out of Print)

THE ROAD TO SERFDOM

(University of Chicago, Chicago; 248 pages, \$2.75)

Like many a book which has been allowed to go out of print, *Capitalism And The Historians* is replete with historical and economic truths. One of the more interesting slants of English literature is the manner in which a handful of writers has misinterpreted the impact of capitalism upon society, Dickens in England, and the "Naturalists" in America who emulated Dreiser, are among those chiefly to be blamed for this falsification. For, although they were probably recording truthfully their own limited impressions, with the usual amount of writer's hyperbole, each succeeding generation came to accept their misinterpretations as universal truth. T. A. Ashton, in the section titled "The Treatment of Capitalism by the Historians," carefully examines the numerous fallacies. Analytically, he shows how the Industrial Revolution, instead of causing "sweatshops" and intolerable conditions, actually enabled man to obtain a degree of freedom and comfort never before achieved in history. Without the Industrial Revolution most of the present socialists would never have acquired the leisure to condemn the Industrial Revolution.

## Old Books And New Reviews

When *The Road To Serfdom* was published (more than ten years ago), the very shock it caused was significant as to the deep sickness of the age. For what Hayek undertook to show was simply the enduring validity of principles that were the universally accepted truths of yesterday. But to formulate them again in this "advanced age" was a revolutionary, if not a somewhat scandalous, act. Hayek, a spokesman for truly liberal economics, divested the modish tenets of Keynesian statism of their highfaluting phraseology, and viewed their social consequences. The road to serfdom, he showed, is being built by the "humanitarian" advocates of the Welfare State, rather than by the open enemies of free society. With the true scientists' respect for facts, Hayek cut through the verbiage of sentimentalism, and managed to restore sane social perspectives. The book is a powerful eye-opener to any young man who has studied economics only as seen in a socialist dream.

Henry Hazlitt: *ECONOMICS IN ONE EASY LESSON*  
(Harpers, N. Y.; 222 pages, \$2.50)

Perhaps the finest compliment one could pay to an economist, aside from praising his professional competence, would be to mention that he is an excellent writer. Henry Hazlitt is just that. Unlike those economists who — by a constant stream of repetition, verbosity and inanities — are unable to convey clearly their thoughts, Hazlitt is a paragon of writing brilliance. His chief forte is his ability to penetrate directly to the core of any problem, and examine it carefully from every possible angle. This enables him, without ever resorting to far-fetched examples, and without directly attacking any particular system, to puncture with devastating finality every known economic fallacy. The author, despite the bold title of his book, does not attempt to compress the complete history of economics into just twenty-four chapters. He does, however, manage to present one of the most concise surveys of the world's economic problems. No other introductory economics book does this half so clearly or so well.



## Old Books And New Reviews

➤ A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.: ONE MAN'S FIGHT FOR FREEDOM  
(The Caxton Printers, Ltd., Caldwell, Idaho; 157 pages, \$3.00)

This is a moving and utterly delightful story of a personal experience — Mr. Heinsohn's bravely quixotic battle against the New Deal bureaucracy that was invading his private enterprise. He knows, of course, not only his own firm but also the working laws of economics, incomparably better than the small-time politicians who never stop running our economy. What makes Heinsohn's book, in spite of its tragic subject, a happy experience, is the terse good humor of his repartee, demonstrated in a never-ending war with Washingtonian stupidity and arrogance. In the course of his story, the author reduces the debate on minimum wages, parity, price control, federal income tax, and all the other jimmies in the hands of an absurd bureaucracy, to its quintessence — the question of destroying the capitalist system that has produced the American standard of living.

➤ J. Edgar Hoover: MASTERS OF DECEIT  
— (Holt, N. Y.; 374 pages, \$5.00)

✓ The unmatched authority of J. Edgar Hoover, when it comes to the problems of subversion, has never been more noticeable than in this quiet book. It would be wrong to say that Hoover is unemotional; for this man can never separate his patriotic feeling from his deeds and his words. But Masters Of Deceit is addressed to rationality and reason, rather than fears. If the book scares the reader, the credit for that achievement must go to the weight of evidence, the impact of facts and the considered judgments which the nation's best-informed anti-Communist presents in his splendid book. Hoover, by the way, does not share the "optimism" of many an American who is satisfied with the decline of visible Communist Party membership in the United States. The invisible machinery of Communist subversion, Hoover proves, is stronger than ever. This book itself makes clear why there is such an increasing drive from the Left to eliminate both Hoover and the FBI as effective enemies of the Communists.



## Old Books And New Reviews

Frank Hughes: PREJUDICE AND THE PRESS

(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 642 pages, \$6.00)

Nobody, not even the F.B.I., has the slightest idea how many card-carrying Communist Party members are among America's accredited newspaper editors, columnists, correspondents, and re-write men. But no knowing observer of the contemporary American scene has any doubt that whole crucial segments of the United States press perform as if they were staffed by the Communist Party's Central Committee. And this impression is by no means created by *occasional* omissions and commissions — it is the inescapable conclusion that must be drawn from a prolonged study of the press in its day to day response to events. Frank Hughes, himself one of the country's great newspapermen, has refused to participate in the brotherhood of silence that prevents most of them from criticizing their trade in public. He presents, in *Prejudice And The Press*, the carefully pondered results of his many years of sorrowfully observing the uncanny manipulation of our "public opinion" in the interests of the conspiracy.

Edward Hunter: THE BLACK BOOK ON RED CHINA

(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 172 pages, \$2.00)

The man who introduced the term "brainwashing" into the English language, in his earlier books on Red China, presents here the complete picture of the Mao regime — largely by the use of official Red pronouncements, reports and records. *The Black Book on Red China*, because of its completeness, is the most airtight case ever submitted against the admission of Communist China into the United Nations. For the Mao regime, in addition to being the purest form of Communist dictatorship, is also the world's biggest criminal syndicate—in the most literal sense of the term. Its international smuggling of opium derivatives is carried on in the closest collaboration with professional crime syndicates all around the world. But the Red China Lobby will, of course, even after the publication of Hunter's irrefutable facts, still continue its public relations work for Mao.



## Old Books And New Reviews

John Jewkes: *ORDEAL BY PLANNING*  
(MacMillan, N. Y.; 248 pages, Out of Print)

Very few Americans realize how fast Great Britain has advanced on the road to serfdom. And it would take powerful magnifying glasses to notice the difference in social philosophy between the statist policies of Britain's "Conservative" Party and those of British Labor. At any rate, Jewkes' superior (and, in its fashion, very funny) book on the ordeals of planning is, without question, a standard work on the subject, even though its investigation is confined to the practices and theorems of the past British Labor Government. The author is equipped with a most sophisticated knowledge of economics, but he tempers his learning with a civilized erudition in most other areas of human conduct. He manages to double his effectiveness by using the elegant simplicity of the Queen's English. A reader who has gone through the school of Mises and Hayek will find in Jewkes a most rewarding guide through the mess of "planning," as it works out in reality.

George R. Jordan: *FROM MAJOR JORDAN'S DIARIES*  
(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 284 pages, \$2.00)

*The author's wartime assignment was to expedite "Lend-Lease" supplies at military transportation bases, from which vast amounts of precious commodities were shipped to Soviet Russia — the sinews of the arrangements with which Franklin D. Roosevelt undertook to remake the world in his image. Major Jordan — and this contributes to the persuasiveness and the charm of his "Diaries" — knew, when making his entries, very little about world politics in general and the sinister role of Harry Hopkins in particular. He simply jotted down what seemed to him noteworthy or strange at the time. Read with today's hindsight, his notes assume the importance of prima facie evidence for the schemes that have saved the Soviets from certain perdition. Among other things, these schemes supplied Russia with our "atomic secrets" even before the first A-Bomb was dropped over Hiroshima.*



## Old Books And New Reviews

James Jackson Kilpatrick: *THE SOVEREIGN STATES* QV  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 344 pages, \$5.00)

The "liberal" press of the nation has largely succeeded in depicting the South as a political slum, an area of illiterate degeneracy and of "fascist" prejudices. Out of that South comes *The Sovereign States*, Kilpatrick's plea for the Southern position, that is by all odds the most civilized and most rational political essay of the last several years. It has been correctly said that Kilpatrick's eloquence reaches that of John Calhoun; no greater compliment is conceivable in political writing. But *The Sovereign States*, beyond pleading for the South, is a profound discussion of the offensive Supreme Court decisions. Certainly it is on a higher and more learned level of legal comprehension and political thought than the mischievous statements of Earl Warren.

➤ Russell Kirk: *THE CONSERVATIVE MIND*  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 325 pages, \$6.50)

Though he is overly anxious to separate the economics of freedom from a conservative philosophy of social existence, which alone can guarantee the endurance of free man within social order, Russell Kirk has justifiably assumed the role of the articulator of American conservatism. *The Conservative Mind*, the best and most original of his many books, succeeds in giving the whole design of a genuinely conservative approach to the problems of our times. Kirk is perhaps less successful in claiming obviously "populist" trends of the American past as the venerable sources of a conservative position today. But his occasionally excessive need for precedent and historic roots is, after all, in itself a characteristic of the conservative mind. The book is altogether one of the finest volumes of political thought published in the last decade.

Victor Kravchenko: *I CHOSE FREEDOM*  
(Scribner, N. Y.; 496 pages, Out of Print)

"Books have their fate," contends an old Latin proverb,



## Old Books And New Reviews

and Kravchenko's book had a very special fate. For reasons unknown to publishers, and inexplicable by critics, *I Chose Freedom* was indubitably the most successful volume of the many rueful memories of Ex-Communists — and a success all around the world. Surely the books by Bentley, Borkenau, Budenz, Chambers, Gitlow, Serge and Souvarine contain far more substantial material, profounder thought and even greater amounts of suspense and adventure. And yet, Kravchenko's book has swept through the world like a whirlwind. But though the discerning reader will give the better books their due, he will also appreciate the merits of Kravchenko's. In fact, its very weakness is also its strength; that it was written by a man who had never achieved positions of importance in the Communist movement. Thus, *I Chose Freedom* contains the point of view, and the naivete, of a quite ordinary fellow, whose reactions and responses are very much like those of John Doe. There are those who contend that the Communist is an entirely new mutation of the species "man"; and there are others who claim that, in the last analysis, the Communist will behave exactly like everyone else. The latter will find much encouragement in *I Chose Freedom*.

Walter Krivitzky: *IN STALIN'S SECRET SERVICE*  
(Harper, N. Y.; 273 pages, Out of Print)

Twenty years ago, the chief of the Red Army's West European Secret Service "defected" — and *In Stalin's Secret Service* is the first installment of General Krivitzky's report to the West. The second installment was never written. Shortly after his first book was published, Krivitzky died under circumstances that are still unexplained — allegedly a suicide, but without doubt the most unlikely case of self-destruction on record. The book he left behind is a treasure of original information. It is also a document of remarkable political insight. For instance, Krivitzky's discussion of the Stalin-Hitler alliance stands up, after twenty years, as the last word on the identity of Nazism and Communism.



## Old Books And New Reviews

Erik von Kuehnelt-Leddihn: LIBERTY OR EQUALITY  
(Caxton, Caldwell, Idaho; 395 pages, \$6.00)

What makes the anti-collectivist so ineffective in this country is the defensive tone of his conventional arguments. The United States anti-collectivist invariably suffers from the troubled suspicion that the Welfare State position is "nobler" and "more Christian." But in historic truth, it has always been the anti-collectivist position that secured liberty; and it was always the inexorable function of equalitarian collectivism to destroy it. Kuehnelt-Leddihn assembles an imposing array of evidence for the moral and intellectual superiority of the anti-collectivist cause over fraudulent equalitarianism. *Liberty Or Equality* presents the quintessence of the most relevant political thought of the last two centuries; and yet, it is written with the basic simplicity of a writer in complete control of his material, of a scholar so thorough that he can make his thoughts crystal-clear.

Arthur Bliss Lane: I SAW POLAND BETRAYED  
(Bobbs-Merrill, Indianapolis; 344 pages, Out of Print)

The author was United States Ambassador to the Government of Poland, during the two years immediately after World War II. Roosevelt's State Department assumed him to be one of the obedient career-diplomats who would "go along." And so the State Department, in dealing with and through Lane, made no bones about shameless support of Stalin's "Lublin Gang," in its treacherous and brutal conversion of Poland into a Soviet satellite. But the Ambassador was a patriot and a man of honor. He fought the betrayal with courage and skill, but to no avail. He then resigned from the service, and sacrificed his personal career, to tell the American people of the treason and dishonor he had personally witnessed. His book should have shocked and rocked the United States from top to bottom. Actually the Communist influences were already so strong that it didn't create a ripple. But it remains extremely revealing history, even today.



## Old Books And New Reviews

Victor Lasky and Ralph de Toledano: *SEEDS OF TREASON*  
(Funk & Wagnalls, N. Y.; 270 pages, Out of Print)

*Two competent reporters investigated, even before Chambers wrote his definitive Witness, the hidden but immense implications of the complex Hiss case. They emerged with a first-class feat of "engaged" journalism. Seeds of Treason, by following faithfully the leads of available evidence, presents the story of Alger Hiss in its proper dimensions — as the story of Communist traitors operating at the very heart of the United States Government. Crowded with exciting facts, the book records the developments of the unforgettable Chambers-Hiss duel, play by play; and it will doubtless serve, in the future, as a prime source of intelligent information about two momentous American decades.*

Lin Yutang: *THE VIGIL OF A NATION*  
(John Day, N. Y.; 262 pages, \$3.00)

A distinguished and witty man of American letters, Lin Yutang has also remained a Chinese in his love for the true glories of eternal China, in his concern for the private dimensions of human existence, and in his realistic sense for the intricacies of political scheming in the Orient. He has returned to the vastness of the Chinese orbit several times since 1945, to the mainland as well as to Formosa, and he met the politically decisive men in that area on grounds of intimacy no Westerner can ever dream of achieving. Lin Yutang is firmly on Chiang Kai-shek's side. With a poet's faculty of compassionately identifying himself with other lives, Lin Yutang succeeds in mobilizing the emotions, and the critical acumen, of his American reader on the side of crucified Chinese freedom.

Elinor Lipper: *ELEVEN YEARS IN SOVIET PRISON CAMPS*  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 370 pages, \$3.50)

A young Communist girl, a refugee from Hitler Germany, leaves her Swiss haven for a pilgrimage to Moscow, the center of her Utopian dreams. And before she has time to lose



## Old Books And New Reviews

her illusions, in day by day exposure to "normal" Soviet life, she is caught in the convulsions of Stalin's great "purge." From there on, Elinor Lipper moves for unendurably long years from one Soviet concentration camp for women to the next. Her factual observations, on the subhuman routine of that ordeal, are enhanced by the fact that Miss Lipper, at the time she wrote her book, was by no means cured from her Utopian ideas. Reported by a mind that still seems in agreement with the Communist goals, the minutiae of living in Soviet labor camps attain a revealing impact that goes far beyond anything the author may have intended.

7 Eugene Lyons: *ASSIGNMENT IN UTOPIA*  
(Harcourt, N. Y.; 658 pages, Out of Print)

### THE RED DECADE

(Bobbs-Merrill, Indianapolis, 423 pages, Out of Print)

Almost a generation ago, *Assignment in Utopia* was the harbinger of a change in America's political climate. An American foreign correspondent in Moscow, himself a graduate from New York's Party schools and literary salons, came home to say good-by to his daydreams. Eugene Lyons has since grown in stature and abilities, but *Assignment in Utopia* retains the rare qualities of a truly formative book, and it has not been surpassed by any succeeding case-history of disillusionment. Extremely interesting are the pages telling about the hectic and increasingly frustrated life of a United States correspondent in Moscow who, mingling with the mighty, learns about the regime's corruption at its very core. The unforgettable portrait of the cynical Walter Duranty, the *New York Times* representative in Moscow, who was admittedly falsifying his "authoritative" dispatches, pictures the archetype of the arrogant egghead who utilizes to the utmost his monopoly over the means of democratic communications. The exuberance of the author makes even this tale of disenchantment a vitalizing experience.

Written more than ten years after *Assignment in Utopia*, *The Red Decade* tells an even weirder story than the tale of the



## Old Books And New Reviews

decline and fall of juvenile dreams in Soviet Russia. Namely, the rise and triumph of Communism among the \$5,000-a-week proletarians, and the powerful editorial executives, in New York's publishing jungle. From about the middle thirties to the middle forties, these two centers of control over all United States communication industries were virtually captives of the Communist Party. Once more, Lyons, in a genuine "scoop," anticipated the exposés that were to follow in the early fifties (for instance, in the meritorious "Red Channels"). Of particular value is the author's penetrating interpretation of the compulsions that turn overpaid American entertainers into spokesmen for "the toiling masses."

**Joe R. McCarthy: AMERICA'S RETREAT FROM VICTORY**  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 188 pages, \$2.75)

*In the bloody scrap the late Senator was forced into, during the all too short years of his public life, very few Americans noticed how much earnest study, intellectual concern and real research effort were going into his labors. America's Retreat From Victory, read today, will strike even the best-informed student of contemporary affairs as an astonishingly mature, superbly well-argued and completely up-to-date summary of some of the darkest chapters of recent American history. It centers, of necessity, on the role General Marshall played in shaping a disastrous grand strategy during the war, and in making the first few post-war years a period of continued subservience to Stalin's bid for world control. Whether or not Marshall was conscious of what he was doing is beside the point. That everything he did was tailor-made to fit into the grand strategy of Communism is proved in America's Retreat From Victory, and will be clearly understood by all future historians.*

**Josef Mackiewicz: THE KATYN WOOD MURDERS**  
(Hollis & Carter, Lodon; 252 pages, Out of Print)

Towards the end of the last war, the corpses of thousands of Polish officers and soldiers were found in mass graves near



## Old Books And New Reviews

the Polish town of Katyn, which had been kept occupied first by the Nazis and then by the Soviets. The Communists (and the "U. S. Office of War Information") tried to finagle the world into the assumption that these helpless Polish war prisoners were murdered by the Nazis. But an on-the-spot official investigation, carried out by the legitimate Polish Government, proved beyond doubt that the Soviets, determined to take over Poland after the war, had slaughtered the elite of the Polish army who had confidently sought refuge among their Russian "allies." For some years, the mighty world-wide coalition of Communists and "liberals" suppressed the ghastly truth. But the indefatigable efforts of Polish patriots and, we are proud to say, of a special Committee of the United States House of Representatives, have since established, to the satisfaction of the most reluctant umpires, that the Katyn slaughter was a premeditated Soviet deed, entirely within the framework of "social planning." Mackiewicz's book presents the fiendish record with the accuracy of a police blotter.

➤ Chesly Manley: *THE TWENTY YEAR REVOLUTION*  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 272 pages, Out of Print)

It should, by now, be obvious that the election of Franklin D. Roosevelt, in 1932, was not just another episode in America's continuous history, but the beginning of a genuine revolution. Twenty-five years after the event, the nation — in its physical structure as well as in its mind—is hardly recognizable to those oldtimers who still can remember a pre-Rooseveltian America. Manley, one of the *Chicago Tribune's* ablest alumni, has seen the revolution unfold from the ringside seat of a national correspondent. But he is innocent of the newspapermen's occupational disease — the wisecracking cynicism that considers everything and everybody to be just an ephemeral bubble of no consequence. Manley has an historian's instincts for the decisive moments and the momentous acts that change a nation's destiny. In other words, he takes politics seriously. And, out of his lively recollection of twenty revolutionary years in



## Old Books And New Reviews

United States politics, arises an authentic picture of the stresses and strains that are America's burden today.

David Martin: *ALLY BETRAYED*  
(Prentice-Hall, N. Y.; 372 pages, Out of Print)

*This first book to be published in this country, on the United States betrayal of Mihailovich, and the emergence of a Communist thug, Tito, as master of Yugoslavia, is still the best. Martin's first-rate research job makes his book, even today, when the State Department propaganda glorifies Tito as an advocate of democracy, an indispensable source for anybody who insists on forming his own intelligent view of world affairs. It shows the depths of treason and deceit to which our State Department went a dozen years ago, in helping Stalin to take over eastern Europe.*

Stanislaw Mikolajczyk: *THE RAPE OF POLAND*  
(Whittlesey House, N. Y.; 352 pages, Out of Print)

This is the corroboration of, and counterpart to, Arthur Bliss Lane's *I Saw Poland Betrayed*. Mikolajczyk, the last Prime Minister of Free Poland, was himself the central target of the treacherous intrigues which Lane reports from the United States Ambassador's perspective. In *The Rape of Poland*, Mikolajczyk gives the *Polish* view of the political assassination in which the United States Government participated. What makes his evidence so depressing is the fact (rather nobly understated in Mikolajczyk's book) that the United States Government knew all the time that selling Mikolajczyk down the river was also tantamount to selling short America's vital interests in Europe. So that in Poland's case, Roosevelt's diplomacy did not even have the usual excuse of "I didn't know it was loaded." They knew all right; and Mikolajczyk knew that they knew. Which is one of the reasons why his book is of invaluable help in studying the great sell-out that started under the name of New Deal, continued as Fair Deal, and is finishing the job nowadays under the name of "Modern Republicanism."

## Old Books And New Reviews

Ludwig von Mises: *HUMAN ACTION*

(Yale U. Press, New Haven; 889 pages, \$10)

*A prevailing Marxian slant and an irresponsible jargon have brought social sciences into ill repute. But the height of thought and depth of insight they can reach, if pursued with the scholarly tools of reason, is demonstrated by the life-work of Ludwig von Mises. For more than fifty years, Professor Mises has kept his place in the front rank of economists, and Human Action may well be the summary of his labors. Since the beginning of the century, Mises has fought the ascendancy of Socialism with the most forceful intellectual weapons used in that decisive battle. In Human Action, he goes far beyond the circumscribed reasoning of pure economics to survey the whole complex mechanism of human motivations, human ambitions and foibles, inasmuch as they determine social conduct. The result is a book that becomes richer with every new reading.*

Alan Moorehead: *THE TRAITORS*

(Scribners, N. Y.; 216 pages, Out of Print)

This has been called "The Age of Treason," and the readiness of innumerable fanatics to betray their country — not even for pay, but out of a sick devotion to "ideal" — has indeed become one of the major characteristics of our times. Only a small fraction of the active traitors has ever been caught — and of this fraction, only a few have achieved notoriety. And yet, a sober understanding of the motive-forces that push those "idealistic" traitors should seem indispensable, if we are successfully to defend our society. Moorehead's book gives a good digest of such typical cases as those of Fuchs, the Rosenbergs, and the Canadian spy-ring, and he attempts an evaluation of the personality types involved. In his effort to keep the "moderation" of a journalist, trained in the British understatement, Moorehead, perhaps, leans backward too far. He may also lack the required inside knowledge of the very special psychological conditions that prevail in the underworld of the



## Old Books And New Reviews

Communist "apparatus." Nonetheless, his book remains the most competent summary of the famous spy cases that have begun to teach this country the fundamental facts of life, in order that it might survive in the same world with Communism.

Ben Moreell: *THE ADMIRAL'S LOG*

(Intercollegiate Society of Individualists, Phila.; 176 pages, \$1 paper, \$2 cloth)

The theme of Admiral Moreell's book can be succinctly summed up in just one word: liberty. For while almost everyone proclaims that he is for liberty (even, of course, the Communist), Admiral Moreell explains how the great majority of people militate against its success. Drawing upon the lessons of history as a guide, Moreell explains the inevitable consequences of statism. Our Constitution, designed to protect the destruction of individual national rights at the hands of government, has been disastrously misused and misinterpreted. The State, originally formed to protect man from his fellow man, has become a tyrannical instrument of oppression. Moreell believes that only by reducing the size of government to an absolute minimum, while at the same time stripping it of its omnipotence, can man ever hope to be truly free.

> Robert Morris: *NO WONDER WE ARE LOSING*

(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 238 pages, \$2.50)

Judge Morris was, for many eventful years, the Counsel General of the Senate's Committee on Internal Security; and there is hardly a place in America where one can acquire a more intimate knowledge of the open conspiracy. Morris' essential part in uncovering the visible segment of the iceberg is a matter of public record. In No Wonder We Are Losing, Judge Morris has a chance to use the judiciousness and the mature evaluative powers that have always been the earmarks of his investigating activities. Every word Morris writes is soaked with experience and backed up by incontrovertible evidence. Therefore, it is no wonder that an undertone of profound pessimism permeates



## Old Books And New Reviews

*the book. Judge Morris knows only too well (though he does not always tell), how even the Senate's investigatory efforts are constantly hampered and counteracted by the Administration. We are losing because we keep electing helpmates of collectivism. This is the moral of this important book.*

John A. O'Brien: THUNDER FROM THE LEFT  
(Our Sunday Visitor Press, Huntington, Ind.; 338 pages,  
Out of Print)

A fellow of Oxford University and a student of Marxism even before World War I, John A. O'Brien views in his book the naked reality of Communism in the heat of actual revolution. To him, no aspect of Communism is more important than its denial of Christian ethics. O'Brien centers his book on the Communist "Anti-God Front," and depicts the breakdown of moral law and human restraint wherever Communism had a chance to perform in the raw — in Russia, in Mexico, in Poland, but above all, in Spain. In one chapter after another, relentlessly and with massive documentation, O'Brien takes the "liberal" veils off the orgy of beastliness that tragically engulfed Spain in the thirties.

✓ James O'Neal and G. A. Werner: AMERICAN COMMUNISM  
(Dutton, N. Y.; 416 pages, Out of Print)

A few million Americans have, since 1919, been first attracted and then repelled by the Communist Party of America. Though it is, like every other Communist Party, beyond reform in all fundamental beliefs and commitments, the C. P. of A., during the first forty years of its existence, has gone through the processes of tear and wear, even of wavering and doubts. Today, hardened by four decades of rat-race for Moscow's graces, the cadres of American Communism still show the imprints of past factional feuds. These tactical disputes are significant for all sectarian, fanatical organizations — and for none more than a party that is organized like a state within the state. O'Neal's and Werner's *American Communism*, though



## Old Books And New Reviews

it does not cover the recent past, is a competent introduction into this weird world of faith and feuds, of hatreds-within-hatreds, of the stresses within a structure that, despite all this, remains monolithic.

➤ Herbert Philbrick: I LED THREE LIVES

(McGraw, N. Y.; 323 pages, \$3.50)

Thanks to nation-wide TV exploitation, the essential plot of Philbrick's unique experience has become almost as well known as "I Love Lucy": A patriotic American accepts the burden of working clandestinely for the F. B. I., by playing the role of a dedicated Communist-activist and, at the risk of his life, reporting to the F.B.I. what he learns. But there is more in Philbrick's book than just its exciting plot. Philbrick (who, for years after the publication of his book, ran one of the country's best-informed syndicated columns on subversive activities), has studied the inner workings of the Communist apparatus with great shrewdness, and has mastered the Party's code of "Aesopian language." Not only is he able to translate and decipher the tricky lingo of Communism, but he is able, as well, to interpret the disingenuous oscillations of the "Party line," in terms recognizable to the native American mind.

Guenther Reinhardt: CRIME WITHOUT PUNISHMENT

(Hermitage, N. Y.; 322 pages, Out of Print)

*From their headquarters in Moscow, Soviet secret agents — the hatchet-men of the NKVD — have blazed a world-wide trail of murder and assassination. Often posing as Communist diplomats or reporters, these terrorists have performed their acts of violence while protected by international immunity. Guenther Reinhardt, formerly a Special Employee of the FBI, and formerly Control Investigator of the U. S. Counter Intelligence Corps, discusses at length how these agents have managed to carry out their activities without arousing public attention. Not only does he discuss murders which have astounded the entire world — such as the Trotsky assassination in Mexico — but he*



## Old Books And New Reviews

*also provides damaging new evidence against the assassins. From the American occupation zone of Germany to the "soft underbelly of the U. S. A.," (Guatemala), the Communists are busily preparing for the enslavement of mankind. It is an extremely frightening picture, and Reinhardt presents it in all its macabre detail.*

Wellington Roe: **JUGGERNAUT**

(Lippincott, Philadelphia; 375 pages, Out of Print)

One of the anomalies of *Juggernaut* is that the author, even after years of exposure to unionist goon tactics, remains a friend of trade unions. This, perhaps, explains how Wellington Roe is able to write an entirely objective study of union corruption and hooliganism. Indeed, the irony of the book is that it is intended to present the problems of *union members*, in their dealings with leaders who too frequently care not at all about the welfare of the rank and file. While it records in considerable detail the history of American unionism, and affords interesting portraits of major labor leaders, past and present, *Juggernaut* is particularly valuable for the way in which it exposes Communism within the American labor movement. It is, in fact, probably the truest record available, aside from governmental committee reports, of that very serious problem.

> E. Merrill Root: **BRAINWASHING IN THE HIGH SCHOOLS**  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 277 pages, \$4.50)

**COLLECTIVISM ON THE CAMPUS**  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 417 pages, \$4.00)

When the spectacle of George Orwell's 1984 finally becomes a reality in America, we will not have to ask how it was possible. The answer, twenty-five years before Orwell's imaginary date, is already painfully clear. One has only to open a high school history book (now, thanks to our "progressive educators," called a "social studies" book) to observe how much socialistic propaganda is being fed to Johnny. Not directly, of course, but under that catch-all phrase, "democracy." (Democ-



## Old Books And New Reviews

racy being, in liberal jargon, another name for collectivism.) In this book Root, an Indiana college professor (and, by the way, one of the nation's most gifted poets), examines eleven typical American history textbooks, used during 1956 in an Evanston, Illinois high school. He might just as well have examined the texts used in the Lenin School of Political Warfare. For the eleven high school books, while superficially extolling the virtues of America's political antecedents, are—like the Communist schools' books—heavily in favor of statism.

Even if an American youngster survives "progressive education" in public and high schools, with some traces of Americanism still left in him, the real hurdle — college — is yet ahead of him. For there, statism is in complete command, and the philosophy of collectivism reigns supreme. In *Collectivism On The Campus*, Root presents a carefully researched, over-all picture of an educational situation that every parent of college-age children will find familiar. At a time when a young person is to receive the final and most decisive stimuli for a life's career, the young American is again exposed to a monolithic, unyielding Socialistic bias. Root's analysis, naming names and places, is the definitive book on the surrender of the American college to collectivism; just as *Brainwashing In The High Schools* is the definitive study of the capitulation of the American high schools to that same deadly social cancer.

Edward J. Rozek: *ALLIED WARTIME DIPLOMACY*  
(Wiley, N. Y.; 481 pages, \$6.95)

Professor Rozek, a teacher of political science at the University of Colorado, has lived through the fall of his native Poland. The facts in *Allied Wartime Diplomacy* are taken from the official documents of the Free Polish Government, and from the private files of former Prime Minister Mikolajczyk. In subject matter, the book covers the same grounds as Mikolajczyk's memoirs, and Arthur Bliss Lane's unforgettable *I Saw Poland Betrayed*. But the invaluable original contribution of Rozek's study is the scholarly presentation of the methods with



## Old Books And New Reviews

*which Churchill and Roosevelt were pushed by Stalin's boys into their shameful surrender. The masterful factuality with which Rozek discusses even such blood-curling crimes as the Katyn Massacre, and the Soviet betrayal of Bor-Komorowski's Polish Home Army, is a measure of his superior knowledge and scholarship.*

Augustin Rudd: BENDING THE TWIG  
(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 304 pages, \$3.95)

In this book, Colonel Rudd presents a fully documented record of the people and the methods that have bent our whole educational system to serve the purposes of Socialist conformity. He contends that "we have already lost the battle for engineering manpower," and he can show overwhelming evidence to back up his contention. But while that particular result of our fallacious educational policy is especially conspicuous, in the face of Soviet Russia's immense technological advance of late, it is only a tiny part of the tremendous general loss we have sustained as a result of our national fascination with "progressive education." And Rudd's book assesses the *total* loss.

Wolfgang P. von Schmertzling (editor and translator):  
OUTLAWING THE COMMUNIST PARTY  
(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 227 pages, \$5.00)

Contrary to the coddling of Communists by our Supreme Court, the Federal Constitutional Court of the West German *Bundesrepublik* has outlawed the Communist Party. Its verdict — a political document of great perspicuity and trenchant logic — demolishes the "liberal" argument that a democracy must protect even the Communist's "right" to subvert democracy. The German Constitutional Court, whose verdict denied the sworn enemies of democracy the guarantees of the new German Constitution, showed much more legal lucidity and democratic comprehension than the outpourings of our own Supreme Court. Americans may now enviously look at the maturity of the young German Republic.

## Old Books And New Reviews

Leopold Schwarzschild:

KARL MARX: THE RED PRUSSIAN

(Universal Library, N. Y.; 422 pages, \$1.65)

Marx is clearly one of those rare human figures who left his mark on a millenium. But what made the man the hurricane he was? In our time, Marx has been sanctified even by his critics. Devout Christian philosophers and theologians like Maritain and Tillich, not to speak of Niebuhr and Toynbee, treat Marx, "the philosopher and humanist," with awe and reverence. Leopold Schwarzschild, an eminent German writer (who died only a few years ago), has rescued the real Marx from under the mountains of laurels and wreaths. The man, the writer, the thinker, the politician, the conspirator, the pseudo-scientist, the husband, the friend, the deadbeat, the ludicrously wrong prophet, the bigot, the racist, and the misanthrope who emerges from this thoroughly documented biography, will be a shock to all worshippers of a brazen fraud, committed by several generations of "educators."

Victor Serge: RUSSIA TWENTY YEARS AFTER

(Pioneer Publishers, N. Y.; 298 pages, \$3.50)

Serge's break with Communism in the thirties was a bad blow to Moscow, because he had always been particularly beloved by the Party, and had been a popular protagonist of Communism in Western Europe. A Frenchman of Russian descent, he had the unmistakable talents of a genuine writer and the poet's force of communication. When he realized the monstrosity of his mistake, he put these very favorable qualities to work in several moving books, which he published after his break with the Party. *Russia Twenty Years After*, though touched with the nostalgia of a man who has not yet understood the Socialistic roots of the Communist malady, remains one of the most impressive settlements of a former Communist with those who betrayed his illusions. It is a telling confrontation of Communist reality with the "ideological" chimeras that keep plaguing the intellectuals of the world.



## Old Books And New Reviews

David Shub: LENIN

(Doubleday, N. Y.; 438 pages, Out of Print)

This is, astonishingly enough, the only competent biography written by an opponent of Bolshevism. David Shub, a Russian scholar and journalist who himself belonged to the "Mensheviks" (the Social-Democratic opposition to Lenin's Bolshevik faction), has integrated the figure of Lenin with the obscure background of the shadowy revolutionary movement in Russia. The result is a convincingly reduced figure of a man — certainly not the epochal genius that has become an accepted bit of folklore throughout the West. It is not at all Shub's intention to belittle the shrewdness, the ruthlessness and the effectiveness of the founder of the Communist church. But for the readers of Shub's fact-bulging biography, Lenin will never again have claims to intellectual greatness, or even to originality.

W. Cleon Skousen: THE NAKED COMMUNIST

(Ensign, Salt Lake City; 343 pages, \$6.00)

Chief of police of Salt Lake City, a lawyer and for many years an associate of the F.B.I., Skousen felt the need of a dedicated law enforcement officer to comprehend the determined foes of the society he had sworn to protect. And so he wrote the book he could not find in any library — a book on "the rise of the Marxist Man." For the Communist, to Skousen, is not simply a heretic of our civilization. He is "homo-Marxian," an altogether new mutation of the human species, "perfectly sincere in his announcement that (he) proposes to become the ultimate governor and god of the earth and then the universe." With considerable research that covers the last one hundred years, Skousen investigates the intellectual fountainheads of modern Communism, the early stages of the Soviet Revolution, and the contemporary advances of International Communism. The study culminates in a realistic discussion of the Communist time-table for the conquest of the whole world. What makes possible the realization of that time-table, set for 1970, is, in Skousen's opinion, "the West's passion for peace."



## Old Books And New Reviews

Mortimer Smith: *AND MADLY TEACH*  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 107 pages, \$2.75)

No hoax in modern history has been so scandalously successful as the triumph of "progressive education" in America. Two or three generations of "educators," spiritually formed in the image of John Dewey and mass-produced on the standardized breeding grounds of Teachers College, are responsible for a momentous change in the American character. What has been going on in the United States schools for the past fifty years will finally prove more fatal to the preservation of American principles than all the legislation of the New Deal-Fair Deal, and all the statist intervention in our economy. Mortimer Smith analyzes the intellectual pretensions of the "progressive" educator with mordant wit and a superior erudition that, in itself, is telling evidence against the fraudulent claims of the Deweyites.

Boris Souvarine: *STALIN*  
(Alliance, N. Y.; 690 pages, Out of Print)

One of the earliest leaders of the French Communist Party, and an important officer of the Comintern in Lenin's and Sinovicv's days, Boris Souvarine — for the last thirty years a determined anti-Communist — is a living encyclopaedia on all things Communist. By training and vocation a scholar, he has written, in *Stalin*, by far the best volume on the subject — a volume satiated with heady information, merciless in tart judgment, and infinitely useful. Souvarine, who quite rightly sees in this book the crowning achievement of his life, keeps perfecting it in every new edition. But whichever edition you happen to obtain, you will be indebted to this standard work for unexpected insights — even though there remains in *Stalin* (and its author) an undercurrent of admiration for Lenin, whose heritage, in Souvarine's eyes, Stalin "corrupted." Actually, of course, Stalin was Lenin's perfectly faithful disciple and, some special flavors of his own private lunacy notwithstanding, all of Stalin's policies were the logical outgrowth of Lenin's



## Old Books And New Reviews

concepts. But in spite of this objectionable overtone, Souvarine's *Stalin* remains one of the truly essential books of the age.

### Herbert Spencer: *THE MAN VERSUS THE STATE*

(Caxton, Caldwell, Idaho; 213 pages, \$2.50)

*Why is it, asked Spencer in 1884, that man — unable to manage his wife, his children, his servants or himself — is so certain he can satisfactorily manage embodied humanity? Is there not, he inquired, a marvelous incongruity in this assumption? In The Man Versus The State, the great philosopher discussed this problem at length, pausing just long enough to denude some currently fashionable sophism. The evil of taxation has never been more clearly seen, nor more accurately defined, than when Spencer equated it with slavery. Slavery, he said, exists when effort is compulsively expended for the benefit of another, instead of for self-benefit. It is not the practice of slavery which sometimes bothers legislators, but merely the degree to which it is applied. Albert Jay Nock, editor of this edition and himself a disciple of Spencer, also enunciated this danger of oppression, in his own perceptive study, Our Enemy The State.*

### William Graham Sumner:

#### WHAT SOCIAL CLASSES OWE TO EACH OTHER

(Caxton, Caldwell, Idaho; 145 pages, \$1.25)

Now that the civil libertines and "do-gooders" inhabit the land like a swarm of locusts, William Graham Sumner's book, although published in 1883, takes on added importance. It was his honest conviction, perspicuously supported by his acute arguments, that these social charlatans are a menace to society. The greatest function man can perform is to care for himself, making certain that he exercises prudence, economy, industry and sound judgment. Social meddlers not only leave their own business unattended, but they impertinently interfere in the affairs of others. Like amateur physicians, the social charlatans always begin with the question of *remedies*, without any knowl-

## Old Books And New Reviews

edge or concern with the anatomy or physiology of society.

Under liberty, it is inevitable that some will profit eagerly by the chances offered, while others will neglect them altogether. Therefore, concluded Sumner, the greater the opportunity for success, the more unequal will be the fortunes of the two sets of men. Because each man is free to create his own success, this is both proper and just. This study, by a Professor of Political Science at Yale of three generations ago, is if anything more timely today than when it was written.

✓ Charles Callan Tansill: *BACK DOOR TO WAR*  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 690 pages, \$6.50)

If there is today hardly a doubt that Roosevelt had, in conscious violation of his pledge, deliberately taken the American people into the last war, our gratitude for such clarification goes to a small group of "revisionist" historians — and particularly to Professor Tansill. At a time when merely to raise the question of Roosevelt's Pearl Harbor schemes meant to take one's life in his hands, Tansill worked through heaps of documents to distill the essential evidence. His *Back Door To War* remained unanswerable, in spite of all the character assassination that immediately set in against its author, simply because it was based on unanswerable evidence. His conclusions are, today, almost commonplace: Roosevelt "planned it that way." But his courage in speaking the truth remains as memorable as the fiery scholarship that he put to work, in order to unearth the facts.

Edward Teller (with Albert L. Latter): *OUR NUCLEAR FUTURE*  
(Criterion, N. Y.; 184 pages, \$3.50)

Professor Teller, the "father of the H-Bomb," may have been a party to the cabal of the Eisenhower Administration that keeps trying to put the American public in a permanent state of crisis — a mental attitude that allows the statist bureaucracy to expand perpetually. But Teller is also the only one among the nation's leading nuclear scientists who is motivated by anti-



## Old Books And New Reviews

Communist urgency, as well as by a scientist's ambitions. In *Our Nuclear Future*, Teller (with the aid of Dr. Latter) performs the tremendous service of annihilating the hysterical "arguments" of our fellow-travelling "nuclear statesmen," whose goal is the atomic disarmament of the United States and the subsequent surrender to World Communism. Teller takes those "arguments," one by one, and simply gives the measurable facts on "the deadly perils of fall-out," "the danger of biological mutations," and all the other alarms with which the "disengagement" crowd is trying to scare the United States public into a panicky appeasement of the Soviet Union. The confrontation of gossip with fact is devastating for the brotherhood of Robert Oppenheimer.

Robert A. Theobald:

### THE FINAL SECRET OF PEARL HARBOR

(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 202 pages, \$3.50)

Rear Admiral Kimmel, the scapegoat for the catastrophe of Pearl Harbor, and Fleet Admiral William H. Halsey vouch, in two concise forewords, for the competence and the authority of the author who, on December 7, 1941, was Commander of the Destroyer Battle Force at Pearl Harbor. The story Rear Admiral Theobald unfolds may well be the definitive answer to all questions that have been raised in connection with the sacrifice of the Pacific U. S. Fleet by the Roosevelt administration, to a Japanese attack that could have been prevented. Theobald undertakes to prove that, "by holding a weak Pacific Fleet in Hawaii as an invitation to a surprise attack, and by denying the Commander of that Fleet the information which might have caused him to render that attack impossible, President Roosevelt brought war to the United States on December 7, 1941." The Admiral supports this enormous indictment with crushing evidence which he presents with the skill of a superior investigator. Having served as Admiral Kimmel's assistant during the hearings of the Roberts Commission, Theobald had access to the most jealously guarded secrets of the Roosevelt conspiracy, which he

DIRECTOR, FBI (62-104401)

5/3/60

SAC, HOUSTON (62-1521)

ROBERT H. WELCH, JR.  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

Re: Houston letters dated 2/26 and 3/21/60.

[redacted] b7C  
desired to discuss a matter with an Agent of the FBI.

[redacted] was contacted and furnished b7C  
the following information:

[redacted] has organized b7C  
a chapter of the John Birch Society in Houston. [redacted] is  
the "coordinator" of this chapter and has held several meetings  
and distributed a quantity of literature regarding the aims  
of the society.

Several in the group have become quite disturbed  
over the information put out by the society and have become  
confused as to just what is the truth regarding the present  
communist situation in the United States and just what action  
they should take. [redacted] b7C  
advised that the leaders  
of the society go so far as to claim that President EISENHOWER  
is a communist and certain religious groups, particularly  
the Methodist Church is a communist organization. She advised  
that the leaders point out that if President EISENHOWER  
goes to the "Summit Meeting" he will sell the United States  
out to the communists and the communists will take over the  
United States in about three years and everyone in this  
country except the communists will be in slave labor camps.

2 - Bureau (RM)  
1 - Houston

GWK:gw  
(3)

C. C. F.  
Howe  
62-1521-9



HO 62-1521

[redacted] stated that she had informed [redacted]

b7C

b7D

[redacted] advised that she did not know what action to take and whether she should join this organization and aid in its fight against communism. She stated that she did not feel that communism had reached the point depicted by this society. She requested that if possible she would like to be furnished information as to whether or not this was a good organization to join and also desired any literature which would assist her in making up her mind in this matter.

b7C

[redacted] was advised that the FBI is strictly an investigative agency and does not issue clearances or nonclearances for any group and she would have to decide in her own mind whether or not to become active in this society. She was advised that if possible literature regarding communism would be forwarded to her from the Bureau. She was also advised that she could assure herself that the President of the United States is not and never has been a communist.

b7C

It is requested that the Bureau forward to [redacted] similar information as that forwarded [redacted] by letter from the Director dated April 18, 1960. For the Bureau's immediate reference this literature consisted of the following items:

b7C

1. Statement of Director Concerning the 17th National Convention, Communist Party, USA, December 10-13, 1959.
2. "Breaking the Communist Spell."
3. "Communist 'New Look'"
4. "Where Do We Stand Today with Communism in the United States?"
5. "God and Country or Communism?"

HO 62-1521

6. "How to Beat Communism."
7. "Communism: The Bitter Enemy of Religion."
8. "Communist Illusion and Democratic Reality."

No further action is being taken in this matter.



Hon. J. Edgar Hoover

- 2 -

May 3, 1960

the same language in the Blue Book; but I took advantage of that opportunity to give them any and all information about The John Birch Society which I thought or they thought might be helpful. But I still saw no reason to bother you.

Now, however, I am puzzled by a report from one of our best Coordinators in the South, who works in Texas, to the effect that the FBI, in answering correspondence from some people, especially in the Houston area, who have attended either our tape sessions or film sessions, has said that "The John Birch Society is a group of righteous citizens who do not know the facts." Since giving the plain facts concerning the continuous Communist advance, and their methods, is the very core of our presentations, and since for obvious reasons we have had to be meticulously careful and accurate about those facts, and since literally hundreds of outstanding conservatives or anti-Communists all over the country are constantly turning to us and our small Research Department as a source of facts for their own speeches, articles, letters, and other activities, we cannot help wondering just what has prompted any such impression as apparently has been formed, and then transmitted, by somebody in the Federal Bureau of Investigation.

There is nobody in this fight who has supported the FBI and yourself more unceasingly, uncompromisingly, or enthusiastically, and nobody who more firmly expects to keep right on doing so. When your book provoked a lot of grumbling, and even some loud and rabid dissent, on the part of some of your former strong supporters, because of what they considered your too favorable attitude toward the NAACP and other organizations, I wrote many pages of letters to some of these people to calm them down -- the essence of which was that, whether you had leaned over too far backward to try to be fair in some of these cases or not, you had been for too many years and still were too great and too effective a patriot for any such withdrawal or lessening of moral support to be justified. And I am sure that you would find our treatment of MASTERS OF DECEIT, in AMERICAN OPINION, one of the most favorable which the book received.

Hon. J. Edgar Hoover

- 3 -

May 3, 1960

All of this, as I am sure you have surmised, is merely an introduction to saying that I should like very much to have a chance for at least a brief visit with you; and that I should be glad to go to Washington for that purpose, at any time which would be convenient for yourself, if the time set did not conflict with some important speaking engagement which I had already made beforehand. And instead of going through one or more of these friends of mine, I decided it was certainly simpler and probably better for me merely to write directly to yourself.

I shall be glad to hear from you, also at your convenience, and shall be looking forward very much to seeing you and talking with you, if the opportunity is offered. In the meantime, with my continuing admiration and kind regards, I am

Sincerely,

*Robert Welch*

RW:mlp

Robert Welch



May 10, 1960

Mr. Robert Welch  
Founder  
The John Birch Society, Inc.  
Belmont 78, Massachusetts

Dear Mr. Welch:

Your letter of May 3, 1960, concerning an alleged statement by the FBI regarding The John Birch Society, has been received, and I appreciate your bringing this matter to my attention. It would appear that your representative in Texas has been misinformed since I can assure you the FBI has never made such a comment regarding your organization.

I certainly wish that I could arrange a definite appointment with you. I am, however, unable to do this in view of the uncertain nature of my schedule. Please feel free to call my office if you are in Washington in the future. If I am not in, one of my assistants will be happy to be of service.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

- 1 - Boston (100-32899) - Enclosure  
① - Houston (62-1521) - Enclosure

*Delivered to*

62-1521-11  
SEARCHED *W*  
SERIALIZED *W*  
INDEXED *W*  
FILED *W*  
JUN 10 1960  
FBI - HOUSTON  
*gwh*

## Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : SAC, Houston (62-1521)

DATE: May 10, 1960

✓ FROM : Director, FBI (62-104401)

SUBJECT: ROBERT H. WELCH, JR.  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

Reurlet 5/3/60.

There is enclosed one copy each of the eight  
items of literature requested in relet. You may desire  
to make the enclosed available to [redacted]

[redacted] per the request  
contained in relet.

b7C

[redacted] is not identifiable in Bureau  
files.

Enclosures (8)

b7C

62-1521-12  
SEARCHED  
SERIALIZED  
INDEXED  
FILED  
MAY 11 1960  
FBI - HOUSTON

b7C



## Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : SAC, HOUSTON (62-1521)

DATE: 5/24/60

FROM :

SA [REDACTED]

b7C

SUBJECT:

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING

[REDACTED] telephonically contacted the FBI Office to inquire if the John Birch Society was a subversive organization. ✓

b7C

[REDACTED] was referred to the Department of Justice, Washington, D. C., for information as to whether said society is listed on the Attorney General's list of subversive organizations.

b7C

[REDACTED] said he had received literature from this society soliciting his membership and stating its aim was as an anti-communist movement. He said this organization advocates an aggressive campaign against communism to the point of harrassing persons believed to be communist through the mails. He said this society appears to be professionally organized and he is in sympathy with their anti-communistic sentiments but is concerned about joining it for fear it may subsequently turn out to be either a communistic front organization or irrational movement. He noted those affiliating with this organization in the Houston area are all very prominent people who are well regarded in the community.

b7C

[REDACTED] was informed that it was impossible for the FBI to furnish any information or characterizations of any organization from its files.

b7C

MCM:bam

(1)

SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED  
MAY 27 1960

b7C

62-1521-13

TRUE COPY

May 31, 1960

J. Edgar Hoover, Director  
Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington, D. C.

Dear Mr. Hoover,

Recently several of our friends have joined the John Birch Society and my husband and I attended a meeting to get new members. We agreed with some of their arguments and aims but we had definite reservations about others.

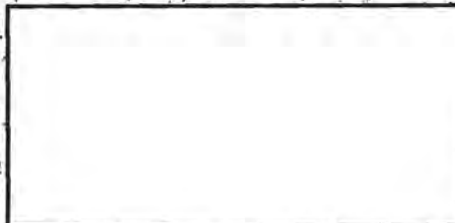
Today, in our terrifically complicated world, you hear constantly about Communist duplicity and the extremes they will use to accomplish their ends, and patriotic groups are almost daily being exposed as communist front organizations. It is hard to know who or what to believe.

We not only want to resist communism in this country, but we feel we must do something to revitalize interest in our "freedom," that we take so much for granted and that we are gradually losing by default through complacency.

Is the John Birch Society the answer? We look to you as an authority on fighting Communism and would appreciate it if you could alleviate some of our confusion.

Sincerely yours,

/s/

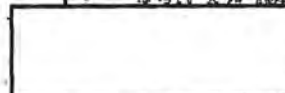


b7C

TRUE COPY

62-1521-14

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUN 12 1960	



b7C



UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON (62-1521)

DATE: 7-1-60

FROM : SA [REDACTED]

b7C

SUBJECT: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING

[REDACTED] who is affiliated with the

b7C

Explorer Scout Program ~~xxx~~ came to the Houston office and advised relative to the captioned organization.

He said that it had been determined that a more specific knowledge of Communism was highly desirable for individuals, and therefore there had been organized a study group, comprised of some of the Explorer Scouts, and their parents.

The material they use for this study comes both from the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, and from the John Birch Society. He left one item published by the former organization, under the heading "Will You Be Free to Celebrate Christmas in the Future?", which purports to be testimony before the US House of Representatives, Committee on Un-American Activities, by [REDACTED]

Also, [REDACTED] furnished the following publications purchased in a packet from the John Birch Society:

b7C

1. The Blue Book of the John Birch Society
2. Bulletin for March 1960
3. Bulletin for June 1960
4. Booklet - Why People Become Communists
5. Pamphlet - The Scoreboard
6. Application form for membership in the John Birch Society
7. January 1959 issue of American Opinion
8. March 1960 issue of American Opinion

All of the above are being made ~~ax~~ part of instant [REDACTED]

b7C

62-1521-16

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED

*Disturbed  
no value  
omit*

LLC

1-~~100-1521~~ (62-1521)

P 2 Memo SAC  
100-1521

[redacted] advised that he believes that there are quite a number of ~~the~~ chapters of the John Birch Society in the Houston area, and that it is customary for each chapter to be composed of from 10 to 20 persons, who meet informally monthly. The dates of the meetings are indefinite, because they await receipt of the monthly Bulletin, and give each member time to read and assimilate the contents, thereafter meeting at a private residence to discuss the material of the Bulletin, and such other matters as may be pertinent.

b7C

In accordance with the desires of the Bureau to be kept advised as set out in SACLET 60-5 of the formation and continuance of Chapters of this society, [redacted] will be recontacted for more detailed information.

[redacted]

b7C



TRUE COPY

b7C

August 8, 1960

Mr J. Edgar Hoover  
Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington D. C.

Mr. Hoover

I have read many of your reports on communists in these United States and I am in complete agreement with all of them and am heartened that someone will take the opportunity to enlighten the public on these matters. Recently I heard of a report that was issued by your office pertaining to the San Francisco riots. I have not read this report but from what I understand is in it I would like to take this opportunity to thank and to congratulate you for bringing into the open more facts about communist infiltration in this country.

I would also like to take this opportunity to ask you a question. I have read the "Blue Book" published by and for The John Birch Society as well as the Societies monthly pamphlets and reports and have found that I am in agreement with them on almost all of their views.

I joined the society after learning what I could of it and I still feel that it has a very good purpose and that an organization such as this is needed in this country. But in view of the recent smear attacks on this organization I feel that I need your advice as to whether or not it can now be labeled a subversive organization or if any of its leaders are known communists.

I am writing this letter as a loyal American citizen and I do not want, unknowingly, to help the communist conspirators in any way nor do I want to be labeled a communist for being in a subversive organization. I realize that you must be very busy but I would appreciate it very much if you would, when time permits, answer this letter.

Sincerely Yours

TRUE COPY

b7C

62-1521-17

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
AUG 10 1960	
FBI - NEW YORK	



Note: Hand print names legibly; handwriting satisfactory for remainder.

Subject's name and aliases <b>JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY - 62-1521</b>		Address of subject <b>62-1521</b>		Character of case <b>MISC. INFO CONCERNING</b>	
Complainant's address and telephone number		Complaint received <input type="checkbox"/> Personal <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Telephonic Date <b>9/10/60</b> Time <b>11:15 PM</b>		b7C	
Subject's Description	Race	Sex <input type="checkbox"/> Male <input type="checkbox"/> Female	Height	Hair	Build
	Age		Weight	Eyes	Complexion
	Scars, marks or other data				

Facts of complaint: Complainant advised he was a Catholic and a Bible Salesman by trade. He stated he had been invited to attend a meeting of the subject society which was held [redacted] b7C  
[redacted] He stated he attended this meeting approximately a month ago. He stated that [redacted] b7D  
[redacted] had invited him and his wife to attend this particular meeting, claiming the purpose of the organization was to teach the private citizen how to fight Communism. He stated that he couldn't remember the name of the man who had presided over the meeting he had attended but this fellow started his speech by saying that this organization was ~~going~~ "growing stronger by the day" and that "we have cells in every big city of the country allready. The speaker claimed that "they" could never wipe us out because we are already too strong." [redacted] said that the speaker never specified who "they" were. [redacted] stated that he was a patriotic American interested in combating any force that wished to destroy his freedom and that this was his primary reason for attending said meeting. [redacted] claimed that the meeting turned itself into a discussion group where the leaders and various individuals tried to argue that Catholics, Jews, Negroes etc. were all linked with Communism and a dangerous threat to the country. Some of these individuals made violently derogatory remarks about various Catholic Officials, Influential Jews and the NAACP and then tried to show how they were trying to overtake the country. He stated that he had grown furious and left the meeting when he found out that they had lured him there under false pretenses to criticize different different creeds and races. [redacted] stated he would be glad to assist the Bureau in anyway possible if we desired him to gain further information on the society. I told him that We would contact him if we desired any further information. b7C

Action Recommended

SPC [redacted]

(Agent)

62-1521-17  
[redacted]





10/24/60

PLAIN TEXT

AIRTEL

AIR MAIL

TO : DIRECTOR, FBI  
FROM: SAC, LITTLE ROCK (100-New)  
SUBJ: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INTERNAL SECURITY

Re Bureau file 62-104401 and SAC letter number 60-5  
dated 1/26/60.

[redacted] confidentially  
advised SAs [redacted] that he had b7C  
been invited to attend a secret organizational meeting [redacted] b7D  
known to him as The John Birch Society [redacted]

This meeting was held [redacted]

[redacted] claimed to be a member of the organization [redacted] b7C  
[redacted] b7D

An individual by the name [redacted]

[redacted] to organize this organization b7C  
[redacted] was reportedly on his way from some community  
at or near Cape Girardeau, Missouri, where he had been organizing  
a chapter of this organization.

[redacted] stated the purpose of this b7C  
organization is to fight Communism.

[redacted] stated that he had asked several pertinent

3 - Bureau (RM)  
1 - Houston (RM)  
1 - St. Louis (RM)  
1 - Little Rock  
MCR/fsc  
(6)

62-1521-11  
11/11/60  
J. G. P.  
Bridley  
J.



LR 100-New

questions concerning the purpose, reason and what type work the members of the organization would be expected to do and that [ ] gave him what appeared to be an evasive answer and stated at the appropriate time assignments would be given to each member of the chapter. [ ] stated that this organization was headed by ROBERT H. WELCH, a former candy manufacturer at Belmont, Massachusetts and that he was a narrator on an approximately three hour film on Communism shown at this organizational meeting.

b7C

b7C

b7D

[ ] furnished the following names of people that he observed at this meeting:

b7C

b7D

[ ] and three other individuals he could not recall at this time. He stated that [ ]

[ ] stated that there is a drive to obtain two million members in this organization and that he believed the headquarters for this organization is located at an unknown address in Alabama. He stated the organization is only about 18 months old. [ ] advised that there is a chapter of this organization organized at Little Rock, Arkansas, and has had two meetings in the office building

b7C

b7D

[ ] described [ ] as follows:

Name  
Address  
Sex  
Race  
Age  
Height

[ ]  
Male  
White  
38 to 40  
5'8"

b7C

b7D

LR 100-New

Weight

100

Hair

Brown, getting bald on top

Eyes

Unknown, wears dark horn-rimmed glasses

Complexion

Dark

[redacted] advised that he was somewhat suspicious of this organization due to the fact that it is secret in nature and that it appeared that only [redacted]

b7C

b7D

One copy of this is being furnished to the St. Louis Division and one copy to the Houston Division for information purposes only since instructions in referenced SAC letter stated that no investigation should be conducted.

b7C



b7C

F. B. I  
Houston Texas

Dear Sir:

I have been asked to join  
the John Birch Society

I would like to know if  
this organization is really  
fighting Communist party.

I am sending you one of the  
application for membership.

Please let me hear.

Thanks,

Sincerely 62-1521-22

DEC 6 1960  
FBI - HOUSTON

b7C

Application For Membership

\_\_\_\_\_, 19

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
Belmont 78, Massachusetts

Gentlemen:

This is my application for membership in the \_\_\_\_\_  
Chapter of THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY, for one year  
from this date, and for automatic renewal each year  
thereafter, unless I resign in writing. I understand  
the dues schedule printed on the back of this sheet,  
as applicable to myself.

If my application is accepted, I agree that my mem-  
bership may be revoked at anytime, by a duly appointed  
officer of the Society, without the reason being stated,  
on refund of the pro rata part of my dues paid in  
advance.

Sincerely,

(Name) \_\_\_\_\_

(Address) \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

Dues Received \_\_\_\_\_

Application Approved  
By \_\_\_\_\_

Title \_\_\_\_\_



## DUES SCHEDULE

Life membership in the Home Chapter,  
(which automatically covers membership  
in any local chapter), for men or  
women . . . . . \$1,000.00  
(This may be paid in two consecutive  
annual installments of \$500.00 each.)

---

Regular annual membership in the Home Chapter	For men . . . . .	\$24.00
	For women . . . .	12.00

Membership in a local chapter, mini- mum per year:	For men . . . . .	\$24.00
	For women . . . .	12.00

(This may be paid as \$2.00 per month  
for men, and \$1.00 per month for wom-  
en, to the local Chapter Leader.)

If any member wishes to pay larger dues,  
to support the Society's work (or to make  
contributions for that purpose), such  
dues or contributions may also be split  
into monthly installments if desired.

---

(Applications for membership in local chapters  
should be approved by the Chapter Leader. Appli-  
cations for membership in the Home Chapter will  
be approved by the home office.)

December 5, 1960

Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Federal Office Building  
Houston, Texas

Attention: Agent in Charge

Gentlemen:

62-1521

We are contemplating becoming members of The John Birch Society, an organization which appears to us to embody the highest principles of patriotic Americanism. Before our membership applications are processed, however, we would like to assure ourselves that the Society has the approval of the F.B.I.

It would, therefore, be appreciated if you would advise at your earliest convenience, regarding your official view of this organization.

Thank you.

62-1521-24

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
DEC 7 1960	
FBI - HOUSTON	



UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC

DATE: 2/10/61

FROM : SA [REDACTED]

SUBJECT: UNSUB. [REDACTED] VICTIM

b7C

On 2/10/61 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] telephonically advised his wife had received an anonymous letter in answer to a "letter to the editor" printed in the daily newspaper [REDACTED]

b7C

The letter received was mimeographed and mailed from Genoa, Texas. The letter called her stupid and a defender of Negroes, etc.. [REDACTED] are members of the John Birch Society.

b7C

[REDACTED] requested an Agent speak to him at his office [REDACTED]

FPC  
1

*Handled  
by*

*date 62-1521  
by*

*No further  
John Birch Society 62-1521  
Racial Situation No Division  
100-9504  
105-235*

*62-1364-*

*62-1521-27*

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 21 1961	
FBI - [REDACTED]	

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON (62-1521)

DATE: 2/24/61

FROM : SA [REDACTED]

b7C

SUBJECT: ROBERT H. WELCH, JR.  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

On 2/13/61 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] furnished the following information. He stated that he and his wife are active members in the John Birch Society, which organization is headed by ROBERT H. WELCH, JR. of Belmont, Massachusetts. He advised that his wife had written a letter to the "Sound Off" column of the "Houston Post" newspaper which letter had been published in the "Houston Post". [REDACTED] In the letter [REDACTED] advocated the impeachment of Chief Justice EARL WARREN of the Supreme Court of the United States for allegedly having violated his oath of office. On 2/9/61 a mimeographed document bearing the typed signature of [REDACTED] and entitled "THE MAN IN THE WHITE COAT HAS HIS EYES ON YOU" was received [REDACTED] The document was contained in an envelope bearing the handwritten address [REDACTED] and bore postmark Genoa, Texas, February 8, 1961. The document received by [REDACTED] is exceedingly critical of those who advocate segregation and of those who advocate continuation of the situation concerning the Negroes which has prevailed in the South since the Civil War days. [REDACTED] advised he had no idea who the individual or organization was that had sent this document to his wife. The document does not contain any specific threat to injure the person of any individual.

NOTE  
This  
photo  
attached

b7C

[REDACTED] made available the document and envelope in which it was contained as well as a portion of the letter his wife had written to the "Houston Post". These documents were reproduced and copies are being retained in the Houston file for possible future reference.

b7C

During the course of conversation with [REDACTED] on 2/14/61 he stated that he was a great admirer of [REDACTED]

1 - 62-1364

DWF:jj  
(3)

62-1521-28

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 24 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



HO 62-1521

J. EDGAR HOOVER and was of the opinion that the FBI was one organization in which true Americans could place their firm trust. [ ] also commented that he had received a copy [ ] published in Dallas, Texas, a recent edition of which had likewise advocated the impeachment of Chief Justice EARL WARREN. He commented that [ ] was a former Agent of the FBI. b7C

[ ] informed that his purpose in bringing this information to the attention of the FBI was to insure that the type of information received by his wife would be of record.

ACTION

For record purposes.

THE MAN IN THE WHITE COAT HAS HIS EYES ON YOU.

One of the most pitiful and extreme cases of delusional insanity, ever to be placed on exhibition before the eyes of the world, is the assinine spectacle of certain people, with functionally blocked and disordered minds, hysterically trying to defend and rationalize an attempt to justify the barbarously uncivilized crimes, against the Negroes, humanity and free democracy, committed by their more extensively ignorant grand parents of a hundred years ago.

Even though the old slave-holding Southerners were supposed to be staunch supporters of our free democracy principles, still, on account of the prevailing ignorance at that time regarding genealogical facts, they were far more justified in gambling on the possibility that somehow or other, the Negroes might not be exactly human than for their descendants, who now have no valid excuse what ever for designing to pretend the Negro to be no more than some missing-link animal and, therefore, fair game to be subjugated, by slavery to satiate the laziness and flatter the vainglorious delusions of grandeur and supremacy of self-appointed masters.

The present historically proven capacities and qualities of the Negro people, now and for ever, indisputably stamp their former enslavement as a hideous crime against democratic human freedom and can never be vindicated by any sadistic wishful thinking and beserk delusions of the die-hard segregationists.

The crime of engaging in human slavery, on such a massive scale, in a nation which was purportedly a Free-Democracy, was destined, from its very beginning, to end in the emotional and physical violence of an eventual civil war. Those consequences of slavery should have been taken into account by the Southern slave holders beforehand, just the same as possible consequences should be considered by anyone else who might be tempted to embark upon any criminal career.

As inevitably as the war followed from the wholesale crimes of exploiting other human beings in vicious slavery, the climactic and violent emotional rupturing following the certain loss of that war, by the South, was equally predestined and inevitable.

Millions of other people have lived through disaster without deliberately inciting themselves and others to go completely "off their rockers" over it. People with the least pretense of being civilized, recover from such disturbing upsets and learn to re-educate and rehabilitate themselves after a reasonable length of time. The emotional shock and delusional insanity, following the loss of the war, should have been of a reasonably temporary state.

There is no sufficient excuse for any one becoming permanently unbalanced and continually nursing unhinged feelings by; hymns of hate, irrational and sadistic vows of vengeance, spite, revenge, setting up the Negroes as "whipping-boys" by wishful thinking inventions of all manner of false beliefs about them, which are one hundred percent pure fabrications with no foundation in fact whatever.

The entire, right-minded world, realizes that your hydrophobic, frothing-at-the-mouth ravings, as though black skins were saturated with arsenic, cyanide or bubonic microbes, are nothing but the frustration tantrums, the stalls, the alibis, excuses and common stock-in-trade of piano-kicking, spoiled brat children who refuse to grow up.



Indeed, black souls are far more putrid than innocent black skins could ever hope to be, and you, subconsciously, know it as well as any one else, but you ineptly fool yourselves compelled to believe otherwise as the only hope, totally futile though it is, to madly try to defend the crimes your relatives committed generations ago.

The slave-holding South fought the civil war on exactly the same lack-of-principle that the Communists now defend their operation of their own slave-labor camps. Exactly like them, the Southerners were willing to fight and die rather than admit it was criminal and anti-free-democratic for them to operate their plantation slave labor farms. Exactly like the Communists, they contended they had a perfect right to ride rough-shod, as tyrannically as they desired, over the freedoms of other people, even as they propose to do so now under the rabid pretense that those who might try to stop them, are unjustly interfering with their internal affairs or state's rights.

In the light of the circumstances, of then and now, it is only the best of reason, for the rest of the world to conclude that these die-hard tyrants still harbor the ulterior intentions to re-enslave, not only the Negroes, but exactly like the Communists again, any one else if given half a chance to do so. Otherwise, they would not be so insistently maintaining their deranged frustration tantrums years after their great-grand-parents had once been compelled to release the unfortunate people they had held in slavery.

Don't you think it is about time for the likes of you, to "log" your wits back into normal operation again and climb down from your over-worked schizo-phrenic persecution complex horse? You, nor any one else, never did possess any divine right to appoint yourselves as slave masters. When the Emancipation Act freed the Negroes from being criminally held any further as slaves, it, likewise, put an end to your criminal career as unlawful slave masters. Any superiority complexes, on your part, which might have lingered on, did so at your own individual risk and in vain.

Just because the Supreme Court was kind enough to delay their verdict against your rabid discriminations for fifty or more years, out of pity for you, is not to be taken as the slightest indication that you ever had the ghost of a chance to acquire "squatter's rights" to perpetuate them.

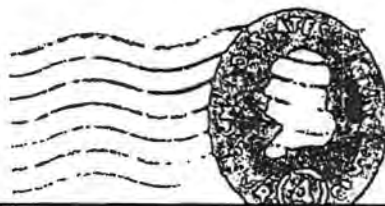
So, you might just as well stop blubbering about the spanking that finally caught up with you. You had a good one coming for a mighty long time. In the context of the present situation, there is only one fitting name for your permitting the proposed, civilized school integration to worry you so and that is greed, vanity and frustration activated delusory insanity.

All your phantasy pretenses, symbolisms etc., in slogan, motto and other forms are as transparent as crystal glass to a world of impartial bystanders.

In the future, be more careful about using such phrases as "state's rights," "shoving integration down our throats," "beyond school supervision," etc., because, as I said before, "the men in the white coats" have their eyes on you.

Yours sincerely,

b7C



b7C



stitution for which he has so little regard — Article III, Section 1, provides that federal judges "shall hold their offices during good behavior." A breach of "good behavior" is found in the constitutional oath of office Earl Warren took. "I, Earl Warren, do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will support and defend the Constitution of the United States against all enemies foreign and domestic; that I will bear true faith and allegiance to the same . . ."

Violation of this oath has been systematic and repeated. To cite but a few: *Brown vs Board of Education* and others that followed; all decisions regarding anti-segregation laws of more than 40 states; and many more too numerous to detail.

Before Earl Warren and his associates on the Supreme Court can wipe out completely the rule of laws which made us a republic, I urge your support in moving for immediate impeachment.

Socnd-Off is glad to present your views, Mrs. Whitt, but since The Post does not believe that Chief Justice Warren has acted unconstitutionally, it cannot advocate his impeachment. — Editor.

b7C

## Called 'Potential for Subversion'

# Congressman Warns Of Birch Society

By NEIL McNEIL  
Press Washington Correspondent

WASHINGTON, March 20.—cent Communist—which means A Texas congressman warned that of every 10 people you know that the "potential for subver- in your home town, four to six sion" is present in organizations of them are Communists if Mr. like the John Birch Society, Welch were to be believed."

Rep. J. T. Rutherford of the El Paso district, in a newsletter to constituents, called statements of the Society's founder "shocking and irresponsible."

The society was formed several years ago by Robert Welch, who "served for a number of years on the board of directors of the National Association of Manufacturers," Rutherford pointed out. "It is 'ostensibly dedicated to fighting Communism.'"

Welch is author of a book called "The Politician," he continued, which contends "democracy is merely a deceptive phrase, a weapon of demagoguery, and a perennial fraud." In Dwight D. Eisenhower "the Communists have one of their own actually in the Presidency," the book alleges. Mr. Rutherford continued:

"It is Welch's contention that the United States is 40 to 60 per

The society is formed into cells of 20 to 30 members, promotes "front" organizations and is under the dictatorial direction of Welch, the congressman's report said, Rutherford said:

"Although any person remotely critical of such extreme organizations runs the risk of being called 'Communist,' conservatives both in and out of public office feel the organization's exclusive claim to patriotism and its attacks on good Americans through its secret methods, do more harm to their cause than anything to come along in a long while."

"Any time a secret society is formed, taking dictatorial orders from one man, who does not reveal even to the membership many of his actions and thoughts, the potential for sub-

version is present."

THE HOUSTON PRESS

3-20-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile : 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

b7C

62-1521-30

SEARCHED



## Birch Society Is Labeled 'Patriotic'

Washington (UPI) — The Senate internal security subcommittee is answering queries about the controversial John Birch Society, semi-secret anti-Communist organization, by describing it as apparently "a patriotic organization," it was learned Monday.

The subcommittee's evaluation is being sent out in a form letter over the signature of chairman James O. Eastland (D., Miss.), which reads:

"The John Birch Society, about which you asked, is known to be a conservative anti-Communist organization.

However, the subcommittee cannot endorse any organization officially. We are happy to state that it seems to me, from our records, a patriotic organization."

Meantime, Sen. Milton R. Young (R., N.D.) arose in the Senate for the second time in two weeks to insert into the Congressional Record news-

paper stories about the society's activities and editorially criticizing it.

Young said he was sorry he referred to local units of the organization as "cells" in his first speech March 8. But he said "this is one of the problems one encounters with an organization operating in a secret manner."

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
3-21-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-31

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED

*Info*

b7c

Promises 'No Fifth-Amendments'

# John Birch Society Demands It Be Probed

BEVERLY HILLS, Calif., March 23.—The founder of the John Birch Society today not only would welcome but "demand" an investigation of the ultra-conservative group.

Robert Welch, in a telegram to Gov. Edmund G. Brown, president of the members of the California group whose stated purpose is to fight Communism would take the Fifth Amendment to avoid testifying.

Welch said the society was not by California the California Club (a Un-American Activities Committee) made the investigation. (The committee, however, did not have any plans presently to do so.)

Welch's telegram also pointed out a recent flood of criticism against the society in California. He said the society was in California for the purpose of the "American Revolution."

Welch said the society was not by California the California Club (a Un-American Activities Committee) made the investigation. (The committee, however, did not have any plans presently to do so.)

Welch said the society was not by California the California Club (a Un-American Activities Committee) made the investigation. (The committee, however, did not have any plans presently to do so.)

Welch said the society was not by California the California Club (a Un-American Activities Committee) made the investigation. (The committee, however, did not have any plans presently to do so.)

The telegram was addressed to Gov. Brown in the State Capitol at Sacramento and copies also were released to State Attorney General Stanley Mosk, Sen. Hugh M. Burns, chairman of the State Senate Committee on Un-American Activities, and to Paul H. Talbert, a member of the Birch Society's National Council.

## Cites Aims

Talbert, a Beverly Hills insurance broker, made a copy of the telegram available to UPI along with a prepared statement of his own.

Talbert's statement said any member of the society who would refuse to testify before an investigating committee would be expelled. Said the statement in part:

"The John Birch society believes in less government, more responsibility, more individual freedom preserving and protecting our Constitution and our glorious heritage."

... What is happening to some supposedly reputable newspapers to refer to us as Fascists, Neo-Fascists, Silver Shirts, red shirts, black shirts, subversives, and even to compare us with the Ku Klux Klan?

"Who is responsible for leading this attack and who is keeping it alive?"

"I will close with the words of J. Edgar Hoover: 'We are not war. We are infiltrated. We are being...'"

Sen. Burns of Fresno, the Un-American Activities Committee chairman, said his group had the society under surveillance for

several weeks but no irregularities had been discovered.

The society was openly criticized in the California Assembly yesterday in a resolution introduced by Assemblyman John A. O'Connell, D., San Francisco.

The resolution specifically referred to a document written by Welch in which he called former President Eisenhower "a dedicated Communist agent."

The final clause of the resolution said:

"Resolved, that the members (of the assembly) denounce the divisive, coercive and un-American activities employed by the John Birch Society and its adherents."

The resolution was referred to the committee on rules for a later hearing.

## Object to Methods

The society also was believed to be subject of a strong denunciation voiced Tuesday night by Chancellor Samuel D. Gould of the University of California at Santa Barbara.

He warned at a charter day banquet that a "new type" of secret student organization had been set up on the campus which "unless it is checked, can destroy the university." He said:

"It claims to promote Americanism while it uses thoroughly un-American methods."

Although Gould was unavailable for further comment, one university official who asked not to be identified said it was his understanding Gould was referring to the John Birch Society.

THE HOUSTON PRESS

3-23-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

INFORMATION CONCERNING

(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-32

SEARCHED ☒ INDEXED ☒  
SERIALIZED ☒ FILED ☒

*Info*

b7C



## Member of John Birch Society Here Tells How It Operates

By BARNEY SCOFIELD

Press Staff Writer

Among Texans identified in the Congressional Record as members of the "Committee of Landowners" of the controversial "anti-Communist" John Birch Society is Mrs. Walter L. Goldston of 5 Briarwood, Houston.

Her name, along with six other Texans, was placed in the record by Rep. Mendell Rivers, D-S.C., in a defense of the Conservative organization under fire as a secret society.

Terming charges against the society "ridiculous," Mrs. Goldston, the 61-year-old widow of an independent oil operator and grandmother of two, told The Press:

"We're very conservative in our thinking and we believe in less government and more responsibility for individuals.

"But our main objective is the same as most patriotic Americans—to fight communism."

Mrs. Goldston said she became a member of the John Birch Society about a year ago after viewing a film at a friend's

house. The film, she said, was against Communism and narrated by Robert Welch of Belmont, Mass., the society's controversial founder.

Members of the society form discussion groups, never more than 15 to 20 in number, and meet once a month in each other's home. Mrs. Goldston said.

Annual dues, she said, are \$12 for women and \$24 for men.

The funds are unaccounted for, she said, but go to Belmont where a monthly bulletin and magazine, "The American Opinion," are published.

Said Mrs. Goldston:

"I'm sure there are thousands of members in Houston, but I don't know who they are or where they meet."

"Local organization is kept secret."

THE HOUSTON PRESS

3-24-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-33

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 27 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

erget to make it more difficult for the Communists to infiltrate."

The small groups of "friends" hold their meetings and work under a Houston area co-ordinator, Akard Beall of 2676 W. MacGregor, she said.

Mrs. Goldston told The Press meetings are devoted to issues reported in the society's bulletin and discussion of their work.

Work, she said, included letters to congressmen and newspaper.

Mrs. Goldston added:

"We work for and against legislation by Congress and the state legislatures."

Mrs. Goldston said she thought the organization had accomplished a great deal through its work. She said:

"I know, for instance, several bills in Congress we supported went through. Some we were against didn't go through."

Asked if she thought the society had enough members throughout the country to effect legislation in Congress directly, she said:

"I don't know how many members we have, but I understand the society is active in all but about four states."

"I think we have the power to influence legislation."

Although Mrs. Goldston doesn't know Robert Welch, the society's founder, she said her late husband went to school with him at the University of South Carolina. She concluded:

"I think his objectives are the same as ours."

"I think he's a patriotic American or I wouldn't have joined the group."



'VICIOUS, CRUDE'

## John Birchers' Mail Swamps Rutherford

POST WASHINGTON BUREAU  
WASHINGTON — Rep J. T. Rutherford of Odessa has been under heavy return fire from Houstonians and other Texans who are members of the controversial John Birch Society.

Rutherford a week ago labeled the society "potentially subversive" in a newsletter to his constituents, and urged them to be wary of the organization, which says its aim is to fight Communism.

MORE THAN A hundred letters from Houston, some from both husbands and wives, have poured into the congressman's office in protest.

"They have expressed doubt on my belief in God, in my country, questioned every organization to which I belong, wondered in print about my birth and every act of every day since," Rutherford said Monday.

"I have gotten some of the most vicious, crude and objectionable mail I have received in years of public life," Rutherford added.

"Their letters are alleging that the Veterans of Foreign Wars,

of which I was state commander, is questionable. Yet the VFW, in 1924, became the first organization to pass a resolution against Communism and has renewed it every year since. The letters urge investigations of the Knights of Columbus, the Masonic Lodge, Boy Scouts and the NAACP. They even question the American Legion and the Daughters of the American Revolution.

"FOR THE information of those Houstonians who are writing these letters, I am a World War II Marine Corps veteran wounded in action, and a Marine Corps captain in a reserve group that is cleared by the FBI and the Pentagon to meet each Thursday, to be briefed on top secret material," Rutherford said.

"I am also a Baptist," he added.

"If I ever had any doubt about this organization, the results of my first statement, and the viciousness of the mail have confirmed my opposition," the congressman added.

THE HOUSTON POST  
3-28-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOfile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-34

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 29 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

## THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

# Group's Aim Noble, Tactics Challenged

Editor's Note: The John Birch Society is a semisecret organization with a noble aim: Fighting communism. But its methods have stirred controversy in many cities. A U.P.I. special reporting team was assigned to assist Barbara

Bundschu, New York staff correspondent, in researching and investigating the organization, its purposes, operations and opposition across the nation. Following is the first of three dispatches on their findings.

BY BARBARA BUNDSCHU  
United Press International

Residents of Santa Barbara, Cal., were in for a surprise when they stepped out into the bright and blowy morning of Feb. 26 to pick up their Sunday newspapers. In that quiet and beautiful city of about 60,000, a respected fellow citizen had discovered what he felt was an outrage.

"The editor and publisher of the News-Press is in his 85th year," began a two-column editorial on the front page.

"His entire life has been spent in this community. . . . He lived when conditions were rugged. When West was West and men were men. He lived during periods when if a man or a group of men openly by word of mouth, or the printed word, called our

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
3-29-61

Houston, Texas

Re: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-35

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 30 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



President . . . and others at the head of our government, traitors, they were made to answer. Such slanders often called for a visit from a courageous and irate group which brought with them a barrel of tar and a few feathers . . ."

#### Taking Stand

Thomas More Storke, rancher and citrus grower, owner of a newspaper since 1900, briefly by interim appointment a United States senator, regent of the University of California, was taking a stand against the John Birch Society and its founder and leader, Robert Welch of Belmont, Mass.

Welch, 61, retired from a candy firm four years ago to devote his life to fighting communism. What bothered editor Storke was the way Welch was fighting it.

In a letter written before he set up the society late in 1958 and still in limited circulation, Welch told friends that President Eisenhower, his brother, Dr. Milton Eisenhower, the late secretary of state John Foster Dulles and his brother, Allen Dulles, then and now head of the Central Intelligence Agency, were members of the Communist underground.

#### Fortunate Town

But the statement about Eisenhower wasn't all Storke had on his mind. In Santa Barbara itself, blessed as few communities in the nation with the comforts of both nature and material wealth, lives a member of the society's 26-man council, Dr. Granville Knight, a physician. Several active chapters of the semisecret society were studying communism at private meetings and looking around town for Communists to expose.

"The secret Communist looks and acts just like anybody else, only more so," Welch had instructed them in the society's "Blue Book." He could be anybody you know. In fact, Welch said, one of his prime suspects is "one of the richest men you ever met. Most of them are."

#### Means to an End

Exposure of such persons, even through "mean and dirty" techniques, Welch said, is one of the most effective means of shocking the American people awake in time to save themselves from communism.

He also advises members to set up front groups, to infiltrate community organizations and to engage in direct letter writing to promote spe-

cific campaigns of his ultra-conservative society.

It was to protest what these tactics were doing to Santa Barbara that editor Storke raised his editorial voice.

"The News-Press condemns the tactics that have brought anonymous telephone calls of denunciation to Santa Barbarans in recent weeks from members of the John Birch Society or their sympathizers," Storke's editorial said.

#### Points of Contention

"The News-Press condemns the pressures on wealthy residents, who fear and abhor communism, to contribute money to an organization whose leader has said that 'for reasons you will understand, there can be no accounting of funds.' . . ."

"The John Birch Society already has done a grave disservice to Santa Barbara by arousing suspicions and a mutual distrust among men of good will. The organization's adherents, sincere in their opposition to communism, do not seem to understand the dangers of the totalitarian dynamite with which they are tampering.

"The News-Press challenges them: Come up from underground.

"And if they believe that in being challenged they have grounds for suit—let them sue. The News-Press would welcome a suit as a means of shedding more light on the John Birch Society."

#### New Group's Aims

What is the real nature of this relatively new group on the American political scene? Political scientists would classify it as ultra-conservative. It is and will remain a subject of controversy, however, over whether its tactics are compatible with American democratic principles as they are most popularly understood.

It is, in itself, an authoritarian society. (Editor Storke's adjective was "totalitarian"). Welch does not say the United States should have a similarly authoritarian form of government. But he is far from completely sold on the form we now have. And as for the political concept of a democracy, he regards it frankly as a "weapon of demagoguery, and a perennial fraud."

#### Personal Standards

By Welch's political standards, Dwight Eisenhower is a Communist, and so are many others in high govern-

ment places, past and present. These are standards not everyone accepts. The United States Senate on March 8 heard Sen. Milton R. Young, North Dakota Republican, declare that Welch's accusations against Eisenhower and others had gone "beyond anything the late Joe McCarthy ever thought of." On the other hand a Senate internal affairs subcommittee has described Welch's John Birch Society as a "patriotic organization."

And because there is evidence to support the society's claim that it is growing, the controversy around it is also bound to grow in the months ahead.

#### Campus Society

A little over three weeks after Storke's editorial, Chancellor Samuel B. Gould of the University of California at Santa Barbara, speaking at a university banquet, said a "new type" of secret student organization had been set up on the campus and "unless it is checked, can destroy the university." Another official said "it was understood" Gould referred to the Birch Society.

Gould said the organization to which he referred encourages students to become informers and "take on the tasks of security agencies." He said the university and its officials "have been labeled and vilified in whispering campaigns, all purporting to prove that we are not only less than loyal to America

are downright subversive."

#### Not First or Last

Santa Barbara was not the first or the last—although it would seem among the most unlikely—community to have been torn by the society's activities nor to have seen it attacked by its newspapers.

The organization has become embroiled in controversy in many states, including Wisconsin, Texas, Ohio, Kansas, California and North Dakota.

Articles and editorial comment on the organization have been carried by a number of newspapers and magazines including the Chicago Daily News, the Milwaukee Journal, the Louisville Courier Journal, the Boston Herald, the Los Angeles Times, the Racine, Wis., Journal-Tribune, Time Magazine and The Nation.

#### Secrecy Varies

The amount of secrecy surrounding its operations has varied considerably from community to community, and Welch has given up his fight to avoid publicity about the group.

At issue between the soci-

ety and many who might otherwise share Welch's conservative political and economic views is his persistent reasoning that everything he personally considers wrong is a Communist plot.

At issue between the society and those who condemn it is the tendency of its activities to suppress if not the right, at least the respectability, of dissent.

This question has split the Supreme Court itself in decisions which have qualified the first amendment rights of witnesses before the House Committee on Un-American Activities.

#### No Judicial Rule

Inhibition of free speech caused by such private organizations as the Birch Society, have had no judicial rule. Editor Storke's statement of principles said: "We believe . . . that traitors should be dealt with by the courts, not by vigilante groups."

John Birch had nothing to do with the group which bears his name. He was a young fundamentalist Baptist missionary from Georgia who served as an intelligence officer in China during World War II and was killed 10 days after V - J day by Chinese

Communists. He was 27 when he died.

#### Wrote Life Story

Robert Welch never heard of Birch until after his death, but he has researched and written his life story. Welch has memorialized Birch as "probably the first American casualty in that third world war, between Communists and the ever-shrinking 'free world,' which is still being waged, originates." And when he came to found a Communist-fighting organization, he called it the John Birch Society.

In Birch's name, members of the society are asked to write letters to congressmen and others, operate in "front" organizations and through established community groups such as P.T.A.'s and chambers of commerce to push campaigns conceived by Welch as anti-Communist.

#### Prime Projects

These include movements to impeach Chief Justice Earl Warren, to repeal the income tax law, to rout the social gospel from the churches, to oppose the North Atlantic Treaty Alliance, foreign aid, the United Nations and cultural, or any other, exchanges with Russia.

At her farm home near Macon, Ga., Birch's mother, Mrs. George S. Birch, said she and her husband are "heartily in accord" with Welch's organization "and we



**Mrs. Goldwyn Drake  
Charges Against Mr.**

Mrs. Drake, in a letter of  
day charged Mr. Drake with  
charges that Robert Welch in  
a letter to friends called for-  
mer President Eisenhower a  
member of the Communist  
underground.

Asked if she believed Mr.  
Welch wrote such a letter, she  
said, "Indeed I do not."

She said in a statement of the  
policy she certainly would  
not Mr. Eisenhower a Com-  
munist. Mrs. Goldwyn said  
"I would not like to see any."

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
3-24-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOfile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-36

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 30 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

## JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

# Groups Scorn Democracy, U.S. Leaders

The John Birch Society, a strange product of strange times, was born a little more than two years ago.

A semi-secret society, it grew out of infancy known only to a few. It burst into public prominence only in the past month or so.

Now, as if by magic, the John Birch Society is discussed and debated in churches, in schools, in the press, in Congress.

The society says it now has thousands of members across the nation, organized chapters in 34 states including Texas, and a growing reservoir of money and power.

HOUSTON IS described by the society as one of its strongest bulwarks. Its members here are said to number in the hundreds.

The society also has a leader who once branded President Eisenhower as a traitor and a Communist.

"Shocking and irresponsible,"

the society was called by Congressman J. T. Rutherford of Odessa in a newsletter to his constituents.

Sen James O. Eastland, D-Miss, chairman of the Senate internal security subcommittee, describes it in a form letter used to answer queries as:

"A CONSERVATIVE anti-Communist organization . . . It seems to me, from our records, a patriotic organization."

Former Vice President Richard M. Nixon, on the other hand, warned that the society operates on the "dangerous fallacy" that the end justifies the means.

Nixon condemned the society in a letter to the Los Angeles Times, a newspaper which had itself condemned the society in a front-page editorial.

### 'Subversion . . . Is Still Subversion'

"Subversion, whether of the left or the right, is still subversion," the Times said.

WHAT IS THIS society that provoked all the uproar? Who runs it? How powerful is it? How does it operate? What are its goals?

Because of the society's semi-secret nature, not all of these questions have been fully answered.

The best answers available come from the society's own publications — mainly its bible, the so-called Blue Book.

The 182-page Blue Book, printed by offset press with a loose-leaf binding, was written by Robert Welch, 61, the society's founder.

In a foreword to the book, Welch tells this story of how the society was born:

IT BEGAN AT a two-day meeting in Indianapolis on Dec 8-9, 1958.

Eleven friends of Welch's, all described as influential businessmen but never named, assembled at Welch's request without knowing why.

There was one man apiece from Oregon, Kansas, Missouri, Illinois, Indiana, Tennessee and Virginia. There were two men apiece from Wisconsin and Massachusetts.

Welch himself is a former executive of a Massachusetts candy company.

For two days and nights, stopping only for meals and coffee breaks, the 11 men listened to Welch unfold his plan.

Welch never says how many of the 11 were converted to his cause.

THE HOUSTON POST  
3-29-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-37

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 30 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

19



## Old Books And New Reviews

*outlines in detail. On the basis of Theobald's documented story, it is impossible to refute the most disturbing accusation that has ever been made against a United States President.*

✓ Freda Utley: **THE CHINA STORY**

(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 274 pages, Out of Print)

**THE HIGH COST OF VENGEANCE**

(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 310 pages, Out of Print)

*The China Story* is the conclusive summarization of the irredeemable American guilt in the loss of six hundred million people, and the key to all Asia, to Communism. Miss Utley, though she knows China, does not argue from a Chinese point of view, but rather as a student of United States politics. She produces evidence that a definable group of men, working in the United States Government and the United States press, planned the deliverance of China to Mao. It is Miss Utley's persuasive belief that China's fall was neither "historically necessary" nor even the result of a powerful trend; but that it was brought about by the scheming of Communist agents who had penetrated into the controlling strata of American society.

In *The High Cost of Vengeance*, Miss Utley contends that the policy of "unconditional surrender," into which a willing Roosevelt was pushed by Communist agents like Harry Dexter White, meant the unnecessary expenditure of at least one year, and of innumerable lives, during the last war. Given the slightest encouragement, the German Army would have been able to overthrow Hitler and to come to reasonable terms with the Allies in 1944. But the cost of vengeance went far beyond the frivolously wasted lives of thousands of soldiers. During the years of military occupation, the United States, England and France aided and abetted the devilishly clever plans the Soviet troops were executing in occupied Germany. Our policy of vengeance suited precisely the Communist strategy of creating a vacuum in the center of the Continent during the decisive postwar years in Europe — years when the Soviet Union laid the foundations for its current power play. At stake were, first,

## Old Books And New Reviews

the Soviet control over Germany's incomparable productive forces, and then, control over the world. In each, the Soviets were immeasurably helped by our policy of vengeance in Germany.

Jan Valtin: *OUT OF THE NIGHT*  
(Alliance, N. Y.; 841 pages, Out of Print)

In 1939, a man who looked like an uneasy hero from *Mutiny On The Bounty*, came to America. It was not his first visit to this country. Herr Krebs, the man hiding behind the pseudonym "Jan Valtin," was one of the ablest, boldest and most kicked-around agents of the Communist Seamen's organization, an organization that for the past few decades had made possible the Comintern's clandestine communications all over the world. As *Out of The Night* proves, Valtin was also a story teller comparable in gripping power to Jack London. He tells the story of his life with a tough realism that despises sentimentality and knows no self-pity. It is a fantastic tale of hard luck, cruelty, pain and deceit; and its most fantastic aspect is its demonstrable veracity. Whether or not Valtin has achieved in his book the feat of total recollection, his savage volume is authentic in its major revelations. Particularly excellent are the chapters which describe the underworld of conspiratorial work—the subhuman area of "ideologies" where nobody can tell a spy from a counter-spy, a Communist from a Nazi, a hero from a gangster, because, in truth, they are all the same.

F. J. P. Veale: *ADVANCE TO BARBARISM*  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 322 pages, \$4.50)

Like democracy itself, democratic wars tend towards totalitarian extremism. The last war was different from all preceding ones inasmuch as it produced, on both sides, many new concepts in the history of warfare. These included the strategic concept of annihilating *civilian* populations, of pursuing the somewhat insane goal of "unconditional surrender," and of putting losers before a vindictive "court" that was controlled, not



## Old Books And New Reviews

by morality and law, but by the arbitrariness of the victors. *Advance To Barbarism*, a quite extraordinary book written in 1948 by an Englishman, undertakes the lonely job of questioning the conduct of the victors, throughout and after the war. It is, above all, a conclusive critique of the "war crimes trials," in which the Soviet murderers of Katyn were sitting in court, side by side with Western jurists, to pass judgment on the vanquished. The author has not the slightest sympathy with the Nazis who stood indicted. But his sense of moderation, his intelligence and his conscience compel him to present a forceful discussion of the caricature of justice which we had staged in Nuremberg.

*Ebed Van der Vlugt (Foreword by A. C. Wedemeyer):*

### ASIA AFLAME

(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 294 pages, \$6.00)

*The merit of this thorough, learned and highly readable book is its thesis: that the convulsions and revolutions in the Far, the Middle and the Near East are not historic accidents, nor "indigenous" consequences of specific, local and regional stresses. Instead, they occur very much according to a Communist plan that has been in effect since 1918. This was the year of Lenin's fateful realization that the way to Berlin, Paris, London and Washington must be around, and through, the oriental world. Ever since, Moscow has — with infinite patience and minute detail — been politicking, scheming, and manipulating in these areas. The author does not, of course, deny that "objective circumstances" in that area are deplorable, explosive and indeed revolting. But he destroys the western naivete which, each time, is completely satisfied with a plausible explanation of national ambitions. In reality, these "national ambitions" are carefully manipulated Communist stratagems.*

*It has taken Moscow's viceroy, Achmed Sukarno, fourteen years to convert Indonesia into a Soviet satellite. This book shows, among other things, how our government has helped him every step of the way.*



## Old Books And New Reviews

Henry Grady Weaver: *THE MAINSPRING OF HUMAN PROGRESS*  
(Foundation For Economic Education, Irvington, N. Y.;  
279 pages, \$2.50)

Why is it that in America, in just three generations, man managed to outstrip the world's total progress for six thousand years? How was it possible that our republic, with less than seven per cent of the earth's population, was able to create more wealth than all the other billions of people in the world? The reason, suggests Henry Grady Weaver, is that Americans have made more effective use of their human energies than any other people on the face of the earth. And, what is vastly more important, they have discovered that the mainspring of all human progress is liberty.

Progress — which begins with the invention of tools, and the exchange system deriving therefrom — is inseparable from liberty. Yet each nation in history, with the single exception of America, made the fatal mistake of restricting freedom, and thereby stifling progress. By tracing the economic and political cultures of the ancient Greeks, Romans, Hebrews, Christians and Moslems, Weaver explains how America incorporated into written law the best traditions and tenets of these diverse cultures. For the first time in recorded history, instead of having his freedom doled to him according to the whims of a ruler, man placed strict limitations and proscriptions on government. The result of this new freedom, which today in America is being rapidly curtailed, can be seen in every street, house, factory and school in the United States.

> Albert C. Wedemeyer: *WEDEMEYER REPORTS*,  
(Henry Holt, N. Y.; 497 pages, \$6.00)

General Wedemeyer reached, at an amazingly early age, the stature of unmistakable greatness. So pre-eminent were his qualities of leadership and judgment that even Roosevelt felt compelled to give him assignments of immense responsibilities, although the young general was known for his principled opposition to the New Deal. In *Wedemeyer Reports*, one of the



## Old Books And New Reviews

nation's rare soldier-statesmen submits the momentous findings of his career to his countrymen. A substantial part of his report is, unavoidably, devoted to Wedemeyer's historic mission to China where, as successor to Stilwell, he desperately — but unsuccessfully — tried to save the Chiang Government. Although the Chinese story will naturally remain the most quoted section of Wedemeyer's superbly written book, *Wedemeyer Reports* is very likely the most important American study of the last war in its entirety. The General neither withholds his extremely well-informed opinion on the chicanery with which Roosevelt got the United States into the war, nor is he reluctant with his authoritative judgments on our grand strategy throughout that war. Unlike Eisenhower, and very much like MacArthur, Wedemeyer is congenitally incapable of conforming with whatever happens to be "the trend." The book is a witness to both the author's originality and his profound sense of honor.

Alexander Weissberg: *THE ACCUSED*  
(Simon & Shuster, N. Y.; 518 pages, \$4.00)

Weissberg, an Austrian nuclear scientist, went to Soviet Russia in the early thirties. A Communist of long standing (it was he who persuaded Arthur Koestler to enter the Party), his assignment was to build and manage a modern nuclear research institute for the Soviets. In the midst of his devoted labors he fell victim to the insane xenophobia that was one of the characteristics of Stalin's purges. For the next several years, Weissberg fought a remarkable duel of will and wits with the NKVD prosecutors, who wanted a "confession" from him that he had been sent to Soviet Russia under orders to kill Stalin. Throughout these years, in Soviet jails, Weissberg met hundreds of Russians — Communists and non-Communists — each of whom steps out of the pages of this vivid book into the personal acquaintance of the reader. *The Accused* is rewarding reading, even as an adventure story. Beyond that, it gives glimpses of Communist mentality under stress, with exceptionally intelligent observations.

## Old Books And New Reviews

Robert Welch: *THE LIFE OF JOHN BIRCH*  
(Henry Regnery, Chicago, Ill.; 118 pages, \$1.50)

In 1953, strangely moved by a few remarks of an unknown United States Army captain, quoted in a Congressional report, Robert Welch began an intensive search to find all there was to know about Captain John Morrison Birch. What he learned is recorded in the unusual and electrifying biography of a young American who died in China in 1945, at the age of twenty-six. Welch asked himself (and answered in his book) these three fundamental questions: Who was this young American? How did he happen to fight and die in China? What was the significance of his life and death? John Birch, as Welch's dedicated research shows, was exactly the stuff a nation's heroes, and perhaps its saints, are made of. His tragically short life was full of that wondrous glow of love that redeems the cruelty of living. It was also filled with the tragic consequences of a national policy that is still destroying America.

William L. White: *REPORT ON THE RUSSIANS*  
(Harcourt Brace, N. Y.; 308 pages, Out of Print)

An editor of the *Reader's Digest*, and still publisher of his unforgettable father's beloved *Emporia Gazette*, Bill White travelled in the company of official United States visitors to Soviet Russia. He made good use of the red-carpet treatment he received, by reporting to the American people everything he had seen. The result is the shrewdest piece of journalism that has come from any American visitor to Moscow in ten years, particularly including the pompous and utterly unreliable Moscow correspondents of the *New York Times*. White does not bother to discuss Communist theory; he simply presents the tangible, the observable, the measurable. Nor is this trained reporter overwhelmed by the fact that Russians, too, have two eyes and a nose and, in general, resemble human creatures. This he takes as much for granted as he does the proclaimed intentions of the Communist. He is dealing with reality — the specifics of every-day life, and the rules of Russian conduct.



## Old Books And New Reviews

➤ Alice Widener: *BEHIND THE U. N. FRONT*

(The Bookmailer, N. Y.; 127 pages, \$2.00)

Even determined adherents of the United Nations are inclined to believe that it is primarily a wasteful, superfluous, stuffy clique of busybodies, and not much more. In a tireless investigation that has taken years, Mrs. Widener has assembled frightening evidence that the United Nations is one of the most effective, most influential, and most threatening instruments for destroying the sovereignty of the United States, and for creating a totalitarian World Government. Much more has been accomplished toward that end than many American patriots realize. The staff of the United Nations has developed into an international bureaucracy of sweeping powers. Various U.N. agencies interfere, day by day, with United States Government and business. The world-wide network of UNESCO is penetrating United States schools, with a master plan of creating in our children allegiance to a one-world concept, rather than to the American flag. In short, the U.N. operators are not just busybodies and cookie-pushers, but accomplished experts in attaining the central Communist aim — the destruction of American self-determination.

➤ Charles A. Willoughby: *SHANGHAI CONSPIRACY*

(Dutton, N. Y.; 315 pages, Out of Print)

General Willoughby, one of Douglas MacArthur's closest associates for many years, was the United States chief intelligence officer in the Pacific area. What he does not know about his beat is not worth knowing — and what he *does* know is crucial. In *Shanghai Conspiracy* Willoughby introduces the reader to what was perhaps the greatest triumph of Soviet espionage in World War II — the feat of one Richard Sorge, a Communist underground agent who managed to rise in Nazi Germany's foreign service to the position of a chief adviser of the German Embassy in Tokyo. From Tokyo, Sorge built a spider-net of espionage contacts all over Asia, which is still not destroyed (though Sorge himself was finally caught and exe-

## Old Books And New Reviews

cuted by the Japanese). But Willoughby does not confine his book to the Sorge saga. Written with the expertness of a master, and with the restraint of a man who has learned the lessons of responsibility, *Shanghai Conspiracy* is, without a doubt, one of the most authoritative treatises on two decades of developments in Asia.

✓ Felix Wittmer: *THE CONQUEST OF THE AMERICAN MIND*  
(Meador Publ., Boston; 352 pages, \$5.00)

How was it possible that a few thousand professional revolutionaries, even though they may have achieved strategic positions, could manipulate the mind of the American people—a nation of 175 million reasonably intelligent individuals? Felix Wittmer, a brilliant educator and indefatigable advocate of freedom, answers this question with an encyclopaedic array of facts. He views one area of public opinion after another, only to discover in each field the very same set of ideas, and even the same set of “publicists,” at work. Like all great national infections in history, the totalitarian attack on America’s body politic is rooted in a few seductive central ideas. Wittmer is more interested in those ideas than in the more or less accidental persons who carry them through the channels of “public opinion” to the last piece of social tissue. *The Conquest of The American Mind* is the kind of textbook that *could* save the youth of America from the infection they are bound to catch in the nation’s colleges, which are so effectively run by our Socialistic “intelligentsia.”

René A. Wormser:

*FOUNDATIONS: THEIR POWER AND INFLUENCE*  
(Devin-Adair, N. Y.; 412 pages, \$7.50)

*In one of the most ironical paradoxes of recent history, the profits of some of America's most famous business corporations support some major collectivist activities (and even certain subversive operations) in this country. This trick is, of course, performed by the financing power and the soothing influence*



## Old Books And New Reviews

of those tax-exempt "foundations," whose enormous income is being spent on the most frivolous adventures of our "social scientists," and often on ventures of outright subversion. Best known, perhaps, is the cause of the Institute of Pacific Relations, which was being financed by the Carnegie and the Rockefeller Foundations. Wormser, former counsel to the Special House Committee on Foundations, goes far beyond that infamous case. He presents, in full control of the almost unbelievable material, the interlocking operation of the major Foundations, which are supported by American business and, at the same time, are committed to destroying the free enterprise system. The ordinary American has no slightest idea of what is really happening in this field — as in so many areas of our national life.

### AMERICAN OPINION REPRINTS

Article	1-99	100-999	1,000 or more
The World Health Organization . . . by J. B. Matthews	10¢ each	8¢ each	7¢ each
The Federal Reserve System . . . . . by Hans Sennholz	5¢ each	4½¢ each	4¢ each
✓ A Letter To The South . . . . .	10¢ each	8¢ each	7¢ each
✓ Why People Become Communists . .	20¢ each	15¢ each	12¢ each
Report of AMERICAN BAR ASSOCIATION . . . . Special Committee On Communist Tactics, Strategy and Objectives	20¢ each	15¢ each	12¢ each

AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts

## ORDER BLANK

You may order the books reviewed or advertised in AMERICAN OPINION from THE BOOK-MAILER — the Complete Bookstore-by-Mail representing all United States publishers. All books reviewed in this issue (except the three U. S. Government publications) are listed on our order blanks on either Page 4, the inside back cover, or the back cover. You pay only the bookstore price. On the out-of-print volumes we shall be glad to quote you the price of those found for you by our out-of-print service. THE BOOKMAILER pays the postage, anywhere in the world.

(No. of copies)

Flynn: <i>While You Slept</i> .....	\$3.00
Flynn: <i>The Road Ahead</i> .....	2.50
Fox: <i>The Pentagon Case</i> .....	3.95
Fuller: <i>Man In Modern Fiction</i> .....	3.50
Garrett: <i>The People's Pottage</i> .....	3.00
Gitlow: <i>The Whole Of Their Lives</i> .....	3.50
Gordon: <i>Nine Men Against America</i> .....	3.00
Gutierrez: <i>The Tragedy Of Bolivia</i> .....	4.00
Hayek: <i>Capitalism And The Historians</i> .....	Out of Print
Hayek: <i>The Road To Serfdom</i> .....	2.75
Hazlitt: <i>Economics In One Easy Lesson</i> .....	2.50
Heinsohn: <i>One Man's Fight For Freedom</i> .....	3.00
Hoover: <i>Masters Of Deceit</i> .....	5.00
Hughes: <i>Prejudice And The Press</i> .....	6.00
Hunter: <i>The Black Book On Red China</i> .....	2.00
Jewkes: <i>Ordeal By Planning</i> .....	Out of Print
Jordan: <i>From Major Jordan's Diaries</i> .....	2.00
Kilpatrick: <i>The Sovereign States</i> .....	5.00
Kirk: <i>The Conservative Mind</i> .....	6.50
Kravchenko: <i>I Chose Freedom</i> .....	Out of Print
Krivitzky: <i>In Stalin's Secret Service</i> .....	Out of Print
Kuehnelt-Leddihn: <i>Liberty Or Equality</i> .....	6.00
Lane: <i>I Saw Poland Betrayed</i> .....	Out of Print
Lasky and de Toledano: <i>Seeds Of Treason</i> .....	Out of Print
Lin Yutang: <i>The Vigil Of A Nation</i> .....	3.00
Lipper: <i>Eleven Years In Soviet Prison Camps</i> .....	3.50
Lyons: <i>Assignment In Utopia</i> .....	Out of Print
Lyons: <i>The Red Decade</i> .....	Out of Print
McCarthy: <i>America's Retreat From Victory</i> .....	2.75
Mackiewicz: <i>The Katyn Wood Murders</i> .....	Out of Print
Manley: <i>The Twenty Year Revolution</i> .....	Out of Print
Martin: <i>Ally Betrayed</i> .....	Out of Print
Mikolajczyk: <i>The Rape Of Poland</i> .....	Out of Print
Mises: <i>Human Action</i> .....	10.00
Moorehead: <i>The Traitors</i> .....	Out of Print
Morell: <i>The Admiral's Log</i> .....	2.00
Morris: <i>No Wonder We Are Losing</i> .....	2.50
O'Brien: <i>Thunder From The Left</i> .....	Out of Print
O'Neal and Werner: <i>American Communism</i> .....	Out of Print
Philbrick: <i>I Led Three Lives</i> .....	3.50

(Continued on back cover)



## ORDER BLANK

(No. of copies)

Reinhardt: <i>Crime Without Punishment</i>	Out of Print
Roe: <i>Juggernaut</i>	Out of Print
Root: <i>Brainwashing In The High Schools</i>	\$4.50
Root: <i>Collectivism On The Campus</i>	4.00
Rozek: <i>Allied Wartime Diplomacy</i>	6.95
Rudd: <i>Bending The Twig</i>	3.95
Schmertzing: <i>Outlawing The Communist Party</i>	5.00
Schwarzschild: <i>Karl Marx: The Red Prussian</i>	1.65
Serge: <i>Russia Twenty Years After</i>	3.50
Shub: <i>Lenin</i>	Out of Print
Skousen: <i>The Naked Communist</i>	6.00
Smith: <i>And Madly Teach</i>	2.75
Souvarine: <i>Stalin</i>	Out of Print
Spencer: <i>The Man Versus The State</i>	2.50
Sumner: <i>What Social Classes Owe To Each Other</i>	1.25
Tansill: <i>Back Door To War</i>	6.50
Teller and Latter: <i>Our Nuclear Future</i>	3.50
Theobald: <i>The Final Secret Of Pearl Harbor</i>	3.50
Utey: <i>The China Story</i>	Out of Print
Utey: <i>The High Cost Of Vengeance</i>	Out of Print
Valtin: <i>Out Of The Night</i>	Out of Print
Veale: <i>Advance To Barbarism</i>	4.50
Van der Vlugt: <i>Asia Aflame</i>	6.00
Weaver: <i>The Mainspring Of Human Progress</i>	2.50
Wedemeyer: <i>Wedemeyer Reports</i>	6.00
Weissberg: <i>The Accused</i>	4.00
Welch: <i>The Life Of John Birch</i>	1.50
White: <i>Report On The Russians</i>	Out of Print
Widener: <i>Behind The U. N. Front</i>	2.00
Willoughby: <i>Shanghai Conspiracy</i>	Out of Print
Wittmer: <i>The Conquest Of The American Mind</i>	5.00
Wormser: <i>Foundations: Their Power And Influence</i>	7.50

Total number of books ordered      Total price \$

THE BOOKMAILER,  
Box 101, Murray Hill Station, New York 16, New York.

Please send the books checked above to:

Name

Street

City      Zone      State

Enclosed find \$

# AMERICAN OPINION

*In this number*

## THE *Life* OF John Birch

**AN INFORMAL REVIEW**

**Volume III Number 3**

**MARCH 1960**

\$1

62-1521-



## AMERICAN OPINION

### Editor

ROBERT WELCH

### Associate Editors

HUBERT KREGELOH  
J. B. MATTHEWS  
WILLIAM S. SCHLAMM  
HANS SENNHOLZ

### Contributing Editors

COLM BROGAN  
MEDFORD EVANS  
RODNEY GILBERT  
EDWIN McDOWELL  
ELIZABETH WILSON

### Editorial

#### Advisory Committee

*The following group of distinguished Americans give the editor comments and advice which are helpful in determining the editorial policy, contents, and opinions of this magazine. But no responsibility can be attributed to any members of this Committee for any specific articles, items, or conclusions which appear in these pages.*

GEORGE W. ARMSTRONG, JR.  
JOHN U. BARR  
K. G. BENTSON  
LAURENCE E. BUNKER  
F. GANO CHANCE  
JAMES L. COKER  
KENNETH COLEGROVE  
MARTIN J. CONDON, III  
ROBERT B. DRESSER  
CHARLES EDISON  
WM. J. GREDE  
FRANK E. HOLMAN  
B. E. HUTCHINSON  
ALFRED KOHLBERG  
J. BRACKEN LEE  
CLARENCE MANION  
FRANK E. MASLAND, JR.  
N. FLOYD MCGOWIN  
W. L. MCGRATH  
W. B. MCMILLAN  
ADOLPHE MENJOU  
LUDWIG VON MISES  
COLA G. PARKER  
J. HOWARD PEW  
J. NELSON SHEPHERD  
ROBERT W. STODDARD  
ERNEST G. SWIGERT  
A. C. WEDEMAYER  
W. H. WILBUR  
GEORGE H. WILLIAMSON

## CONTENTS — MARCH, 1960

# The Life Of John Birch

February 22, 1960

Dear Reader:

The rapidly increasing demand for *The Life of John Birch* has run both the hardbound and paperbound editions out of print far sooner than anybody expected.

We have, therefore, made arrangements with the original publishers to bring it out in this format, as the quickest and most practical way of making a new supply available.

Because of its length, the price for this reprint, as a pamphlet or extra copy, will have to be one dollar — as noted on the cover. But we are sending it to all subscribers simply as the March issue of AMERICAN OPINION. For any subscriber who, already having a copy of the book, is not happy with this arrangement, we shall be glad to extend his subscription for an extra month. A postcard request to that effect will be appreciated.

The April issue will be an entirely normal one again — and, we believe, an excellent one besides.

Sincerely,

*Robert Welch*

AMERICAN OPINION—is published eleven months in the year by Robert Welch, Inc., Belmont 78, Massachusetts, U. S. A. Subscription rates are five dollars per year in the United States and Canada; seven dollars elsewhere. Copyright 1960 by Robert Welch, Inc. We use almost no articles except those written to order to fit our specific needs, and can assume no responsibility for the return of unsolicited manuscripts.

THE *Life* OF  
John Birch

*In the story of one American  
boy, the ordeal of his age*

by

Robert H. W. Welch, Jr.



HENRY REGNERY COMPANY

Chicago • 1954


*Reproduced from the publisher's original title page.*



THE LIFE OF JOHN BIRCH

The only former printings of this book, consisting of 3,000 copies of a hardbound edition and 35,000 copies of paperbound, were brought out in 1954 by Henry Regnery Company

*For*  
**JOHN T. BROWN**  
*with admiration  
and kindest regards*





"Amazingly, there were in Washington responsible officials who were willing to suppress news of the murder of an American officer, apparently to prevent the American people from rising in their wrath and vetoing further appeasement of communism. Not a great deal can be said for the judgment, discretion and reliability of those responsible for suppressing the tragic and revealing story of Capt. John Birch."

*Saturday Evening Post*

Editorial, January 22, 1955,  
based on this book.

"The Life Of John Birch is a true story — the story of one American boy and how he faced the ordeal of his age. This young man became a missionary in China. During the war he did an intelligence-liaison job in China with exceptional courage and distinction. The reward for his outstanding services not only to America but to China was to be brutally murdered by Chinese Communists.

"The author makes the story of John Birch the background for an authoritative and well documented account of war-time and post-war Communist influences in the United States, and their impact on the evolution of world affairs leading up to the current situation.

"This book should be read by everyone who wants to understand the nature and extent of the Communist conspiracy against Christian civilization. It will rank as one of the most valuable contributions to bringing home to the man-in-the-street the methods and menace of Moscow's world strategy."

John de Courcy

*Intelligence Digest, London*

## FOREWORD

"But on one man's soul it hath broken,  
A light that doth not depart;  
And his look, or a word he hath spoken  
Wrought flame in another man's heart."

UNTIL a little more than a year ago I had never heard of John Birch. And the links of transmission, through which the impact of this young man reached me, were thin and strained. A more tenuous chain of influence could hardly have been imagined by O'Shaughnessy while writing the above lines of his great ode.

All alone, in a committee room of the Senate Office Building in Washington, I was reading the dry typewritten pages in an unpublished report of an almost forgotten congressional committee hearing. Suddenly I was brought up sharp by a quotation of some words an army captain had spoken on the day of his death eight years before. Interest in the quotation soon led me to the incident with which the following narrative begins. From then on the light of John Birch's actions gradually became greater than the light of his words, and neither would depart. With regard to both, I had to learn all I could of their source and their circumstances. This small book is the result of my search.

Somewhere in Goethe's thousands of pages appears the beautiful line: *Alle menschliche Gebrechen sühnet reine Menschlichkeit*. Pure humanity atones for all human crimes and weaknesses. As of today this may be too optimistic a balance sheet. The debit side of the ledger is heavy with mass murders and inhuman tortures, with blasphemy and treason and felonies and cruelties, so despicable in degree and so widespread in practice as to prompt a feeling of despair. Even the purity of character and nobility of purpose of a John Birch can atone for only a small part of so much human vileness.

But there is strong encouragement in finding so firm an entry on the credit side. For the fact that cultural traditions and ethical forces still at work can produce one such man is clear proof that they are still producing others like him. Of the slowly built hereditary and environmental molds, into which such youth were poured, many have now been smashed altogether, and many more have their sidewalls badly cracked; but many still remain unreached by the stresses of political tyranny and the erosion of moral anarchy around us. The output of these molds can still save our civilization.

It is no accident that you also, who now read these lines, have probably never heard of John Birch before. That small victory of our Communist enemies, in consigning him to temporary oblivion, cannot now be un-



done. But even with my plodding skill bogging down my bounding purpose, I believe that you will long remember him after finishing these short chapters ahead. And his memory will add, in some small measure, to your hope and your inspiration.

*Belmont, Massachusetts*  
*February 22, 1954*

ROBERT H. W. WELCH, JR.

# The Life of John Birch

## I

### THE RESCUE OF COLONEL DOOLITTLE

THE TIME is an evening in April, 1942. We have been at war with Japan four and one-half months. Colonel Doolittle's flyers have just startled themselves, the Japanese, and the world with their token bombing of Tokyo. But the planes have no place to land within their fuel range. For China has been at war with Japan *four and one-half years*. The coastal provinces of China are full of occupation troops, which at this very time are beginning new advances inland. The three airfields most counted on have all been bombed, whether through a leak in Washington as suspected by General Stilwell or solely by the accidents of war. At any rate, Doolittle and his fellow pilots simply fly their planes to the Chinese mainland, and over it as long as their gasoline holds out. They then come down with a crash landing, or by parachute.

The place is a cheap restaurant in a village by a river, near the western boundary of Chekiang Province. One of the customers is a young American. He is dressed in cheap native clothes, and speaks the native dialect. He is eating the cheapest native food, by habit as well as by thrifty instinct. For while, at the minute, he has a little more money than usual, he has been living on two dollars per month for the past several months. (Later this ability, gained by hard experience, to subsist on bamboo shoots and the cheapest red rice, is to prove of great

value when he becomes the first American ever to live and work *in the field* with a Chinese army. Later, he is to prove his remarkable proficiency at disguising himself and melting away undiscoverably into the native population. But tonight he knows nothing of this future.) Fortunately, while not conspicuous, he is making no attempt to hide his own nationality.

The other patrons of the restaurant are all Chinese. One of them, on his way out after a brief meal, brushes against the stranger as if by accident, and manages to whisper, in Chinese: "If you are an American, please follow me." The stranger, as soon as he dares, also rises and leaves. The incident goes unnoticed by the other diners.

Outside, the American is taken by his self-appointed guide to a small covered riverboat, casually and inconspicuously laid up alongside the river's bank. In that boat he finds Colonel James H. Doolittle, who has been hidden and brought this far by Chinese patriots. This is the first American Doolittle has seen since his raid. The young man is able not only to get Colonel Doolittle safely into free China, but is instrumental in rounding up and saving a number of the men from several of the other planes. Without him it is doubtful that any of these flyers, or their commander himself, would have escaped capture and torture by the Japanese.

I ran across this very small but un-



## The Life of John Birch

usual pebble on the beach of history while looking for some larger and entirely different rocks. It puzzled me, and prompted several questions. (1) Who was this young American? (2) How did he happen to be where he was at this exact and opportune time? (3) What happened to him afterwards? As I dug for the answers they soon led me to more important questions: (4) Why was so heroic, brilliant, and consecrated a patriot so completely unknown in America? And (5) What was the significance of his life — and death? What I found out on all five points is outlined, in part, below. But it is the last two questions that give weight to the whole inquiry. For, as Senator Knowland has stated publicly, if the story of this young man had been known and understood, it could have made a huge difference in our attitude and the circumstances that led to our engagement in Korea.

### II

#### AN AMERICAN CHILDHOOD

HIS NAME was John Birch. He was twenty-three years old, and from a farm near Macon, Georgia. A direct descendant of John Alden, John Birch was as American as Calvin Coolidge and "Buffalo Bill" Cody, to both of whom he was related. For although John was proud of the fact that his mother's ancestry had been traced back, clearly and unmistakably, to the time of William the Conqueror, and that three members of that ancestry had been knighted in England, his family on both sides had been deeprooted in America for generations.

It is worth while thus stressing this matter of lineage because of the rather strange coincidence that John Birch, as

fine a young man as America has ever produced, was born in Asia and also died in Asia. Perhaps the fact is symbolic of the greater interest America was already and must now continue to take in that continent.

His parents, George S. Birch and Ethel Ellis Birch, were—and still are—deeply religious people. For three years of their lives immediately after marriage they were both missionaries in India. Or at least they were so classified by the Mission Headquarters which had sent them to Asia. But Mr. Birch, who had a B.S. Degree in Agriculture from the University of Georgia, actually taught Agriculture at Ewing Christian College in Allahabad, India; ran the college dairy; and then worked with men's Bible classes in all his spare time. Mrs. Birch, who held a Bachelor of Science Degree from Wooster College, Wooster, Ohio, tutored English at Ewing Christian College and worked with women's Bible classes in as wide an area as she could reach. Their first child, John Morrison Birch, was born on May 28, 1918, in Landaur, India. But when he was two and one-half years old, the family returned to America—primarily because of his father's persistent illness in the Indian climate.

They settled first in his mother's home town, Vineland, New Jersey. George Birch became a partner with his father-in-law in a successful fruit-growing business, Blue Spruce Farms. And there the boy, John Birch, went through grammar school, leading his class. Then, in 1930, Mr. Birch was asked to come back to the Mt. Berry School in Rome, Georgia, where both he and Mrs. Birch had taught before they were married, and where they had first met

## The Life of John Birch

each other. He accepted, Mrs. Birch and the children—there were now seven—followed a year later, and all but one of John's remaining years in America were spent in Georgia.

For the Birch family of nine the depression decade was a jumble of teaching (on the part of both parents), of farming, of poverty, of the pain of being separated by the available work, of the pleasure of regrouping; of the growing strength of family ties and the sustaining strength of a fundamental faith that made every hardship seem merely a test of character. There was one stretch when the family did not have more than five dollars of actual cash income for three months; there was more than one period of months at a time when they lived almost exclusively on milk toast made from stale "penny" bread. For even when Mr. and Mrs. Birch were both teaching, clothes of some kind had to be bought and other necessities provided for themselves and seven growing children.

Next to the education, religion, and character of his parents, the greatest single influence on John Birch, undoubtedly, was his life at Birchwood, a farm which had belonged to Mr. Birch's father. It consisted of several hundred acres, mostly wooded but part in cultivation, with a large but dilapidated house that had originally been built for the superintendent of a granite quarry, now long since abandoned. This house, a mile up a winding lane from any highway or any neighbor, sat in a beautiful and completely casual growth of trees and vines and shrubs, on a hill that slopes down in a few hundred yards to the steep bank of the Ocmulgee River. Perhaps this writer is prejudiced by similar per-

sonal experience, but there is some substance to the feeling that only those who have lived without money on ancestral acres in the South can fully understand the strange mixture of poverty and pride, the attitudes, aspirations, and sense of values generated by such an environment. The hope of some day "fixing up" Birchwood as a worthy home for his parents and the other children remained one of John Birch's freely admitted concessions to human vanity even during all of his years in China, while he was planning a far more ascetic and dedicated career for himself. And when the house at Birchwood burned in September, 1943, without insurance, due to sparks from a railroad locomotive carried to the property by a high wind while the whole family was absent, John's immediate reaction to news of the disaster was to write his parents that—whatever else they did—they should not sell any of their land.

In 1934 Mrs. Birch and the children had been living on a rented farm in Floyd County, Georgia, near where Mr. Birch was teaching Agriculture, and where Mrs. Birch had also been teaching English for the preceding two years. When they decided to go to Birchwood it was a year before Mr. Birch could leave his job to join them. To John, as the oldest child, now sixteen years old, fell most of the responsibility for moving their limited but heterogeneous possessions more than a hundred miles. It was an undertaking, and an adventure, never to be forgotten. He and his brother Ellis went ahead, in a little Model T Ford pick-up truck, to build a small corral in which to keep the cattle temporarily. There were thirty-one head, and when they arrived



## The Life of John Birch

in a huge trailer truck a few days later, the two resourceful boys had the enclosure finished. After that the cattle had to be put out to graze daily, and "minded" by the younger children, until the older boys could get some fences built. But even every chicken was moved successfully without loss, and every member of the family plunged into the work of making Birchwood really a home. When Mr. Birch did arrive the next summer one "extra" accomplishment they could proudly show him was that they had fenced four hundred acres of the land.

During all these years of moving, of poverty, and of unceasing farm chores, neither John nor any of the children old enough to go to school ever missed a year, or a month. Secular education for their children in the institutions available, religious education in the Sunday Schools and church services nearby, and both secular and a religious education continuously at home, constituted together a "must" to which Mr. and Mrs. Birch were willing to sacrifice almost all other considerations—and frequently did. John graduated from Gore High School in Chattooga County, at the head of his class. One year after the family settled at Birchwood John entered Mercer University in Macon, where he led his class, and from which he received his B.A. Degree in 1939, *magna cum laude*. He then went to the Bible Baptist Seminary in Fort Worth, Texas, where he did two years work in one year and still graduated at the head of his class. His impact on that school while he was there, as much as the small part of his fabulous later record which did seep through, is responsible for the fact that one of their buildings was later named John Birch

Hall. And his graduation from the Seminary, in June, 1940, brings us up to the second question in our series of five.

### III

#### EARLY MONTHS IN CHINA

JOHN HAD volunteered for missionary work in China while he was still a senior at Mercer. He had already been accepted by the World's Fundamental Baptist Missionary Fellowship when he went to Fort Worth. He sailed for China in July, 1940, and never returned.

The first six months, in addition to performing missionary duties of which he was capable, he attended a language school in Shanghai. To a natural genius for languages he added determination and an unceasing desire to continue learning, from every source, after this formal initiation into Chinese. Eventually he acquired a fluency possessed by few Americans. By early in 1941 he could speak the native tongue well enough to be sent to Hangchow, where he taught at a Chinese school for boys, conducted services, and worked with the Chinese ministers in the small churches of a wide area. Here was a preacher, burning with zeal, who really intended to preach. He went out regularly through the Japanese occupation lines to see rural congregations, and visited many villages where no American had been seen since fighting had first reached that area three and one-half years before. He was the only missionary in Hangchow who continued excursions to the country during all the "gathering gloom" (his own phrase) of 1941. And by the time Pearl Harbor came he had so incurred the wrath of the Japanese that the very first day of

## The Life of John Birch

official war with America they sent a detachment to arrest John Birch. But he escaped, and fled to Shangjao in Kiangsi Province. There, with funds completely cut off, he and four native preachers sustained and encouraged the little congregations of converts to the best of their abilities—and made more converts. Despite every handicap, one earnest group, blessed by John's guidance and enthusiasm, actually built one small new church during these hectic months.

Not only was John without money, except for the very little he had saved out of his salary of fifty dollars per month, but most of these small savings were in traveler's checks which, after Pearl Harbor, no bank in Kiangsi would cash. Communications with America were impossible. In January there arrived at Shangjao, after a precarious journey from Shanghai through occupied territory, a baptized native who brought a message from missionaries stranded in that city. They asked John to get word to headquarters in Chicago that all funds, any funds, for them, should be sent through John Birch in Shangjao. This was only in part because Shangjao was still in "Free China." It was because John was so inevitably a leader of men, on whom others leaned in time of trouble. Despite his own desperate shortage he relayed this message by radio, cable, and air mail, but no answer came.

One of the native preachers gave up and went to his small home in another province. And by April 15 John was completely destitute. But the turning point was at hand. On April 18, the very day of Doolittle's raid, the Chinese Army Headquarters in Hangchow cashed traveler's checks which the banks

had rejected. John's first thought was of his desperate "brothers" in the North. The native "brother" was still in Shangjao. John gave this man all of the funds he could possibly spare, and set out at once in a small borrowed boat to conduct him down the river into Chekiang Province, to see that he got started as safely as possible on the perilous journey back to Shanghai. Accompanying this emissary as far as Sing Teng, John even visited several of the country churches in that area. Then he returned alone up the river, through the dangerous no-man's land towards Shangjao. It was on this return trip that he stopped to eat in the restaurant where he was accosted by the native who took him to Colonel Doolittle.

### IV

#### THE MISSIONARY BECOMES A SOLDIER

By April, 1942, John Birch was aware that the Japanese would soon overrun Shangjao. He had already written the American Military Mission in Chungking, asking to join the army as a chaplain, as a private, or in whatever capacity he could be most useful. After his encounter with Colonel Doolittle events moved very rapidly, both as to the general developments in that part of China and as to John's own life in the midst of these developments.

At Lanchi he and Colonel Doolittle separated, the Colonel going on to Chungking and John taking the train back to Shangjao. The day he reached that city, April 27, two telegrams arrived. One was money from the Fellowship office in Chicago. The other was from Chungking, ordering him to duty at Ch'u Chou Airbase, and then to go to the capital city when his work at the



## The Life of John Birch

airbase was finish. On May 4 he wrote his parents a long letter from Ch'u Chou, concerning his recent activities, and ending with these lines: "This week I have been serving as chaplain to the flyers who bombed Tokyo; now most of them have gone on to Chungking, and when the dead and wounded shall have been cared for, I shall go on, too. Needless to say, please pray. The Japs are bombing here daily now." That last admonition seems to have been well justified. For on the very day John left Ch'u Chou, four and one-half weeks later, the Japanese bombed the headquarters where he had been living, killing four people.

In the meantime, amazingly and unexpectedly, he had received from his parents a cashable draft for one hundred and ten American "gold" dollars. Nobody knew and appreciated more than John himself how much sacrifice on their part this represented. But it came just in time to help him and the Chinese preachers evacuate before the advancing Japs, who soon captured their mission in Shangjao and overran Ch'u Chou as well.

On May 28, his twenty-fourth birthday, with his chaplain's work in Ch'u Chou finished, John headed for Chungking. Transportation was hard to find, because of the proximity and fierceness of the fighting, the rapidity of the Japanese advance, and the resulting mass evacuation. But with the help of some Chinese officers John finally caught a gasoline truck bound for southern Kiangsi Province. They were held up by floods, washed-out bridges, impassable ferry crossings, and other obstacles, time and time again, but at last reached Heng Yang, in Hunan Province, on June 10. There John got the night

train to Kweilin, in Kwangsi Province, where by a miracle of coincidence, he bumped into General Claire Chennault, Commander of the famous American Volunteer Group. General Chennault gave John a ride in an Army transport plane — his first in any plane — to Chungking, which they reached on June 16. For the next three weeks he served as assistant chaplain to the A.V.G. And on July 4, 1942, he was inducted as a 2nd Lieutenant into the China Air Task Force of the American Army. This unit, which on that very day superseded the simultaneously dissolved American Volunteer Group, remained under the command of General Chennault, and the following March became the 14th Air Force.

Colonel Doolittle, still in Chungking at this time, was very much interested in Chinese aviation. One of John's early but incidental jobs was serving as interpreter for the colonel in conversations with the Chinese flight commanders. This was undoubtedly the hardest language test that John ever faced, for he himself confessed wryly that most of Doolittle's technical terms were not even known to him in English. But he handled the assignment with great satisfaction to everybody concerned, until Colonel Doolittle left China.

It cannot be guessed now whether John Birch, Baptist missionary, would ever have been assigned to Intelligence but for his accidental experience as helper and interpreter for Colonel Doolittle. Certainly John himself had not even thought of this as a possibility, as his letters clearly reveal. But hindsight makes it evident that few men have ever been better equipped for the work by training, or better suited to it by character. He had many assets for the

## The Life of John Birch

purpose in addition to those which have already been mentioned.

One of the most important and useful of these assets was his elementary but adequate knowledge of radio, plus a natural mechanical aptitude. At Birchwood, when John was sixteen years old and the family was too poor to buy a radio, he and Ellis had built their own. Now, during the next three years, he was to become a technical expert, at installing, repairing, and operating radio equipment, in all kinds of places and under the most adverse conditions.

For about eight months John worked directly under and very close to General Chennault, as an Intelligence Officer, in Chungking and then in Kunming. Not too much is known of his activities during this period, but some light is thrown on them by a letter written by Chennault in November, 1942. Dated at Kunming, on stationery of Headquarters, China Air Task Force, it is addressed to 2nd Lt. John M. Birch, 23rd Fighter Group, and reads as follows:

1. Your recent secret mission in relation to intelligence matters, which led you extremely close to enemy territory, has been invaluable to the China Air Task Force. The successful accomplishment of this hazardous mission required fortitude, courage, and devotion to duty. The excellent manner in which you have carried out this difficult duty is highly commended.

2. A copy of this letter will be placed in your 201 file.

C. L. Chennault  
Brigadier General,  
A.U.S. Commanding

It is also known that, without previous training, John arranged the organization and correction of maps, records, and incoming information, and practically established the Intelligence Headquarters of the newly created China Air Task Force.

Then, in March, 1943, when this group became the 14th Air Force, and was augmented in strength by the 308th Bomb Group, John was sent to Changsha, as Liaison and Intelligence Officer with Marshal Hsueh Yo, Commander of the Chinese Ninth War Area. He soon won the complete confidence and lasting respect of this general; and with extremely limited facilities was able to set up a steady flow of intelligence information back to headquarters. The result was that, for the first time, air support of the Chinese troops by the 14th Air Force was made possible by knowledge of where these troops were and what they were trying to do. But all of John's excellent achievements in this more routine work were completely overshadowed by his exploits in the field. There are many reports, some couched in much more official language, concerning these activities of John Birch, from both American and Chinese sources—and there are probably some in the Japanese archives, too, if they could be uncovered. But perhaps the best is a very short and informal statement by Colonel Wilfred Smith, which reads in part as follows:

"—About the time of John's arrival in Changsha, the Japanese were preparing another offensive. John gave us early warning of enemy intentions and made it possible for us to bomb supply columns as they were forming, as well as supply dumps. As soon as



## The Life of John Birch

the offensive gained momentum John, with a portable radio set, accompanied Chinese troops to the front line and observed the hour-to-hour shifts in the enemy attack. During the whole campaign John kept the 14th Air Force Headquarters advised by radio of the enemy attack. He had not had any formal training in the operation of a radio but soon learned to master the technique and was on the air constantly talking to pilots as they attacked. He would say 'White Pontiac, do you see my white panels?' John would have huge strips of cloth on the ground with arrow pointing to the target. The pilot would say 'Roger, boy, Roger.' Then John would say, 'There is a howitzer over there about a quarter of a mile northeast of that pagoda.' The answer would come back 'Roger.' Then John would say, 'Hold it, you are shooting over,' and then he would say, 'Bring it down, that's it, you got it that time.'

"We called that kind of work 'air-ground liaison.' John would be in sight of these targets he was calling. The pilots used to talk about how much help it was, and often it was like being led by the hand to the target. John spent about six weeks with the Chinese troops in the 1943 Tungting Lake campaign, and we called him the eyes of the 14th Air Force. This is the first time, to my knowledge, that Chinese troops ever knew what efficient air support could do, and the experience certainly heightened the morale of the Chinese troops immeasurably. General Hsueh said that if he had fifty teams like the one John handled he could lick the Japs himself singlehanded. But

we just didn't have radios and men. If John should break a tube it would be all my life was worth just to get one tube."

There were many incidental or additional benefits to the American-Chinese allies, from this one-man intelligence offensive, which are not covered in these paragraphs from Colonel Smith's report. For one thing it was, as General Chennault had said, the first time any American — even a war correspondent — had ever been able to stay *in the field* with a Chinese Army, and live. John Birch proved to his fellow Americans that it could be done, and many other brave and hardy souls — mostly ex-missionaries — followed his example and carried out similar tasks. But what was equally important, was proving this fact to the Chinese. They thought that Americans were so accustomed to living in the lap of luxury — which they were by Chinese standards — that they could not really be very good ground soldiers. John Birch proved that he could get along on exactly the same rations, and live continuously under the same conditions, that they did, and still fight and work twenty hours a day. By his own stamina and character John so improved relations of the Americans with the Chinese in the Ninth War Area that he was able to arrange an effective rescue system for American pilots shot down behind the Japanese lines. Colonel Smith says further along: "John set that up himself. I could conservatively estimate that about fifty American pilots were saved by the system which John organized in 1943-44." And General Chennault said, in 1945, that about ninety per cent of his downed flyers had been saved by John's

## The Life of John Birch

rescue arrangements — the highest percentage in any war theatre.

In the long official commendation of John Birch by Major General Charles B. Stone, one other significant result of these field activities is recorded. "Early in 1944, in the Hunan combat area, he organized and conducted a school for Chinese Army radio operators and cryptographers for ground-air coordination parties, training well over a hundred of these critically needed individuals." Further along General Stone adds: "During all of these phases he sent back to Fourteenth Air Force Headquarters by radio a constant stream of invaluable combat and political intelligence."

And the final word on John's services in Hunan can appropriately be given to General Hsueh Yo himself. On December 14, 1943, he sent an official communication to "Major General C. L. Chennault, C.C., 14th U.S. Air Force" on the subject "Tribute paid to 1st Lieutenant John M. Birch." It read, in translation, as follows:

"During the whole of this Changteh campaign, the diligent and efficient service of 1st Lt. John M. Birch, liaison and intelligence officer of the 14th U.S. Air Force on detached service in this war zone, who has worked continuously day and night without taking rest, contributed greatly to the close cooperation of the ground and air troops and to the happy conclusion of the said campaign. It is requested that he be given high merits for his brilliant service."

General Hsueh Yo  
Commanding General  
Ninth War Zone

This message was forwarded to John by General Chennault, with an extremely commendatory message of his own. It ended: "Your successes will play an important part in finally driving the Japanese from China."

They did.

### V

#### AN EXPEDITION TO THE YANGTZE

YEARS LATER Chennault, in his autobiographical history, *The Way Of A Fighter*, was to write: "John Birch was the pioneer of our field-intelligence net." Applications of the word "pioneer" to John Birch recur so frequently in comments concerning his career, from all sources, that we shall be unable ourselves to avoid repeating the term without omitting material and quotations needed for other purposes. To be the pioneer, and chart both purpose and course, under the prevailing circumstances, however, required endowments of a superior order. A physical and mental imperviousness to privation and hardship, even for long periods of time, was one of John's assets for intelligence work that we have already glanced at in passing. It deserves a longer look.

Since it is not the custom of Intelligence men to do much talking about their exploits, and since John Birch was, according to all reports, about the least loquacious of this reticent lot, there are many of his trips, and many months of his life, about which we have almost no information. We know, for instance, that at some time and for some purpose he made the difficult journey to Tibet — nothing more. We know that he once rode a Mongolian pony sixty miles through a snowstorm over rough terrain, in one



## The Life of John Birch

day — but not when or why. Nevertheless the known facts were sufficient to make his hardihood a legend.

Part of this ability came from mental attitude and determination. But part of it came from a splendid youthful physique, with tremendous recuperative powers, and with a camel-like ability to refuel for long stretches whenever the opportunity offered. During John's months in Chungking, after his arrival there in June, 1942, his appetite had been regarded with amazement by everybody. Headquarters of Chennault's A.V.G., and of the Task Force which succeeded it, were at Peishiyi Air Base, actually some thirty miles out of Chungking, and the food provided this group by the Chinese at this time was excellent and plentiful. But John would eat a large dinner, which filled everybody else up, and then turn right around and eat a second dinner, just like the first, starting with soup and straight on through dessert. His system was recovering strength and substance after those long months on bamboo shoots and rice; and was automatically, if without conscious intention, preparing for even more months ahead when it would have to get along exclusively on similar sustenance again.

In August, 1943, during a lull between the two Changteh campaigns, John left Changsha with two Chinese radio operators and six coolies. All he took with him was one case of D rations, a tommy gun, and a .45 pistol; and some scant bedding and several radios which were carried by the coolies. His mission was to contact General Shuen Yoh who commanded, in the Hankow-Wuning-Wienning triangle, a hard-hitting guerilla outfit known euphemistically as the 2nd

Group Brigade. In between were mountains, areas of scorching semi-tropical heat, and the enemy. The only beverage to be drunk with safety was boiled water, or tea; and about the only food available behind the lines was "red rice with rocks in it." John himself had sufficient respect for the danger involved to have left in Changsha this message: "If anything should happen to me please tell my family I am deeply grateful for my Christian home and upbringing." But he and his little troupe walked the three hundred miles, averaging thirty miles per day — and back again. Although he had completely worn out two pairs of Army shoes, and actually reached Changsha in Chinese cloth sandals, John returned safely in October, "lean, deeply sunburned, but in splendid condition, and greatly inspired with the success of his mission."

He had found the Chinese guerillas completely cooperative and helpful. "While on the Yangtze," General Chennault reports, "Birch discovered the Japanese were much more dependent on the Shihweiyao iron mines and smelter than we had suspected. He sent us detailed information that enabled us to cripple the blast furnaces and docks by bombing."

On this same mission John learned through his guerilla friends that the Japanese were using a suburb near Hankow to conceal a big munitions dump from air attacks on that city. After this information was transmitted by radio relays to headquarters the bombers were still unable to locate the target. So John himself filtered back through the lines far enough to be picked up by a plane, and rode in the nose of the lead B-25 to pin-point the exact spot for the bombardier. When

## The Life of John Birch

the first bombs hit, munitions started exploding, and soon the whole seemingly deserted town erupted into a volcano of smoke and fire. John's Chinese friends, who had tipped him off to this secret, were watching from a nearby hill, and were greatly impressed by what he had been able to accomplish. When he later made his way forward to that area once more, to continue his expedition, they told him that the dump had been completely destroyed.

Most important result of the whole mission, however, was John's establishment of tiny radio stations overlooking the main river ports, including one such station on a small island right in the Yangtze. "From this station," 1st Lt. Arthur H. Hopkins, Jr., who was carrying on John's radio mission in Changsha while he was gone, has written, "the Chinese radio operators sent into the 14th Air Force reports of Japanese shipping along the most important waterways, and daily weather reports." This station and others John set up "worked back to him" in Changsha; from where he translated and relayed the information to 14th Air Force Headquarters. And as Colonel Wilfred Smith put it, through John's placing those sets on the river, from then on "the Japs never moved a ship on the Yangtze without our knowledge."

Hopkins wrote further: "John was a pioneer in this type of work, and completed many missions of this nature. Some of the time he disguised himself as a Chinese coolie, even carrying a load from a bamboo pole across his shoulders. He spoke Chinese so perfectly that the natives all thought he was a Chinese from another province." Very few Americans could get away with this, and, as we have already remarked, it

was a tremendously valuable accomplishment to have such a command of the language; but probably even fewer Americans could survive the work and the living conditions, required to be convincing as a Chinese coolie, for any worthwhile length of time.

In October John Birch and Arthur Hopkins together set up a new and much larger radio station in Changsha, John having gone to Kunming for the personnel and equipment immediately on his return from the Yangtze expedition. Hopkins was transferred early in November, and John personally handled most of the liaison work during the battle for Changteh in November and December. Once again, while this battle lasted, he worked twenty hours a day for a stretch of several weeks.

In February, 1944, John went to Kunming again for more supplies. He spent the month of March further improving the operation in Changsha, and then the station was taken over by Captain Malcolm Rosholt. For the 14th Air Force was now ready to start extending its operations further north. And John Birch, because of both his skill and enthusiasm as a trail blazer, was sent to pioneer the intelligence and liaison work north of the Yangtze Kiang. His usefulness, and the importance of his work, were to increase greatly in this new theatre of the war.

### VI

#### SETTLING DOWN IN ANHWEI

Now solid experience, and the complete confidence of his superiors and fellow officers, helped to make more valuable one asset which he had possessed from the beginning. That was an extremely practical approach to the



## The Life of John Birch

total job to be done. For John Birch intelligence and liaison work was never a matter of going through certain motions or prescribed procedures, or a thing apart for him to do as his particular duty and for somebody else to make effective. The idea was to drive the Japs out of China. John saw anything and everything that might contribute to that end as a part of his own job.

Major General Stone, in his official commendation of John Birch for the Distinguished Service Cross, from which we have already quoted, summarized a part of John's activities for about twelve months in one paragraph as follows:

"Having participated until mid-1944 in the early stages of the final North-South Japanese drive, and having organized a highly successful supply-dropping operation for the hard-pressed Chinese ground troops, he was designated to go on a political mission into the Japanese-held northern province of Shantung. But on his way there a strategic situation having developed in the intermediate province of Anhwei, and receiving orders to assist the Chinese Army Commander there, he spent several months until spring, 1945, developing intelligence in the area and, during the course of his stay, organized the construction of two secret airfields adjacent to Japanese-held territory, from which a number of forced-down air personnel were rescued, and successfully took off again, key supplies for forward Chinese units and important undercover agents were landed at a saving of many weeks of otherwise unavoidable ground travel.

These fields were used on several occasions as refueling points on extended combat missions."

This paragraph, accurate and completely appropriate for its purpose, is nevertheless suggestive of the condensation, by the Persian scholars in Anatole France's story, of the history of the whole human race into "They were born, they suffered, they died." Since ours is not an official report, we can afford to look at a little of the detail behind this condensation.

Actually, the mission to the north was decided on at a conference in Kunming between Colonel Jesse Williams and Colonel Wilfred Smith in which John participated. The idea was to have John do in North China what he had already done so successfully in South China; establish widespread and useful liaison and intelligence in the field. The fact that almost everything north of the Yangtze was enemy-held territory, and that there were at this time three million Japanese in China, approximately one-half of them in the armed forces, does not seem to have discouraged either John or his superiors in the least.

The operation was planned to begin with three men: First Lt. (later Captain) William Drummond, Sergeant Eichenberry (a good radio man), and John — now Captain — Birch. Captain Birch was to be in charge, and Colonel Williams issued the final order on March 17. Drummond and Eichenberry went ahead with supplies, John went back to Changsha to wind things up there, and they met at Lao Ho Kow on May 17, 1944.

At that time the Japs were starting their campaign along the Pinghan Railway, having already taken Loyang and

## The Life of John Birch

occupied the old right of way with their troops. Perhaps this had something to do with the orders John received to stop in Anhwei instead of going on to Shantung Province. At any rate he and Drummond and Eichenberry stayed at Lao Ho Kow until May 26, and then took off with one Chinese officer in the direction of Fowyang. Proceeding by foot they arrived on June 6th at the small town of Shenchiu, and decided that this was it. They set up their radio station in Shenchiu.

From June 6 through September 6 one of the party was always at Shenchiu, and this was their central point of contact. During the first part of this period, or about June 15, the first B-29 raid on Japan occurred. The planes flew right over Shenchiu that night and then early in the morning flew back over Shenchiu in the opposite direction. Their fate was unknown to John or his crew for some time. But the flight had been a great help, nevertheless. For the Chinese in that area had not been able to see how the Americans and their radio station could possibly do any good there. This visible evidence of the reach of American airpower changed their minds and made the mission considerably easier.

In the meantime, immediately on arrival and entirely on his own initiative, John had started looking for possible locations for emergency airfields. He found two promising spots, the nearest one about fifty miles away. With Chinese officers and the aid of Chinese engineers, all of whom he had to persuade that the project was worth while, he went out himself and laid out the rough dimensions and plans for the field. (One summer back in Georgia, between college years, John

had worked on a surveying crew. The experience probably helped a little now, simply in giving him a better understanding of the task.) Then the Chinese did the job of actual construction, entirely by hand labor, and the whole field did not cost the U. S. Air Force a penny. The same was true of the second field built. John was able to get almost incredible cooperation and enthusiastic support from both the Chinese armed forces and Chinese civilians, because he knew how to deal with them diplomatically in their own language and because his sincere friendship for the Chinese and devotion to their cause were so unmistakable. For a few weeks there were literally thousands of coolies working on this field, building the strips by the most primitive labor methods known.

Then a very ill wind for one of his crew was converted by John into a very good wind for his general purpose. Sergeant Eichenberry came down sick, very sick. The Chinese physician identified the disease as cholera. John got a radio message through to Kunming recommending that they send a plane out there to evacuate Eichenberry. It was always hard to get the Air Force to use a temporary field. So John's idea was not only to get Eichenberry out, but also to force the issue by getting a plane in and thus breaking the ice for the use of his new field. And so, on July 19, only six weeks after John Birch had first reached Shenchiu, the Chinese American Composite Wing sent a B-25 bomber and eight P-40's as an escort to this field which his Chinese friends had built. They picked up Eichenberry and took him out. They dropped a few supplies, the first John's mission had had, except what they brought with



## The Life of John Birch

them. And the new field was in business; established as a forward base which saved about half the distance for normal operations and enabled the 14th Air Force to extend their striking range several hundred miles.

Birch and Drummond went back then to Shenchiu and worked together there for about four weeks. Then on August 13 John got himself picked up at one of his "temporary" fields and taken back to Kunming. But he had arranged that the same plane which took him out brought in Sergeant Lee, an American-born Chinese radio operator, so that Drummond and Lee could maintain effective radio headquarters at Shenchiu while he was gone.

The purpose of John's trip was to report to headquarters, to discuss the prospects of using his Shenchiu mission and the two airfields for forward air bases and as a central source of intelligence for North China and Manchuria — and to obtain supplies and equipment. He was successful in all particulars, even and especially in convincing headquarters of the value of the enterprise. He arrived back at one of the airfields on October 18, in a transport, accompanied by a C-47 loaded with freight. Altogether he brought back between five and six thousand pounds of radio equipment and supplies. He also brought back Lt. Lu, one of his old radio operators from the Changsha station. The two Americans, Captain Birch and Lt. Drummond, and the two Chinese, Lt. Lu and Sergeant Lee, then worked together at Shenchiu until November 2. They were justifiably proud of the fact that, at the end of the longest supply line in the world, which was the China theatre, they were at the end of the longest branch in that

area — 850 miles by air from Kunming — and were functioning so well.

As soon as they had all of the additional equipment properly nailed down, both Birch and Drummond agreed they should split off and reach out for new contacts. They both left Shenchiu on November 2. But before Drummond got too far word reached him that postponed these excursions. It might be well to quote Lt. Drummond's own report here for a while.

"We got information that flyers from the B-20 raid back in June had been downed near Nanking and that they were being directed out of the Communist area. I headed off toward the temporary airfield, and the (first) flyers pulled in there on November 4. I contacted John and asked him to come down to this airfield so we could get the plane to evacuate these men, which he did. John came down by bicycle and horseback . . . bringing with him radio supplies. We finally made arrangements to have a transport flown in to pick up these men. Incidentally, they were pretty glad to see us, as we were the first Americans they had seen since they were forced down.

"A curious thing occurred the day the plane was to be flown in, November 15. It started to rain early in the morning, so we sent the word in, figuring that there was no chance the plane would come in that day. At noon that day the Chinese planned a special feast for us. We were eating goat meat. Although it was raining, we were supposed to go out to make contact every hour until ordered by headquarters to secure, but it was raining so hard we figured no plane

## The Life of John Birch

would come. But John said since it was near the hour, and no orders had come, he would go out anyway to see. So he went out there and he hadn't been gone more than three quarters of an hour when we heard engine noise. Well, everybody broke for the door and the airfield, through the knee-deep mud. I took off on foot, but never made it at all. These 20th Air Force boys (the downed flyers) went on Chinese ponies and outdistanced me. None of the flyers knew how to ride and one riderless pony came by, and the riders went staggering on in the mud. But all got to the plane, though they left their stuff behind.

"There was no escort (for the transport plane) and it surely was bad weather. John was up at the other end of the field with the radio. The field itself was 3,500 feet long. I got down there and John was standing watching the plane take off. He was absolutely dazed and it was five minutes before I could get the story out of him. What had happened was, he had gone out to the field, taking with him a portable direction finder; and while he was tuning in the radio he thought he heard engine noise, but couldn't see anything, the rain was driving so hard. Incidentally, the wind had blown the roof off the temporary radio hut out there, and the rain was coming down on the radio equipment. It was lucky he had brought the finder along (engine noise under rain conditions doesn't give accurate direction), and got a fix on the plane and gave the pilot enough instructions to be able to make a landing. Without these instructions the pilot could not have

found the strip and would have had to return without landing.

"When I got there John was standing, soaked to the skin, holding a carton of cigarettes in one hand and the portable direction finder in the other. He said to me 'You can have these. I don't smoke and the pilot says this is his last trip to China, he won't need them.'

"Ordinarily the operation of landing a plane in this field under these circumstances would require at least three men; one to operate the hand-driven generator, one to operate the large transmitter and receiver, and the third to stand outside the hut to give directions to those inside, and to talk the plane in. Actually what John did was to operate the transmitter and generator on the large radio in the rain until the plane was within range of the portable direction finder, and then talk the plane in with this portable outfit. While the plane was landing he had to run on foot to a spot on the field near enough to the plane so the pilot could see him as he served as transient guide, so the plane could taxi to an appropriate spot for unloading and loading. He then had to run ahead of the take-off as the pilot knew nothing of the field.

"It is always dangerous business to bring a plane in, in a temporary field, because radio silence has to be broken and any Jap planes in the area could locate the field and might destroy the plane. Also the plane had to carry enough fuel for the return trip (fuel was as valuable as blood at that time and it took more than eight hundred gallons just for one way), and the plane could waste no time on the ground. With the rain and every



## The Life of John Birch

condition against him, the split-minute efficiency left John unnerved. He could hardly believe the plane had come and gone when it was all over."

It's no wonder that another one of John Birch's associates in the war, in sending his wife a photograph of John, inscribed on it: "Keep this picture; I can tell you endless stories of him!" And perhaps the quality or asset of John Birch which we should have stressed most was dependability; an unceasing attention to duty at whatever infinite pains might be required. For a failure to contact that rescue plane and bring it in and get it off with every flyer — however excusable and understandable such a failure could have been under the circumstances — might have given John's whole Shenchiu operation a black eye, and caused a loss of absolute confidence back at headquarters, which would have greatly reduced the importance and effectiveness of the mission and of John's further enterprising efforts in the future.

### VII

#### A CHRISTMAS PARTY

JOHN BIRCH had many characteristics which might not have been assets, for an intelligence-liaison job, in everybody, but which certainly were for him. For one thing, he neither drank, nor smoked, nor swore. But he avoided all the possible bad effects of this almost fanatical personal asceticism by a complete tolerance of the habits of others, by a constant deprecation of any possible claims to virtue on his part, and by a rollicking humor. His favorite remark, by radio or in person, to anybody who was not coming through promptly enough or fully enough with the co-

operation he thought called for, was: "What's the matter, don't you want to win this war?" John himself was an unswervingly fundamentalist Baptist. But he once wrote his parents of his delight on the arrival at his station of an officer who was an ardent Christian of another denomination — and then added slyly: "Of course, I do hope he gets a good immersion sometime soon." And one of his perennial jokes was about the way the Chinese managed to grow so many rocks in their rice.

Perhaps humor is not the word to describe the trait in John Birch about which we are talking, but human-ness. He once told Arthur Hopkins that he considered PX supplies a "frivolous luxury which saps the morale of an army." And yet he was notorious for buying PX supplies for enlisted men under him, on the basis of loans whenever they were short of money, and then never allowing the loans to be repaid. John fully appreciated the dramatic incongruities which were a frequent part of the incidents of war. As when 1st Lt. T. J. Gribbs parachuted to earth, in what he thought was an extremely rural and remote part of China—which it was—and almost immediately found himself in the midst of a large party, of Americans and Chinese, singing Christmas carols and enjoying the usual Christmas festivities — (even including a Santa Claus, who was a Chinese dressed for the part) — with an active radio station at hand to take care of such emergencies as his own.

This was at Linchuan, a small town near Shenchiu, in December, 1944. At the airfield some fifty miles away, living under the most crowded conditions imaginable, and even then only through the limitless hospitality of the

## The Life of John Birch

self-sacrificing Chinese neighbors, were a large number of both destitute missionaries and "lost" flyers, waiting to be evacuated. But snow had made the field unusable, and finally had got so deep that the field couldn't even be found or recognized under the fourteen-inch blanket. At the time, Lt. Drummond was there with these charges, while John was working at Linchuan. The Chinese commander for this whole area, General Wang, had taken a great liking to John, understood what John and the mission were trying to accomplish, and did everything he possibly could to be helpful. The Christmas party was arranged by General Wang. John sent a message to the field. Lt. Drummond explained to the missionaries, most of whom were quite elderly, that absolutely nothing could be done for a few days anyway, and he and the flyers made Linchuan in two and one-half days on horseback. The Chinese exerted every effort to see that all of the Americans had a good time, and the whole interlude was a wonderful break.

In the meantime Tom Gribbs, of the 32nd Fighter Squadron of the 14th Air Force, had been compelled by a leak in his gas line to drop out of a formation in which he was flying a P-40. Not knowing where he was, he had picked out a spot about ten miles from Linchuan and come down to attempt a landing. Finding that he couldn't make it, he had taken his plane back up and bailed out. He was picked up by Chinese guerillas and taken into Linchuan — to find this Christmas party in full swing. He probably hasn't fully recovered from his amazement yet.

The pilotless plane nose-dived to earth not too far away. One week later a long line of coolies pulled up to the

house at which John and Lt. Drummond were staying in Linchuan. John went out to ask them what they were doing, and they said, "Here's your plane." And with a tremendous crash they dropped it in the courtyard. One hundred and twenty of them had lifted the tangled wreck out of the earth and bodily carried it across country to Linchuan.

As badly mangled as it was, John and his associates thought that, under these circumstances, they certainly ought to salvage something from the remains. So he and Drummond and Gribbs rummaged through it thoroughly; but the best they could come up with was the rubber-tired tail wheel, which they used as the foundation for a new wheelbarrow. Or so they thought, but General Wang had a better idea. He got the Americans to melt down the aluminum fuselage, and out of it he had his metal smith make two bathtubs, which he presented to John and Lt. Drummond. If they could only have stayed at Linchuan long enough they could have been living in luxury.

There was one other result of this plane crash which was much more amusing to John. In all of the efforts of Drummond and himself, they were passively opposed by an old-style Chinese general in the area, who never could understand what they were doing, and who had no faith in any modern gadgets or scientific improvements. This General Chow was friendly enough, but just unconvinced. He made a visit to the house where John and Drummond were staying to see how they were getting along. John took him out back to see Gribb's plane. General Chow looked at this tangled mass of scrap, scratched his head, and



## The Life of John Birch

said: "This airplane business, it still hasn't been perfected." Then he wanted to know how badly the pilot was hurt in landing it. Suddenly it dawned on John that not only had the general probably never heard of a parachute, but that obviously he thought this was the normal result of landing any plane whenever one came down. So John, without enlightening him, solemnly explained that the pilot, who knew his "airplane business" quite well, had not been hurt at all; and then took great delight in introducing the evidently unharmed Gibbs to the astounded general. Months later John Birch was still chuckling over, and enjoying telling friends about, General Chow's obvious mystification.

The missionaries at the airfield were themselves just one episode of a war-long story. From the beginning John had felt a personal responsibility for helping the stranded missionaries, of all denominations. Colonel Wilfred Smith has written, of the earlier — South China — period: "No one will ever know exactly how many missionaries were aided in their evacuation by John. . . . He would stick his neck out. When he was with me he would get an airplane and evacuate them. But John always sent back (with the missionaries) an important packet of military information, which justified his asking for the plane."

This particular lot at the airfield in December, 1944, were China Inland Mission people who had been stranded in the Tenth War Area. They had received orders to leave and report to Chungking, but couldn't get back. John had been in touch with some of them on his own initiative, and had got the word spread around as to where they

were to rendezvous. At the time, Lt. Drummond, who had started earlier for Chinese Tenth War Area headquarters at Lihuang, had been obliged to go back to the airbase with more American flyers he had gathered up and others who were coming in. It was an unusually cold winter, rivers were frozen, there was a lot of snow, traveling was miserable, the field was useless, and there was no place at first for even Drummond and the flyers to live except in the tiny quarters at the field. Then about December 20 these missionaries — American, British, and Dutch women, almost all of them over sixty — began to arrive. John had already made arrangements with the Air Force to include these people on the next plane that came in to evacuate flyers. (Lt. Drummond says: "I don't think the missionaries ever realized what a favor this was that John took upon himself — it was difficult to accomplish.") But Drummond, who had himself barely got back to the field with flyers who had been brought to him by guerillas at Kushi, knew nothing of these arrangements. The missionaries enlightened him. They wanted to know if he was Lieutenant Drummond, and if this was the place to which they had been directed for evacuation by instructions of Captain Birch. Drummond decided that undoubtedly the answer to both questions was yes, but what to do with these women had him stumped. His report to John on the radio was a masterpiece. "Harvey's Restaurant," he said, "is absolutely jammed. I hope you are not sending any more customers." The day was saved by a Chinese family, with a fairly large house, moving out of whole sections of it and turning these parts over

## The Life of John Birch

to Drummond's refugees. Even then food and fuel was a tough problem.

On January 4 Drummond and the flyers left Linchuan and returned to the airfield — arriving in the midst of another snowstorm. When the snow stopped and the weather cleared, it turned even colder, and he and John were becoming pretty desperate to get their charges out. So, at the rather terrible risk of Japanese attack, from exposing the bare black strip of the airfield in such a wide expanse of white, they made the field usable by the most fundamental expedient. All it required was incredible cooperation from the native inhabitants of the area, such as only men like William Drummond and John Birch could obtain. Working against the danger of a thaw, which would make their work a waste and the field useless for another month, between 750 and 800 Chinese went out with hand shovels, day after day in the bitter cold, and simply carried the snow off the field. John got a plane in, early on the morning of January 14. All of the flyers, and all of the missionaries but one, a man, were able to get aboard. He got out on the next plane, one month later.

### VIII

#### THE O.S.S. COMES TO CHINA

BILL DRUMMOND described John Birch as "absolutely fearless, completely unselfish, never thinking of his personal discomfort or danger." This expresses the amazingly unanimous appraisal of everybody who knew him in China. But it is not to be supposed, from this consecrated attitude toward his work, that John was by any means an automaton; or that he was devoid of normal human ambitions and emotions,

simply because he kept them so firmly in check.

For one thing, there was a stubbornness about John Birch, when he felt sure he was right, that was a tough obstacle for anybody who needed to break it down. This streak showed up most emphatically, in the form of his personal loyalty to General Chennault, when the Office of Strategic Services began taking over intelligence and liaison work in China late in 1944. John thought the change was both unfair and unwise. He wasn't having any. And he stated publicly, and officially, that he had rather work as a private for Chennault than as a colonel for the O.S.S.

This was not in the least because he put his personal preferences over a sense of duty. For during all these hard thirty months, or more, what John had wanted most was to become a fighter pilot. Somehow, in the midst of everything else, he had learned to fly, had flown some of the small training ships the Chinese had available, and had passed the physical requirements to enter an Army flying school back in the States. As Arthur Hopkins puts it, "he did not feel that he was doing enough, walking around behind enemy lines, but he wanted to be in there shooting." He had been promised the opportunity, and pleaded more than once to have it fulfilled. But the opportunity never materialized, simply because John was too valuable as a liaison officer. By his work in the field he made himself, in the eyes of Chennault and many others, "more valuable than a dozen pilots." Edwin James used to say frequently, on pointing John out to his fellow officers, "There goes the most important *one* man in our China operations." Exag-



## The Life of John Birch

gerated though this may have been, the appraisal of Captain Birch's superiors was too nearly the same for him to be spared. So John was denied his request each time, and went on making himself more valuable as an intelligence and liaison officer.

But John, and others like him, starting from scratch in a country overrun by the enemy, had built up an intelligence and liaison service that was practical, efficient, sparked by unshakable confidence of its members in each other, and increasingly successful. To have men from the European front, who knew nothing of China or the Chinese people, coming in and taking over, through the simple leverage of having all the money allotted to them by Washington, was a bitter pill for a lot of people besides John Birch. Also, John was entirely too intelligent, and by this time too experienced, not to recognize some of the undercurrents that were already starting to cut the ground out from under our Chinese allies, with whom he and the rest of Chennault's forces had been working in marvelously close unison for years.

The result was that his superiors let the matter ride for quite a while, and John was carried for some months as a member of the 14th Air Force after the rest of the intelligence crew had been assigned to O.S.S. But regardless of the wisdom of the course, or the reasons behind it, the O.S.S. did take over. General Chennault has said, "In the spring of 1945 I was ordered to transfer my Intelligence Service — my entire Intelligence organization — to O.S.S. In order to continue to get intelligence, I had to leave my men in the O.S.S., but they still gave me intelligence reports and still rescued my men." John's

anomalous position finally became too embarrassing to maintain. Colonel Wilfred Smith argued with him at great length, and General Chennault himself radioed John to come to Kunming for a talk. Chennault pointed out how dependent he and the 14th Air Force still were on their former intelligence team, even though the members of that team had to work now for the O.S.S. It was arranged that Captain Birch would serve as officially "on loan" to the O.S.S., rather than being formally transferred. And it was on this "detached service" basis that John operated under O.S.S. orders, from May, 1945 for the remainder of the war — and of his life. The fact that he received no further promotions in rank may have been due to his peculiar status. For the newcomers to China in the O.S.S. came rapidly to share the universal admiration for him as a man and as an officer, and a continued dependence on him for the most difficult missions.

John had clearly foreseen the basic significance of some of the moves taking place, including the intention to brush Chennault aside; and had contributed his own one-man fight against it as a matter of principle in which he deeply believed. But during these very months when the protracted argument was going on, he had been doing his most important work of the war to date. In February he had gone to headquarters in Kunming for further plans and orders. Thereafter, he was all over China for a while, on various coordination tasks. In March he was back in Linchuan once more, to help establish an actual base there. Then, with a permanent team of about ten men, and more men drawn from the 10th Chinese Air Force as needed, he was constantly

## The Life of John Birch

establishing new bases, and bringing in personnel to man them. Again referring to Major General Stone's official summary, we find that "in April, 1945, he (John) supervised the placement of ten American air-ground coordination units out of Sian in North China which, operating with the Chinese Army in conjunction with 14th Air Force units, were largely instrumental in containing the Japanese drive from Honan Province towards Sian."

It was apparently at the end of these particular efforts that John caught plane rides a thousand miles to Kunming — the official version is that he "hitch-hiked" — for his conversation with General Chennault that led to his "temporary" attachment to O.S.S. in May. His continuous job, from then on until the end of the war in August, was the organizing of undercover intelligence activities in North China.

In the three years from May, 1942, when John Birch headed across Kiangsi Province for Chungking, expecting to be a chaplain, to May, 1945, when he joined O.S.S., John had matured a great deal. He himself, in a letter written during March, 1944, expressing his humble regret that he had not been living up to his high evangelical Christian purpose with all the unremitting zeal of which he felt he should have been capable, found one consoling thought for himself and for the equally devout aunt to whom he poured out his faith and his meditations. (This aunt, Miss May Cosman, a much loved teacher in the public schools of Landis Township, New Jersey, had first taught John to read when he was four years old, while the family was living in Vineland. Really his great-aunt — his mother's aunt —, she had contributed

to his support while in college, helped him in many other ways, and exerted a strong influence over his whole life. John was a very loyal and grateful nephew.) "Meantime," he wrote, as though in self defense, "I am growing (in the arm of flesh) in ability to organize and handle men in the achievement of difficult tasks. So these years of violence are not entirely wasted." He then added a strikingly prophetic line: *"I believe that this war and the ensuing federations will set the world stage, as never before, for the rise of anti-Christ!"* And he closed by declaring what a privilege it would be, in that day, to fight on the Christian side.

Unfortunately, agents of the very anti-Christ, whose rise John foresaw, also recognized what a dangerous antagonist John Birch would be. For it was his firm intention, often announced, to remain in China and resume his missionary activities once the war was over. He had even given as one reason for learning to fly that with a small plane he would be able to multiply many fold his efforts in organizing new missions and churches and in keeping them strong and growing. His consecration to this dream was so great and so positive that for it he made, of his own free will, what must have been an extremely heavy sacrifice.

### IX

#### THE ONE ROMANCE

SOMEHOW, DURING these three years, John Birch had also found time to fall in love and become engaged. Contrary to what might be surmised from the puritan rigor of his existence and his assured self-discipline, John had an intensely romantic outlook on everything about life, including love. On success-



## The Life of John Birch

fully reaching the Yangtze Kiang at the end of his three hundred mile expedition through enemy territory in 1943, John had been so excited and pleased that he had reached down and scooped up some of the water with his hands and drunk it (even though he well knew the danger and did not usually take any needless risk of his life or his health). And he himself had said that he felt very much like Balboa discovering the Pacific. This was the same John Birch who, ever since he had been on the Army payroll, had been sending \$150 per month back to his parents in Georgia, with instructions to use one-half of it themselves, towards making their lives a little easier, but to use the other seventy-five dollars per month to buy trees and plant them on any part of the family land which John might be able to call his own — or on land purchased for the purpose. Growing trees for the future not only represented to John a sound investment but, more important, a gesture to the adventure of life through the increase in living things. (Incidentally, his family followed his instructions faithfully and exactly. In order to make John's money go as far as possible, his father and mother and brothers and sisters planted all the seedlings themselves, and those trees are still growing on land around Macon today.)

John's fiancée was a Red Cross nurse at the Yale-in-China hospital in Changsha. She was a devoted Christian, was well aware that John was all chaplain inside of his temporarily assumed warrior's shell, and was apparently content with the prospect of being a missionary's wife. For a little while John's letters home revealed some of the happiness he felt in telling about the girl he was

going to marry when the war was over. In the first of these, a letter to his sister Betty, dated March 7, 1944, he wrote:

Don't tell anybody else, because it's still a bit early, but I have found the girl I expect to make my wife. Her name is Audrey, a lovely Scotch girl in the British Red Cross, daughter of a Baptist missionary in the C.I.M. in North China. I think she loves me, and I *know* I love her.

I love you, too!

John

But on May 16 he wrote Betty again, a long letter about many things, containing this paragraph:

It's awfully nice of you to want to write Audrey a letter, and of course it wasn't "too early." Now, however, it is possibly a little late, since I have "busted" things up pretty thoroughly. She is a splendid capable girl, and I think both of you would be happy to have each other's friendship.

In letters to his parents he had already explained more fully, and with the pain showing more clearly between the lines. In one place he writes:

Sorry for your sakes that Audrey's and my engagement is coming to naught, but I feel that it was contrary to the Lord's will to go on with it. I feel called to do some pioneer work in Central Asia after the war (he had long talked of extending his missionary work to West China and even to Chinese Turkestan) and it will be no place for a woman, . . . It seems now that she entered so deeply into my heart that I'll never care for another

## The Life of John Birch

woman, so I guess I'll return to my old creed. I Cor. 7!!

And in another letter:

Father, I am grateful to you, sir, for your wise and kind advice on marriage, happiness, and unselfishness. God has been very good to me, along with all your children, in giving me parents who love the right and the truth, and who have given us a knowledge of these, rather than treasures of silver and gold. Just now I feel especially unworthy and unprofitable as a son of such parents, since I have disappointed Audrey, and you as well. Now I can only ask Him who knows the innermost thoughts of our hearts, and yet loves us, to forgive my wavering. . . .

There are several more paragraphs about the broken engagement, in the two letters, mostly defending and praising Audrey. But they also make clear that no inner sacrifice or outside force is going to stand in the way of a determination to do his part towards offering Christianity, Christian ideals and Christian brotherhood to the people of China.

### X

#### THE PREACHER INSIDE

BECAUSE JOHN's religious convictions were so deep, so simple, and so real, his attitude towards his own achievements and powers was a mixture of unusual modesty and of equally unusual assurance. He took little credit to himself for anything he accomplished, and always discounted its importance. But

he put no limit to the possibilities of what a Divine Being might do through John Birch as one of that Being's worthy agents. To those of us whose religion is less fundamentalist in nature, it might seem that John gave too little credit to himself and too much to a Holy Spirit. But the distinction is of little importance. For John believed completely in free will, and even by his own understanding of the relationship of man to God, he had to be worthy in order to be chosen as one of God's instruments on earth.

He was entirely too human to be impervious to praise or gratitude. But he viewed both the deeds that brought on these rewards, and the rewards themselves, against too broad a background to let himself be deceived as to their significance. As he picked up commendations and honors, both Chinese and American, for his exploits in the field, he paused for the required moment to show his appreciation and pleasure at the recognition, and then turned his eyes resolutely ahead again. With regard to the Legion of Merit, awarded him on July 17, 1944, "for exceptionally meritorious conduct in performance of outstanding service," he wrote his mother at the end of a letter dated August 8:

A message from headquarters said that as soon as I return to the office the General is going to pin the Legion Of Merit medal on me. I think it's for a very ordinary job I did last fall which happened to attract the notice of my superiors. They ought not to cheapen the decoration by giving it when a man merely does his duty. I shall feel guilty in accepting this one. . . . Love, John.



## The Life of John Birch

And on September 22, he wrote her again:

The General pinned the Legion Of Merit medal on me yesterday. The public relations officers took some pictures; I shall try to get a print for you. I don't deserve the decoration, but since they were foolish enough to give it to me I want you to have the pleasure of knowing I have it. . . . Love, John.

This belittling of the honor probably contains about the normal quota of politeness and modesty. But the picture taken of John, as the medal is being pinned on him by General Chennault, is that of an "angry saint" concerned with the future, and not that of a pleased and flattered youngster gloating over the past.

With regard to his post-war plans, however, John felt a huge and inspired confidence — and a great longing to have the war over so that he could get on with the job. There was no doubt about his persuasiveness in the pulpit, or on any podium that might temporarily serve as a pulpit. For Second Lieutenant, then First Lieutenant, then Captain John M. Birch, Intelligence Officer, had never stopped preaching. There have been many stories written of fighting preachers, but John Birch presents the first clear-cut case I know about of the preaching fighter. While his military duties always came first, and the preaching always had to be both incidental and additional to military activities and movements, it is extremely doubtful if any full-time chaplain in China conducted more religious services or preached more sermons than John Birch during the three

years John wore an army uniform.

This extra-curricular activity was carried on with not only the knowledge but the full approval of John's superior officers. He substituted for chaplains when requested, or took on assignments for which there were no chaplains available. He held services on Sundays, at Christmas, at Easter, and at all other proper occasions; in officers' quarters, in enlisted men's barracks, in official chapels or rented halls. He preached to the Chinese, civilian or military or both, whenever and wherever there was an opportunity. He preached repeatedly to audiences of many hundreds, and with equal earnestness to gatherings of a dozen or less.

Colonel Wilfred Smith has pretty well summed up the official attitude towards the missionary side, as distinguished from the more normal and obviously acceptable "chaplain" side, of those continued clerical activities.

"I think John's work as a missionary and the testimony he gave, a testimony which was not only a preaching but a living testimony, influenced the lives of more Chinese than he would have been able to reach if he had continued his normal missionary activities. . . . He was all over Central China. That one trip of three hundred miles (the same trek on foot to the Yangtze, to which we have referred before) John told me himself that he 'witnessed' in village after village. I told John he could, for I believed it would help his morale and it didn't hurt the work. . . . The fact that he had the freedom to give out the Gospel (tracts which John took with him whenever he could) made him more valuable in his military work. . . . The

## The Life of John Birch

fact that John was a member of the Army and the Chinese knew he had been a missionary added to his prestige and gave him greater influence with the Chinese."

John himself was well aware of, and in full accord with, that last point. As he wrote his parents, the fact that he had been a missionary gave the Chinese more respect for him as an officer; but, more important, the fact that he was now a soldier and an officer, and was not being paid or supported in any way for his preaching, gave them greatly increased respect for his obviously voluntary missionary efforts. As the war wore on and on, the pressure and strain of his army duties became ever greater, and John himself inevitably became more fatigued throughout every fibre of mind and body, he felt for a while that he was losing some of his appeal and earnestness as a minister, and frequently condemned himself for failure to seize or make opportunities to preach the gospel. This seems to have been especially — and naturally — true at about the time he was breaking up his engagement. In his letter of May 7, 1944, to his parents, he writes: "I hope that God will give me yet further time to live for Him fruitfully here on this earth. I've wasted so much of His time already, living for self, that I really feel ashamed to ask for more!" But then he writes this paragraph:

One thing encourages me, however. When I was last in the Central China city where I met Audrey (this was after she went to India), Rev. Sunberg, of the Evangelical Mission, asked me to preach in Chinese at his Young People's Service. I felt pretty

low and unfit to help others spiritually, but agreed to anyway. The Lord graciously answered my prayer, and the service and message seemed definitely led and applied by the Holy Spirit. My own faith was renewed, too. I spoke on the 15th Chapter of I Corinthians, as it was soon after Easter.

Your loving son,

John

This seems to have been the turning point, in renewal both of faith in himself and of evangelical purpose. In a letter written to his sister sometime later, John summed up his intentions and his hopes, as to the part he would play in calling men to a Christian life "during the lust-ridden years which will follow this war." His fervor and his assurance both stand out in the following lines:

... Often in these days, I feel that those barren years are my apprenticeship, God-given, and that a message is being formed, by Him, within me, that will one day burn its way out and across man's barriers, into the souls of many men.

I know that God is preparing me (has prepared, in some respects) to stand privation, pain, isolation, fatigue and physical danger. To what end? That I trust Him to show me in His own time.

### XI

#### COMMENDATIONS WITHOUT END

THERE is a strong and universal tendency among human beings — among all races of human beings — to



## The Life of John Birch

dislike the goody-good character. That John Birch was able completely to avoid this reaction is one of the most weighty items of evidence as to his strength and his promise. I have in my possession, today, official reports and letters and informal reports and transcriptions of verbal statements, literally dozens of them thousands of words long, from almost every American associated with him for as much as even a few weeks, during his whole five years in China. Many of these statements or reports were made long before John Birch's death, and without the remotest idea that they would ever serve as reference material for a biographical sketch of their subject. And yet nowhere is there the slightest suggestion or suspicion of distaste, because of John Birch's religious proclivity — or for any other reason. There is only universal liking and unrestrained admiration, at every turn. And the reason was that, as Napoleon said of Goethe, "here was a *man*!" Even those who did not share John's religious faith or enthusiasm (of whom there were several) were unstinted in their friendship, their co-operation, and their praise.

Many specific commendations of John Birch have been written or spoken by General Chennault. On one occasion he said that John was "... outstanding in devotion to duty. On several occasions he continued his duties in spite of serious illness. I learned on one occasion he was sick with malaria and I ordered him back to Kunming for treatment and rest. A sudden emergency occurred, he learned of it and came into my office. Though over the malaria he was still weak and should have had a month longer to recuperate, but he came and volunteered to go back into the area in

Honan and establish communications again. It was when it looked as though the enemy would break through."

At another time Chennault wrote: "... John did a magnificent job with me. I always felt that he would do any job I gave him to do well and that he could be depended on to see things through. His loyalty to me personally and his devotion to duty was beyond anything that was expected of him. I cannot praise his work sufficiently." But Chennault really summed up all of the many great things he said elsewhere in one line he wrote about John Birch: "I have always felt towards him as a father might feel towards a son."

Colonel Wilfred J. Smith wrote officially of John Birch, on June 26, 1947: "At all times his courage, perseverance, and unflinching loyalty was an inspiration to American and Chinese personnel alike." On September 25, 1945, Major General Charles B. Stone sent a communication to the Chief of Staff in Washington, recommending John Birch for the Distinguished Service Cross. This communication, three typewritten pages, single spaced, was a carefully itemized and chronologically presented record of John's war service, from which we have already quoted. But it seems worth quoting further a typical summary paragraph, this one concerning the earlier part of the war:

"Without any previous training in ground-air coordination, and with practically no guide materials or instruction, Birch, over a period of two years, during which he was almost continually in the field, living under the most primitive conditions and constantly in close proximity to the enemy, achieved phenomenal success."

## The Life of John Birch

On April 16, 1946, Brigadier General F. W. Evans wrote a long official letter to General Bissell concerning the military service of John Birch. From that letter let's also extract a typical paragraph, but this one concerning a much later period of the war:

"From 25 May 1944 until the end of the war Captain Birch operated almost exclusively behind the lines. His duty was at all times extremely hazardous. Due to his outstanding ability in gathering intelligence and organizing intelligence nets he was an extremely valuable member of the Allied Forces and he contributed immeasurably in bringing the war in China to a successful conclusion."

More revealing than these official and semi-official eulogies of John's superiors, however, are many comments of his fellow officers. Captain James H. Hart, who served with Captain Birch behind Japanese lines in Anhwei Province, has written: "Where brave men were common, John was the bravest man I knew. . . . In civilian life I was a newspaper man and met many people but John Birch is the most notable person I ever had the pleasure to meet." Lt. Arthur Hopkins wrote of John Birch: "Without reservation I will say that he was the most brilliant, finest, most able, bravest officer I ever met." And another fellow officer, Edwin James, whom we have already quoted once, said simply of John: "I must confess he is the only living man on earth I ever worshipped." There are so many other similar experiences of affection and admiration that to catalogue them would simply wear out the patience of the reader.

Perhaps most important of all, however, was what the Chinese thought of this American in their midst. And we can gather unmistakable evidence in this respect from both 14th Air Force personnel and the Chinese themselves. Brigadier General Evans stated one reason that John Birch was such an outstanding intelligence officer was that he had so many Chinese friends behind the lines. That these were *earned* friends is clear from all sources. Captain Hart, in commenting on his own official recommendation of John Birch for the Congressional Medal of Honor, says: "John, however, erected his own monument in the hearts of the Chinese people. . . . Somehow, I feel that he is still walking the dike paths in China and still helping China's 'small person.' His name is legion there now, and I am sure will be ever green."

Colonel J. C. Williams has said that "no other American in China had a higher opinion of the Chinese, for whom he had done so much over the war years." And Captain Bryan P. Glass wrote: "John was a great favorite with the Chinese. Many of his Chinese friends, I am sure, would have been willing to have taken his place when the Communists assassinated him. John was a part of the great tradition established by the 14th Air Force and many Chinese, when hearing the name of the great force will think not only of Chennault, of whom they had heard, but of Pai Shang-wei whom they knew and loved."

Illustrative of the spirit of comradeship and the never-failing kindness which won for John Birch this esteem of his Asiatic friends, and of the depth of their gratitude and friendship, are the following two letters. They have



## The Life of John Birch

been copied verbatim, with no change in language, spelling, or punctuation.

Captain P. C. Wu,  
Chinese Detachment,  
AAFNS, SMAAF,  
San Marcos, Texas,  
May 2, 1944

Mrs. George S. Birch,  
R. F. D. No. 1  
Macon, Ga.

Dear Mrs. Birch,

Inclosed please find a Postal Money Order of \$104.00 U. S., which I owed to your son, Captain J. M. Birch.

I had the pleasure to know Captain J. M. Birch back in Kunming, China. In fact, we worked together much of the time until I was assigned to United States sometime last year.

On February, I asked the favor of Captain J. M. Birch to send some money to my mother somewhere in the China southeastern seacoast owing to the fact that I could not send the money through the bank. Yesterday, I received his letter of April 21 saying that the money been remitted to my mother on April 20, and asking me to return the sum by sending you the equivalent amount.

I like to thank you for the kindness shown to me by your son, Captain J. M. Birch. He has been in China for long period, and always been good friend to Chinese people, and knows how to help them most. Had it not been for his obliging assistance, the transaction would not be possible. My mother and I owe much to you and to him. Thank you.

Your most sincerely,  
[signed] Pochen Wu  
Captain, CAF.

Shanghai, China  
January 9th, 1946

My dear Mrs. Birch:

I am a Korean who, in the past, has been a very best friend of your brave son late Capt. Birch on the battle field. I am now writing a few line across the Pacific Ocean to the mother of a great soldier Birch. At the beginning of a year I am once more to recollect my old memories.

Without an exaggeration your good son was a benefactor of Korea and China. Some time last February I had an opportunity of knowing him at Kuming while both of us were busy for the war activities. Soon after our meeting we became a pal. Through his good offices I had a great honor of meeting the Great General Chennault. Also I had a constant contact with OSS through his favor. His sacrificial help enabled us to have a successful independence movement of Korea against Japan. Not only among Koreans but also among Chinese the late Capt. Birch was so well known because his human elements which penetrated into the hearts of people. Even if our companionship was not so long, we shared tears and laughters together.

My dear Mrs. Birch, please don't feel so sad about your son's death. His sacrificial spirit helped to won the great war. Once more we are able to the world peace and security. Your good son fought not only for your great country but also for China and Korea. In other words he fought for the emancipation of the whole world from injustice and inhumanity. In commemoration of his deed the tomb stone was erected with the writings of "This is the tomb of U.S.A. Officer

## The Life of John Birch

Birch who gave away his life for the liberation of China." His activities in China gave us a vision of lively demonstration of Christianity.

Please accept my admiration and love in your thoughts of your brave son. You gave us your beloved son for the restoration of the democracy in the world. The great and heroic death of your son and his personality will shine among us like the polar star.

May God bless you and your family forever.

I am,  
Your son, late Capt. Birch's  
best Korean friend  
[signed] Gen. Kim Hak Kyu

These Chinese (and Koreans) who knew and loved John Birch were not only thousands in number. They were geographically spread over hundreds of miles, from Kunming to Peiping, and they ranged from the lowliest coolies to the highest officials. Not General Chennault alone, but General Hsueh Yo and General Wang of the Chinese armies also clearly felt for John Birch the affection of a father for a son. And more important, perhaps, than the posthumous award to John of the *Order Of Cloud And Banner* by the Republic of China was the fact that the townspeople of Hsuehchow dedicated a special cemetery for his above-ground vault, on a hill overlooking their city.

There was something about John Birch which inspired almost everybody to speak of him in poetic terms. One friend wrote: "The men of Chennault will tell you that, in Valhalla, the rafters rang when John walked in." A man who thought in terms of a pagan Valhalla was sure its slain heroes would

still welcome and honor this fundamentalist preacher, who was so unflinching in his missionary zeal. So fully had John Birch lived up to all the standards of those heroes during his term on earth.

That term was pathetically short. This young patriot first put on the American Army uniform on July 4, 1942. He wore it with consummate distinction and consecration until the war was won and the Japanese surrendered on August 15, 1945. And only ten days later, while still wearing it, on an important, peaceful and official mission for his government, he was brutally murdered by the Chinese Communists.

### XII

#### CAPTAIN BIRCH'S LAST MISSION

IT IS DOUBTFUL if any nation ever had as much trouble in giving up in a war it had lost, in surrendering to the winner of that war on practically any terms the winner wanted, as did the Japanese with us. As far back as February, 1945, at the time of the Yalta Conference, it was already well known to our military leaders that Japan was ready to surrender. Long before the atomic bombs were even ready to be used, the Japanese were trying, through the Russian intermediaries in whom they put a tragically false trust, to reach the American government with overtures for peace. And before the bombs were actually exploded at Hiroshima and Nagasaki they were making frantic efforts to surrender. But not until August 15 were they allowed to do so. For every day that the war could be kept going meant further gains for the Communists on the mainland of China, and a Japan more demoralized and more vulnerable to Communist advances, thievery, and



## The Life of John Birch

infiltration. That the Communists were at that time exerting sufficient influence in the very top councils of our government to bring about such an incredible delay, and to use a barbaric means to further their ends, is now well established by incontrovertible revelations of the past several years. But few of the Japanese, who were then still officially allied with Communist Russia through the Molotov-Matsuoka Pact, and even fewer of the American people, had any knowledge of the way they were kept killing each other month after month in order to serve Stalin's imperial purposes.

When General MacArthur sent President Roosevelt before the Yalta meeting a memorandum stating that Japan was already collapsing, that the Japanese were already making unofficial peace overtures, and that it would be folly at this stage to bribe Russia or even allow Russia to come into the Pacific War as our ally, Roosevelt brushed it aside with the wisecrack that MacArthur was our best general and our poorest politician. When Jacob Malik pigeonholed the actual Japanese offer to discuss surrender steps for more than two months, nobody in the White House or the State Department let on that they even had the slightest suspicion Japan could be licked without dropping atom bombs on their cities. And when, after Hiroshima had been destroyed on August 6, and the cries of Japan to surrender had become too direct and too widely audible to be ignored any longer, the stalling was still sufficient to allow Russia to get comfortably under the wire as a participant — and to begin immediately her "rush for Asia." But finally, nevertheless, on August 15, 1945 (in China, August 14 in America), the

surrender was arranged and accepted.

This surrender did not clear up the problems in China overnight, by any means. For one thing, there were at that time three million Japanese, half of them in uniform, on Chinese soil. And the state of disorganization was so great, after eight years of China's war with Japan, and with all of these forces of the conquered enemy trapped on the land of the country they had invaded as conquerors, that many difficult missions were necessary to untangle the mess. One such mission, headed by Captain John Birch, started from an American airfield near Fowyang, in northern Anhwei Province, for Tsingtao, on the Shantung Peninsula, where there was a known pocket of disturbance. In the words of Colonel Paul L. E. Helliwell, John Birch was selected for that "particular mission because of his familiarity with the country and the language, and because of his superbly excellent relations with Nationalist and guerilla units operating in that area. The assignment was one of importance and was one on which I sent by far the best officer available." And Brigadier General Evans says that John "was sent on this mission because he was the only officer in that area who had a sound knowledge of that section of China."

That John himself considered the mission important is clear from the fact that he volunteered to lead it. For after three years of dangerous and difficult service, without any let-up whatsoever, John himself had admitted that he was about at the end of his rope, and had asked for a furlough. How significant was this request can be seen from the fact that John had continuously refused all previous offers of leave, despite the pleading letters from several

## The Life of John Birch

members of his family in Georgia, and the pleas of even General Chennault himself. At one time, several months before, Chennault had insistently offered John thirty days leave in the States, with the customary free transportation provided both ways, and had kept the offer open for a long time. But John had turned this offer down, as he had several earlier opportunities, on the ground that his small service was still badly needed to help towards winning the war. Now he had actually asked for a leave, but then consented to have the request postponed until this one further mission, for which his special knowledge and abilities were so badly needed, should be completed.

Despite the fact that his commanding officers and John himself both considered the mission of great importance, however, its exact nature and purpose have never been revealed. For the War Department file on Captain Birch is still classified as secret, and the information in it is unavailable to me or to the public. The reasons why it was originally so classified, by the Pentagon brass under Truman's thumb in 1945, will become fairly obvious later. But its continued classification today is apparently due to nothing more than inertia on the part of so heavy a body as the U.S. Army, and the unwillingness of any component of that body to stick his individual neck out and remove the classification barrier. For I have been told by one trustworthy friend who was privileged to see it — but not to reveal to me its contents — that there is absolutely nothing in that file, in his opinion, which could today endanger the United States or help any enemy in the slightest.

However, despite this "classified"

hocus-pocus, and despite the brazen misrepresentations perpetrated by the War Department in 1945 and its reports to John Birch's parents, and despite the deliberate obstacles raised to the uncovering of the exact circumstances of John Birch's death for years after that death occurred, the true facts with regard to all the main incidents of his last mission have now been well established. They are set forth below in reasonably full detail, but without any unnecessary elaboration.

When the party left Fowyang it consisted of Captain Grimes, Lt. Ogle, and Sergeant Meyers of the U.S. Army, Lt. Tung of the Chinese Army as liaison officer, five other Chinese and two Koreans, with Captain Birch as commanding officer. From the airfield near Fowyang they proceeded at first on horseback and then by boat, until they made contact, as arranged, with "puppet" authorities that had been working clandestinely for the Nationalist government. They then were taken by car to a village on the Lunghai Railroad, and stayed in this village from the evening of August 22 to the morning of August 24. At noon on the twenty-fourth they left by train, going eastward towards Hsuehchow. At a point about fifty miles west of Hsuehchow, where there was a station and a small Japanese garrison, they learned that there was a break in the track ahead. The engine went on, verified this break in the tracks, and came back. It was then agreed that John and his party would be taken by the engine and one coach up to the break, and be left there to proceed by foot towards their destination. This was done.

After the party got off the coach, Captain Birch and Lt. Ogle went into



## The Life of John Birch

a small village nearby and engaged some coolies to help to carry their baggage. In this village they met a Portuguese priest, in charge of a Canadian mission, who gave them their first confirmation of rumors that Communists were making trouble in the area. Communist guerilla units had entered the village the night before and, besides doing other damage, had seized and carried away the mission's small stock of medical supplies. But it seemed unthinkable to John and his men that, being Americans, they had anything to fear from these Communists, their allies in a war with Japan which had been brought to a victorious close only nine days before. Lt. Ogle has said, "we were feeling pretty good about the war being over"—undoubtedly a minor record-holder in understatements.

When Birch and Ogle went back, with this help they had rounded up, to the break in the railroad tracks, they found there, besides their own crew which had been left behind, a Japanese patrol which had been sent out to repair the line. This patrol supplied the American party with a handcar for its baggage. The party then proceeded a few hundred yards up the track, to another small station where there was a fairly large Japanese garrison. John made arrangements with them for his troupe to spend the night there. The Japanese were not inclined to fraternization, but showed a disciplined courtesy; and after routine explanations, they offered no objection to the Americans proceeding on their journey the next morning.

This was August 25, 1945. The party left the Japanese garrison about nine o'clock in the morning, various members taking turns pushing the handcar

along the tracks. About noon they met up with a force of Communist guerillas, several hundred strong, some of whom were engaged in tearing down telephone wires. The guerillas identified themselves as attached to the 8th Route Army (the main armed body of Communists in China), but were not in any kind of military formation, although they were obviously taking orders from some leader.

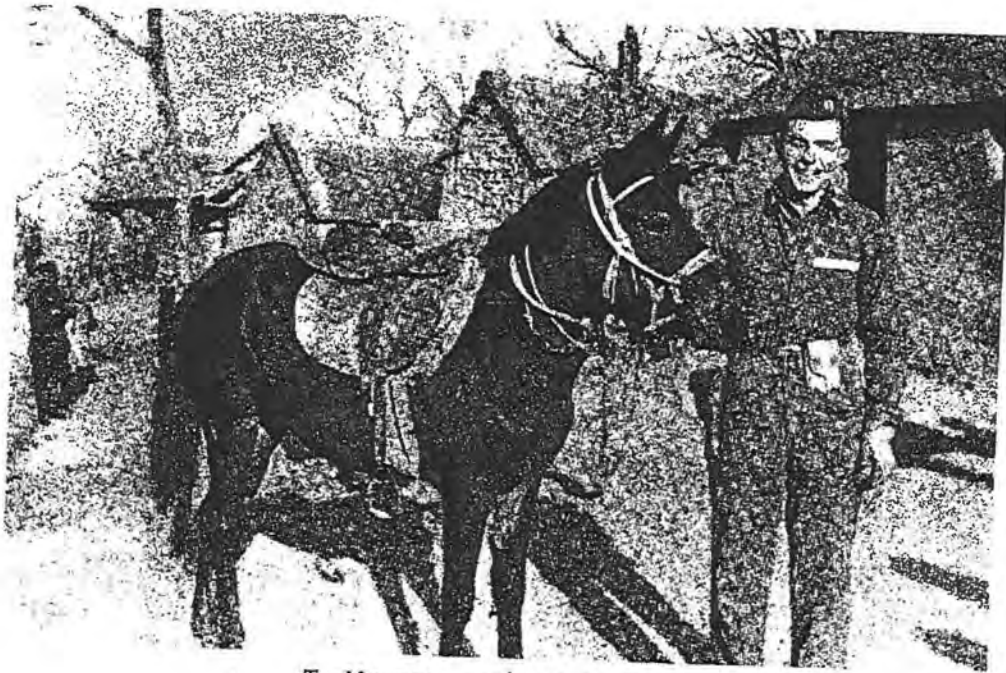
The Communists, after stopping Captain Birch's troupe, also closed in on them from behind. But there were no wild shots, attempts to seize the baggage, nor threats of any kind. John went forward to talk to the man apparently in charge, and then went with him to see the chief commander. In about twenty minutes he came back, told his party that he had made arrangements for them to proceed, and the troupe went forward along the tracks again. As they did so, John told Lt. Ogle and his other subordinates of his conversations with the leaders of the Communist forces.

He had had considerable difficulty in seeing and identifying the officer in charge. (This unwillingness to disclose the source of top authority, in either their civilian or their military organizations, is an attitude so widely adopted by Communists everywhere as to be almost a reflex action with units of this size. The course serves not only to confuse and wear down anybody with whom they may be dealing, but renders any commitments that may be made more obviously non-binding and worthless as soon as they wish to disregard such commitments.) Either this officer or the second in command — John was not sure which — had demanded that the Americans turn over to the Com-



JOHN, TWO YEARS OLD, AT LANDOUR, INDIA, ON HIS FATHER'S SHOULDERS.





THE MONGOLIAN PONY REFERRED TO ON PAGE 15.



CAPTAIN JOHN M. BIRCH, U.S.A.





AT CHANGSHA, 1944

Back row, left to right: Unknown, Sgt. Lassiter, Sgt. Hays, Sgt. Kane, Sgt. Eichenberry, Lt. Lu.  
 Front row, left to right: Unknown, Captain John Birch, Captain S. Su Te, Lt. Duongson.



GENERAL CHENNAULT PINS LEGION OF MERIT ON CAPTAIN BIRCH.





JOHN BIRCH (SECOND FROM LEFT) WITH CHINESE AND AMERICAN COMRADES-IN-ARMS.

中美同仁共同協力爭取了今日的勝利特留影紀念

"VICTORY THROUGH SINO-AMERICAN COOPERATION"

Birch Wood, Anhwei, China. 17 August 1945



Two days after the Japanese surrender and eight days before Captain Birch was murdered by the Communists. This photograph, taken at the "little outpost" mentioned in the text, contains the last known picture of Captain Birch. He is standing on the immediate left of the Chinese officer.





BURIAL OF CAPTAIN BIRCH, WITH FULL MILITARY HONORS, ON A HILLSIDE ON THE OUTSKIRTS OF HSUCHOW.

## The Life of John Birch

allowed them to do, on instructions shouted by Captain Grimes. Then the whole party was led into the village, lined up against a wall, and the hands of each man were tied behind his back. There were two Americans, eight Chinese, and two Koreans now left in the group.

In the meantime no word had come from, or about Captain Birch or Lt. Tung. But in about fifteen minutes, while all members of the party were kept lined up against the wall, were being stripped of their possessions, and were being forcibly restrained from talking to each other or to their captors, two shots were heard. Immediately after the shots it so happened that two American planes, P-51's, flew over the village. The Communists hastily led their captives northward out of the village, about a quarter of a mile, where they were kept for another fifteen minutes while the Communist detachment was apparently waiting for orders. Then the soldiers and their prisoners were marched away, in the direction of the Communist "capital" of Yen-an, which they reached two months later. Eventually, the Americans had their possessions returned to them and were freed. Their deaths were not needed for propaganda purposes, and there was no point in tempting the supineness of the American government too far. The murder of Captain Birch, so widely known and loved all over Nationalist China, was sufficient.

### XIII

#### A HARD WAY TO DIE

WHEN CAPTAIN BIRCH and Lt. Tung, with the two Communists, left the handcar to go into the village, Captain Grimes and Lt. Ogle both insisted that

they also should go along as a safety measure. But John apparently thought it would show more confidence and friendliness if he went without them, and preferred to make the negotiations alone on that basis. His orders, therefore, were for the others to stay with the baggage, as stated above. But Lt. Tung evidently was greatly concerned by what he had overheard of conversations among the Communists where they had last been stopped. As he and John found themselves being given a run around, on entering the village, and as the Communists kept stalling about taking them to the commanding officer or identifying anybody in charge, Lt. Tung frankly warned Captain Birch to turn back as his life was in danger. John's reply, as later quoted verbatim by Lt. Tung was: "It doesn't make much difference what happens to me, but it is of utmost importance that my country learn now whether these people are friend or foe." He got a very clear answer to that question, which could have been of tremendous value to his country — and could have saved tens of thousands of other American boys, as well as literally millions of the Chinese whom he loved. He got it at the cost of an agonizing death. That his sacrifice was so completely in vain is one item of eternal disgrace to an administration which planned it that way.

We know that Captain Birch and Lt. Tung experienced approximately one hour of frustrating obstructionism, because that much time elapsed before the shots were heard. John argued continuously that he was in charge of an authorized mission of the United States Army, which the Communist forces, presumably our allies, should allow to proceed. Finally, in one group, which



## The Life of John Birch

clearly contained one of the higher Communist officers of the locality, and probably the commanding officer himself, the leader ordered John disarmed. John naturally and properly demanded to know by what authority an American officer was being disarmed. As this had no effect, and a soldier moved forward to comply with the order, Lt. Tung intervened. He asked, if Captain Birch were to be disarmed, that he be allowed to do it. But as he was reaching for John's pistol — the only weapon John carried — somebody shouted, "No, shoot him first!" Whether this was the ostensible officer in charge, or whoever really had top authority in the group, or somebody else entirely, Lt. Tung never knew.

Two shots were fired. One caught Lt. Tung in the leg, he was also bayoneted, and he fainted as he was being dragged away. He knew that John was hit by the other bullet, but did not know where. The last thing Lt. Tung remembers was John saying "Wo pu neng tsou la," meaning "I cannot walk any more," when he was ordered to move, and the officer giving an order for them to be brought along anyway. Actually, John also had been shot in the leg; and that he really died of bayonet wounds was later established by the Chinese doctor who performed an autopsy between his two burials. The importance of this lies in the fact that, even if the shots had been fired by some excited soldier acting on his own wild impulse, such extensive bayonetting as John suffered could not have been inflicted without the direct orders or deliberate acquiescence of the officer in charge.

The Communist soldiers dragged the two wounded men, Captain Birch and

Lt. Tung, to the side of an open pit on the edge of the village, and left them there to die, or as already dead. This was between two and three o'clock in the afternoon. Early that evening an old Chinese woman wandered past and said — to somebody, apparently a member of her family — "We had better bury these dead." Lt. Tung was just barely able to speak, and managed to get out: "I am not dead yet, please help me." The woman hurriedly told him to be quiet, as the Communists were still there. When they left, she said, she would come back and help. Later in the evening she did come back with help. They carried Lt. Tung to a shelter, and gave him what first aid they could.

The next morning a group of Japanese who came through the village recognized Lt. Tung as a member of the American party that had stayed with their detachment two nights before. They rushed him to a first aid station, and wired Hsuehchow, giving all the information they had. Lt. Tung was then moved to a hospital in Hsuehchow, and given the best treatment available in the command. Later he was transferred to the American Army Hospital in Chungking, for many months. Despite the loss of one eye and one leg his life was saved, and much of this account of the events of August 25 is taken verbatim from his testimony to various people.

When the old and kind Chinese woman came back with help late that evening, John Birch was already dead. Whether he had been dead when she first came near the bodies, or even when first left by the Communist soldiers, there is no way of knowing. Since he was beyond any help, he was buried

## The Life of John Birch

near where he was found, by some Chinese farmers.

As is almost always true in China, word of the projected trip of the American mission had preceded them to Hsuehchow, and the Chinese Nationalist forces there had been expecting the party for several days. When news of what had happened reached Hsuehchow they immediately sent Col. Mah and some troops to Huang-Ko to question the local people. The farmers and townspeople took Col. Mah to Captain Birch's temporary grave, and Col. Mah's forces brought the body back to Hsuehchow.

The day they got back Lt. Miller, an American officer of the Air Ground Aid Service who had known John in the field, also arrived. He took charge of the funeral, and Captain Birch was buried with full military honors. His body was wrapped in white silk and placed in a Chinese coffin. Missionaries and Chinese pastors of all the Christian churches in Hsuehchow took part in the ceremony. The high ranking officers of both the Chinese and Japanese forces attended, and a guard of honor of twenty Chinese and twenty Japanese soldiers marched with the procession. The whole city was put in mourning.

John Birch was buried in a raised mausoleum, on a hillside on the outskirts of Hsuehchow, overlooking the city. The site had been selected by Lt. Miller. General Ho, one of the two ranking Chinese officers present at the burial, raised a stone there to John's memory, with the inscription: "He died for righteousness." General Ho and General Tong, the other ranking officer of the area, told an official American investigator a little later that not only did they feel as if each had lost a close

personal friend, but that they knew all China and the Chinese people had lost a good friend and a great supporter. This investigator wrote that the sincerity of their feeling was unmistakable. And at last report, many years ago — before Chinese Communist conquest of the area made all reports impossible — the burial place, with the body of another 14th Air Force man, Flight Officer Samuel Evans, in a vault next to that of John Birch, had been made into a small park and was being beautifully cared for by the Chinese people of Hsuehchow.

A Rupert Brooke might hopefully write that here was one small plateau on a hill in China which would remain forever American. Since desecration of the grave of such an American and such a symbol of America's great friendship for the Chinese people would be the most natural thing in the world for the Chinese Communists, that poetic hope is forlorn and unjustified. A more fitting epitaph from the poets, for this martyred hero who died so young, is the one already applied to him by Adeline Gray, a former instructor at Nankai University in China, who knew him well. She ended her own brief tribute to John Birch with these lines by Thomas Mordaunt, made famous by Sir Walter Scott:

"One crowded hour of glorious life  
Is worth an age without a name."

### XIV

#### THE HUSH, HUSH TREATMENT

CONTRARY to the impression perhaps occasionally created by the enthusiasm of this biographer, John Birch did not win China's war and our war with Japan, on the mainland of Asia, single-



## The Life of John Birch

handed. Although outstanding, by almost every standard of appraisal, he was still just one American soldier, with only the rank of captain at the end. Why was his story kept so carefully and completely from the American people?

That there was deliberate suppression of the news there can be no doubt. The only inkling of the event to reach America was that which seeped through from private sources. Constantine Brown, in his column of November 15, 1945, in the *Washington Star*, stated: "Long despatches are reaching Washington from Chungking and other tender spots in China. They are all marked top secret, although they deal with what is happening to the American soldiers and sailors in that area. None has yet been officially informed about the murder of Captain John Birch by the Chinese Communists." On November 16, 1945, Adeline Gray, who was herself a newspaper woman as well as a former instructor at Nankai, wrote John's parents that "had not the truth been suppressed, Captain Birch's death would have headlined every newspaper in the United States." And she later informed Mr. W. T. Anderson, Editor of the Macon Telegraph in John's home town, that "the murder was kept a 'hush, hush' affair, and no China correspondents were able to send out the story."

Again, there can be no doubt as to the deliberate misrepresentations by the War Department to John Birch's parents, concerning the cause and manner of his death; nor any doubt as to further and continued deliberate measures to block every effort of his parents to learn the truth. The essential accuracy of the account I have given of Captain Birch's death is beyond ques-

tion. The impact of his personality and character had been so great that several of those who had known him in China set out to write books about his life. Events moved so rapidly that not one of them ever finished the job, but I have been the heir to much of the results of their labors. My information was gathered through the efforts of many people — not including myself — over many years, and verified at many points by the agreement of independent reports from different informants who didn't even know of each other's statements. And at least as early as September 20, 1945, the War Department's own internal information was headed:

Birch, John M.—Serial No. AC,  
0-889028

Killed by Chinese Communists on the  
Lunghai Railroad enroute to Hsuehchow,  
China, on August 25, 1945.

But the War Department still persisted in its official report that Captain Birch had been killed by a stray bullet, without any mention of the Chinese Communists; and still found that it had "lost" or "misplaced" the addresses of officers who might be able to tell Mr. and Mrs. Birch the truth in or through Washington. It became obvious in time that the various underlings the Birches met were obeying orders or following a policy from above, the ultimate source of which these subordinates themselves probably did not know. The purposes of that policy, it became clear then, and is more unmistakably clear today, was to keep the fact that an American officer had been deliberately murdered by Chinese Communists from the American people.

Of course the truth was known all

## The Life of John Birch

over China. It was to the advantage of the Communists to have their contempt for Americans and their lack of fear of any American reprisals widely known. They were profuse in their belated "official" apologies and explanations, for even these were so fantastic as to cause Americans to lose face by receiving them. Mao Tse-tung himself, for instance, solemnly offered the ridiculous assertion that the Communist troops had believed Captain Birch and the other Americans in his party were *Japanese in disguise*. One tricky corollary suggestion, flowing from this insolent tongue-in-cheek "apology," to be implanted in the minds of all who might hear or read of it, was that of course the Americans would agree there would be nothing to be upset about if it had been a Japanese who had been killed — even though we had signed an armistice with Japan ten days before the event!

We have no way of knowing from how high a source came the order to kill John Birch. It may even be that, contrary to the fears of Lt. Tung, no such order preceded Captain Birch to his last meeting with the Communists, and that the actual murder, by shot and bayonet, was the direct responsibility of only the detachment at Huang-Ko and of its commanding officer. But the resolution of this point would make little difference. For it is clear that the specific act was in accord with general policy, established at the top and well understood throughout the Communist forces.

Until ten days before then the Chinese Communists had theoretically and supposedly been our allies, in our war against another nation. What our relationship toward them was to be now

had become an entirely new and open question. The first tangible answer, on the part of the Communists themselves, as to what their attitude was, and what they intended the relationship to be, was given in the continuous pattern of murder, capture, and torture of uniformed Americans in China which began immediately. The deliberate and unjustified killing of John Birch, a captain in the American army on an official mission for our government, was — whether so intended or not — the first overt act that established this pattern. It is clear that the Communists, high and low, recognized John Birch as standing for America, for Christianity, and as the very embodiment of those qualities and forces which were in their way. Whether "high" Communists specifically designated him as an early victim matters little. For *some* Communists, high or low, unquestionably implementing the known attitude and desires of top leadership, liquidated this symbol of opposition and provided this shining example of their power to liquidate others who might oppose them.

As for punishing the individuals who committed the murder, there was never any slightest evidence offered of any such punishment having been effected — or intended. To have shown even any serious consideration of meting out punishment to the guilty parties would have weakened the propaganda value of the murder. Far from being punished, for all we know, or insisted on knowing, the perpetrators of the deed may have been given medals of honor. General Chennault has stated: "If I had still been in China, there would have been a squadron of B-25's blasting that Communist position with no fur-



## The Life of John Birch

ther questions asked." This would have been brutal retaliation. But it is and was absolutely the only kind of language for which the Communist murderers have the slightest respect; the only language that would have stopped them in their tracks and have prevented the *literally* millions of murders (about fourteen million according to authoritative estimates) that they have perpetrated since. And it was because Chennault understood this that he had been maneuvered out of the picture.

And so the net result was this tableau. The Chinese Communists murder in cold blood, without the slightest excuse, one of our most heroic officers; one of the best known and most widely loved by the Chinese people; and one of those most highly esteemed by Chiang Kai-shek's Nationalist Government — which even passed a decree of the Executive Yuan in his honor after his death. The Communists themselves don't care how widely it's known in Asia; they even keep the murdered man's companions, also Americans in the uniform of the American Army, as prisoners for several months, apparently to be sure that there can be no misunderstanding of their contemptuous attitude. But *we* go to extreme lengths to hush the whole thing up, for fear that it might "increase the instability in our relations with the Chinese Communists." As for an official demand from Washington that the murderers be punished, or be turned over to us for trial, or even that our captive soldiers be released, that couldn't be dreamed of — it might *really* annoy the Communists. The whole thing would be incredible, were it not so exactly of a piece with so many other acts and attitudes in our relations with these same

Communists during this same period.

Why? The explanation becomes clear and convincing only when seen as just one manifestation of a broad purpose and powerful force sweeping almost all before it. The fourth of our five questions requires that our title be mentally amended to read: *The Life and Times of John Birch*. For it really hangs on the Times. To see this question, and its answer, in proper and revealing perspective, we have to look at least briefly at some related developments on the most sordid scene of American history.

### XV

#### A GLANCE AT THE TIMES

JOHN BIRCH died on August 25, 1945. Keeping that fixed point in mind as a central date, let's glance at what else was happening in and to America—a few of the things—within about two years on either side, or thus during about a five-year period altogether. It's not a pleasant task. For although every separate item to which we call attention on this scene has already been publicized many times, putting them together in one montage makes all of the pieces more shocking through their obvious relatedness to each other.

It was during these years that Lauchlin Currie sat in the White House as a confidential assistant to the President of the United States. Currie, a naturalized alien, has since been identified under oath as a Communist espionage agent. He denied this under oath, and then fled the country. That he consistently labored and schemed on behalf of Communists and Communist purposes is beyond question. And Currie had as *his* special assistant another alien, Michael Greenberg, a trained

## The Life of John Birch

Communist of long standing. Greenberg, who did not even attempt to get naturalization papers, worked with Currie for several years at the very center of American policy-making, especially on the Far East; and used White House stationery—as did Currie—to throw his weight around whenever it served his purpose.

It was during these years that another Communist, Harry Dexter White, prepared and put over the Morgenthau Plan for the savage destruction of Germany; successfully promoted our gift to Russia of our actual plates for printing occupation currency which we had to redeem; held many high places in our government where important day-to-day decisions were made, including at last the directorship of the International Monetary Fund; and—among his minor achievements—personally selected more than fifty of the appointees to positions of influence in our European occupation forces.

It was during these years that Harry Hopkins, the most intimate associate President Roosevelt had, used every ounce of his inside power and position, when necessary, to maintain a continuous secret shipment to Russia of all kinds of materials needed for an atomic bomb. This included 1465 pounds of uranium chemicals, most of which Hopkins helped the Russians to obtain from Canadian sources, and transship secretly through this country, when there were not one thousand pounds yet available for our own use in the whole United States.

But materials for experimentation and actual production of the bomb were not enough. Within this period Allan Nunn May and Klaus Fuchs and other spies turned over to their Communist

masters all of our atomic secrets. And when Igor Gouzenko exposed to the Canadian authorities some startling glimpses of the incredible Soviet espionage activities on this continent, and McKenzie King went dutifully to Washington to alert our government, he was pooh-poohed into an embarrassed silence.

Within this period, in addition to the fantastic flow of supplies by air through Great Falls, Montana, we shipped eleven billion dollars worth of war matériel to Russia through the Red Sea route alone. But some sinister influences within the top echelon of our military hierarchy were powerful enough and clever enough to see that not even adequate ammunition reached either our forces or Chiang Kai-shek's forces in China. Even General Stilwell bitterly complained, "Bullets! My God, all we ask for is just bullets for our guns." (These same sinister forces were able to maintain this continued shortage of ammunition, even for our own troops, or for any troops in Asia that might use it against the Chinese Communists, right up to the time of General Van Fleet's complaint in the Korean War.) And, as we have seen, one of John Birch's superior officers explained that one reason John was so effective in the field was that he was able to repair radios and keep them going when nobody else could; when, if just a tube got broken, it was all this officer's life was worth to get another tube.

During this time Franklin D. Roosevelt, President of the United States, was browbeating Churchill, deluding Chiang Kai-shek, deliberately lying to Mikolajczyk, hoodwinking Congress, frequently deceiving even members of



## The Life of John Birch

his own cabinet, and making dupes of the American people, all on behalf of Stalin. Acting under the influence of Lauchlin Currie, Harry Hopkins, Alger Hiss, David Niles, his own vanity and an impulsive regard for his tragic "hunches," he gave Manchuria to the Communists, betrayed Poland into Soviet hands, and double-crossed fifty million European friends, who had fought with us faithfully against one tyranny, into the clutches of another one far worse. These are hard things to have to say about a president of our country. But such plain facts, completely proved, are both material and inescapably relevant to the theme of this biography.

(Also, the time has certainly come to stop pussyfooting around with ambiguous language about important truths of our recent history. It is not fun to point a finger at anybody. But when the evidence is beyond question, it's imperative now that we do point fingers at those who—whatever their misguided purposes or mistaken reasons—have helped to build up the power of our Soviet enemy in the past, are doing so at present, or seem clearly likely to do so in the future. In this particular case it is even more important that the facts be stated clearly, for the evidence is very strong that Franklin Roosevelt himself, in the final weeks before his death, came to realize what a dupe he had been, and what a danger he had created for his own country and other nations, by trying to satisfy Stalin's appetite at any cost, even of honor itself. It has taken us nearly ten years to catch up with what Roosevelt already probably knew, or at least surmised, on his deathbed. There is a procession of Soviet satellite states that now includes

Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania, Albania, Bulgaria, Hungary, Roumania, Poland, Yugoslavia Czechoslovakia, East Germany, China, North Korea, Tibet, and Guatemala. Already on the shaky edge of being Soviet controlled are Italy, France, Iran, and two more of our southern neighbors in this hemisphere. If we ourselves, in due course, are not to become one in the same procession, we had better stop describing pitch black as off-color gray, or letting the Communists and their dupes and allies buffalo us into a futile silence about the "by-gones" of past administrations.)

It was during this very year, of 1945, that there came into the presidency of the United States a man, Harry Truman, who had been selected for the job primarily through the influence of Sidney Hillman and of associates whom we now know to have been Communists. He had been first notified of his selection as the vice-presidential nominee, at a time when everybody except the American people knew Roosevelt was a dying man, by Sidney Hillman; at a breakfast-for-two arranged for that purpose. Properly to appraise the far-reaching effect of that development, it is necessary to remember how justifiably Mr. Truman boasts of extreme loyalty to his friends, without the slightest concern as to the character, background, or record of those friends. Truly and tragically, if Mr. Truman had literally taken orders from these original sponsors, and if they had in turn taken specific orders from Moscow, he could have done little more than he did anyway to block exposure of the Communists and their treasonous activities in our public life.

There are apologists for Harry Truman who try to distract attention from

## The Life of John Birch

the great help his administration gave to the world-wide progress of Moscow-controlled Communism, by pointing to various offensives against Communist aggression he is supposed to have initiated. This is a biography of a young American hero, martyred by the Communists, not a historical survey of America's seven years under Truman. We cannot stop here to analyze the fallacious disclaimers of Communist influence during those seven years. But since the atmosphere of the period during which John Birch fought and died is very much a part of his story, it is worth while pausing long enough to scrutinize at least one of the arguments that Truman opposed Communist purposes whenever circumstances forced him to a clear-cut decision. Let's look at the chief exhibit of these Truman supporters, the decision to fight back in Korea.

The best way we can do this is to list certain completely established facts, and let the reader form his own conclusions. First, for several months before the North Koreans crossed the 38th Parallel, in June, 1950, we put ourselves and the South Koreans in the worst possible position to defend the bottom half of the peninsula against that attack. We announced to the world that South Korea was beyond our perimeter of defense, and visibly followed Owen Lattimore's advice to let all of Korea fall to the Communists "without making it look like we had pushed it." With the Russians known to be organizing and training a comparatively huge army of North Korean Communists, we restricted all armed forces of the South Koreans to a police unit of some fifteen thousand men. Despite money actually appropriated by Con-

gress for the purpose, the administration somehow found ways to stall and delay so that no military equipment — not even sufficient ammunition — was sent to help the South Koreans prepare any defense. And we ostentatiously withdrew almost all of our armed forces from that part of Korea supposedly under our influence, without the slightest suggestion, much less insistence, that the Russians do the same with their forces in the north.

Then we deliberately ignored the most obvious evidences, the most convincingly detailed intelligence reports, of Communist intentions. In 1947 the Wedemeyer Report warned of what was going to happen in Korea — of exactly what did happen in 1950. Between June, 1949 and June, 1950 our army general headquarters agency in Korea sent to Washington 1195 consecutive warning reports, an average of three a day, as to what was taking place just above the 38th Parallel. The North Korean build-up, and its purport, were both unmistakable. Yet, when the Communists did plunge across the line and invade South Korea, the administration claimed to be taken entirely by surprise. Actually, the only interested parties who were surprised, or at least who had any right to be surprised, were the American people.

Second, and more significant, was the supposed accident by which we got into this "police action." The United States did not declare war on Russia, or the Chinese Communists, or North Korea. *The United Nations* declared that Communist aggression in South Korea must be resisted, which was eventually translated into meaning that the United States should send the men,



## The Life of John Birch

matériel, and money to maintain well over ninety per cent of this United Nations resistance. But the United Nations could not take any such action except through the Security Council, in which each nation had one vote—and any one of five nations had a complete veto power over any such action. Communist Russia was, of course, a member of the Security Council, and had this veto power. How did it happen, if the Kremlin did not actually want us to be fighting its Communist stooges in Korea, that Russia did not veto the decision? It had never hesitated to use this veto before, for the most visibly selfish purposes. To the Communist masters of slippery strategy, this problem was simplicity itself. A few months before the invasion of South Korea, the Russian member of the Security Council got himself ostensibly and noisily into an angry huff, over some ridiculously flimsy excuse, and stalked angrily out of the proceedings. He conveniently "kept his mad on" until after the vote had been taken to resist in South Korea. Then, as soon as barely enough time had elapsed to keep the trick from being too obvious, he got unruffled and returned to his seat in the Council. From then on the Russian Communists were very much a part of the United Nations higher command, directing this war against themselves in Korea, and with individual Russian Communists placed in positions of considerable importance in the actual conduct of operations.

Now if there is any one thing the conferences, diplomatic maneuverings, and United Nations proceedings have taught us, over the past nine years, it is that the top agents of the Kremlin do not let their emotions interfere with

their aims, or get piqued except by careful design for a definite purpose, or let any decision go against them by oversight or default. If our Army headquarters in Korea knew that the North Korean agents of the Kremlin were going to overrun South Korea—and they were shouting it to Washington at the top of their lungs—it is certain that Moscow's agent in the United Nations knew it. And to assume that he chose just that time, and that time only, to stay out of the Security Council, on an excuse that had been carefully contrived and was sheer poppycock, for any real reason except that Stalin wanted us to commit our armed forces to action in Korea, is to be naive to the point of absurdity.

Third, and most significant of all, we never did fight this war to win it, or allow our generals to do so. MacArthur, Van Fleet, Lt. General Almond, almost every general of importance who was in the operation, has stated unequivocally that on several different occasions, and despite the persistent hampering shortage of ammunition, we could have completely routed the enemy and won an overwhelming victory; and that on each occasion our forces were held back from doing so on specific orders from Washington. MacArthur, who wanted to win a war he was fighting or know how come, and who would have had enough prestige to force the issue, was removed from his command.

The Korean "police action" enabled the Communists to get a lot of experience in fighting American armed forces; to try out their planes and guns and other equipment in actual combat and familiarize themselves with ours; to use the peninsula as a rehearsal

## The Life of John Birch

ground for the greater conflict whenever it might come. It got the American people accustomed to having their sons fight under the command and direction of the United Nations, with their objectives being determined by political manipulation and deals among the many nations, all voting with equal power, in the Security Council. It showed all Asia what devastation and misery would be wreaked on any country like South Korea that dared oppose the Communists and depend on the United States for help. It allowed a lot of Communist agents and sympathizers in America to strengthen their hands by going through the motions of a phony opposition to Communism. It gave the Communists a chance to convince millions of Asiatics—who could not know that we were fighting this war with both hands tied behind our backs—that in a military struggle the United States couldn't even beat the Chinese Communists. It enhanced the prestige and strengthened the hands of the Chinese Communists immensely. It added billions of dollars to the taxation load and the public debt of the American people, and pushed us that much further along the Marxian road of spending ourselves into bankruptcy. It enabled the Communists, by lying propaganda, to convince half the world that we had resorted to germ warfare, so that the reaction to their using it when the time comes will not be so disturbing to neutrals or even their own satellites who might still have any conscience left. It accomplished many other objectives of the Kremlin. And it did so without the slightest danger of the Communists suffering any harmful results other than the loss of a few hundred thou-

sand lives, which meant no more to them than the lives of so many insects. For Stalin, in a moment of either rare boastfulness or of carefully calculated design, had convincingly implied to the Czech diplomat, Arnhost Heidrich, in 1947, that he had controlling influence inside the American Government. This influence, now immensely increased through the machinery of the United Nations, was sufficient to bring the war to a close at any time the Communists deemed a phony truce desirable.

Whatever else the Korean action may have been, its appraisal as an effort on the part of the Truman administration to oppose the real interests and purposes of Moscow requires a gullibility, and a blindness to the plain facts, that is almost beyond comprehension. As to most of the other moves made by Mr. Truman to thwart Communist aims, a careful analysis will reveal equally fatal flaws in the arguments of his apologists. Many of the arguments will be about on a par with the one that, after the FBI had insistently informed him that Harry Dexter White was a Communist spy, he promoted White to a more influential position in order to keep an eye on him.

### XVI

#### MORE ABOUT THE ATMOSPHERE

BUT LET'S return to our main theme. It was also during this same year of 1945, in fact during the very autumn of John Birch's death, that Patrick Hurley resigned as our Ambassador to China. Finding our embassy in Chungking completely dominated, and all of his efforts at helping Chiang Kai-shek hamstrung by Communist traitors and pro-Communist sympathizers among



## The Life of John Birch

the "career men" in our State Department, he came home and let out a blast that should have rocked the country. But the Communists and their dupes and allies were too high up in our government and too firmly in control. They were able to smother Hurley's on-the-spot report of our betrayal of China as effectively as they were the on-the-spot report of Ambassador Lane, of our betrayal of Poland, two years later.

(It is completely certain that a huge majority of our "career men" and all other employees of the State Department, past and present, have been and are completely loyal and patriotic American citizens. It is equally certain that the statements in the above paragraph are true, and that our course in Chungking and in post-war China generally was guided by a comparatively few traitors and their misguided dupes, who got themselves into sufficiently strategic positions to exercise enormous influence. But instead of worrying about the bad smell given the whole Department by traitors, and helping to have these traitors exposed and thrown out, the career men and other employees and alumni of the State Department have continuously "got their backs up" at every charge of treason, no matter from what source—Ambassador Hurley, Ambassador Arthur Bliss Lane, Ambassador Hugh Gibson, just for instance — nor how convincingly documented. And this childish blindness and resentment, on the part of people who should know better, has been of infinite help to the traitors themselves in enabling them to keep on having their disastrous way in American Foreign Policy.)

It was during these years that George

Catlett Marshall three times saved the Chinese Communist forces from probable annihilation by forcing three separate truces on Chiang Kai-shek; that he placed an embargo on the sale to the Chinese Nationalists of any military supplies, even bullets for their guns, at the very time when the Russians were arming the Chinese Communists out of the Japanese stockpiles seized in Manchuria—and boasted that he had disarmed thirty-nine anti-Communist divisions with a stroke of his pen; that he used his full influence to build the prestige of the Chinese Communists by repeatedly insisting—as spokesman for the United States—that Chiang accept and trust these murderers as partners in the government of China.

These were the years when the greatest American historian, Charles A. Beard, was disgracefully smeared into innocuous ineffectiveness, simply because he dared tell the carefully documented truth about what had been, and still was, taking place. When at least one editor of our official Army publication, "Stars and Stripes," in the Pacific Area, was a Communist agent. When a man born in Manchuria, educated in Soviet schools in Siberia, now using an assumed name, was caught with more than two hundred top-secret documents from Naval Intelligence and the State Department and other departments in his rooms—and was let off without even a fine. And when maps, blueprints, and miscellaneous documents of every kind, revealing in infinite detail every statistical, geographical, and physical fact of American life and power, went through Great Falls in a steady stream to Moscow, fifty black suitcases full at a time, under the cloak of diplomatic immunity.

## The Life of John Birch

These were the years when the magazine *Amerasia* was peddling the Communist falsehoods of T. A. Bisson and others like him as objective analyses. When the Institute of Pacific Relations, completely controlled and dominated by pro-Communists, was not only spewing its own malicious propaganda far and wide, but was serving as a tremendously effective employment agency for placing Communists and Communist sympathizers in our State Department. When UNRRA began channeling large shares of its huge funds through Communist agents in China, in Poland, and elsewhere. When we insisted that the supervision of our flow of Lend-Lease goods to Russia through the Middle East be handled by the very Communist agents who were stirring up hatred of the "American exploiters"; and when we ourselves thus supported the foundation of that Tudeh party in Iran which has made so much trouble for us—and for Iran—ever since.

It was during these years that the Office of War Information, under Elmer Davis as Director, became a veritable hotbed of Communists and Communist sympathizers. There was Lionel Canagata, calling himself Canada Lee, who became a radio narrator for OWI. There was Giuseppe Facci, who devoted most of his time to a Communist-front organization which was branded subversive by Attorney General Biddle. He was senior foreign-language information advisor for OWI. There was Raymond Juebzke, or Nicholas K. Ray, or whatever his real name was, who had actually been discharged from WPA, even in those easy-going days, for Communist activity. But this didn't deter Mr. Davis from making him one

of the top press and radio program directors. There was David Stone Martin, an active Communist who solicited party memberships in his own home. He and his wife were both on the OWI staff. There was Rose Hanna, who had worked in Moscow, and was an active member of organizations officially cited by government agencies as subversive. *She was made chief researcher in charge of OWI's files on subversives!* There was Robin Kinkead, who would have been able to operate practically a whole Communist cell out of members of his own family. His wife, his mother, and his father were all active members of the Communist party. Mr. Kinkead's job was to help prepare OWI scripts. There was Paul Keri, murderer, and lieutenant of Bela Kun. *He was made the OWI's Hungarian expert.* There was Pirooska Halsz, who had also been active in the Bela Kun terror. She was made a chief translator. There was Lazar Herrman, now calling himself Leo Lania, who had edited the Austrian Communist newspaper, *Red Flag*; and John Terebessy, known to have been a former Communist agent in the Balkans. They were both employed in the press and radio division. There were Chew Sih Hong and Dr. Kung Chuan Chi, whom Owen Lattimore (Mr. Davis' Pacific Area Director of OWI) insisted, over the protest of an alert legal advisor, that he wanted kept in the OWI even if they were Communists. There were Julia Bazer, later a Fifth Amendment case, and Adam Tarn, who has since voluntarily become a citizen of Communist-governed Poland. There were Herz, and Arksy, and Balinska, three prominent employees of the Polish branch of OWI, who later showed up



## The Life of John Birch

in the service of the Lublin Gang — Stalin's stooge government in Poland. There was Annabelle Bucar who, after the war, went to Moscow, renounced her American citizenship, and began writing scurrilous attacks on Americans. There were dozens and dozens more, of practically all nationalities. There were, as James Burnham has remarked, so many fellow travelers and "leftists" that the identifiable Communists, although plentiful, were almost invisible behind them. And of course, in the very top bracket, controlling the whole official flow of information about China to the United States and about the United States to China, was Owen Lattimore himself — with cooperation available, when needed, from his good friend Joseph Barnes, Deputy Director of OWI for the Atlantic Area.

During the years under discussion this crew and the whole OWI, acting under the cloak of war-time secrecy and urgency, did almost anything it wished. A fair example of these activities was the beaming to China of its broadcast of articles published in *Amerasia*, and its circulation in China of the articles most critical of China that were published in this Communist periodical; or its broadcasts to Poland, which were labeled by the wartime Polish ambassador to the United States as straight pro-Soviet propaganda.

It was during these years that the Office of Strategic Services, under Colonel (now Major General) William J. Donovan, so frequently threw the weight of American supplies, arms, money, and prestige behind the Communist terrorist organizations of Europe and Asia. Almost typical of the selections by Colonel Donovan of high-level personnel for this agency were

the cases of Leonard Mins, Milton Wolff, and George Wuchinick. Mins, member of a well-known Communist family, himself trained in Moscow and in Communist-operated revolutionary schools elsewhere, a former officer in the Abraham Lincoln Brigade which had been organized by the Soviet secret police to promote Communist terror in the so-called Spanish Civil War—this man was given the job of gathering and analyzing information on the Soviet Union for the OSS. Wolff had been a commanding officer of the Abraham Lincoln Brigade when it had been recruiting gullible young American idealists to fight in the Communist butcher unit without letting them know it was a Soviet police instrument. When some of these young American dupes found out the truth in Spain, and rebelled against the Communist leadership, they were summarily executed. Wolff has since refused to state under oath whether or not he took part in these executions of American boys. But as a member of OSS he served as one of the most influential and trusted representatives of the American government in Italy during the war years. Wuchinick, also a graduate of the Abraham Lincoln Brigade, found the opportunity as a member of the OSS to work closely with Tito in Yugoslavia and with the Communists in China.

Then there was Maurice Halperin, who has been finally dropped in recent months, by a great and patient American university, for his preposterous juggling of the Fifth Amendment. He was chief of the Latin American Division of OSS. And there was Duncan Lee. Mr. Lee has denied under oath (in 1948) that he ever gave confidential information about the OSS to Commu-

## The Life of John Birch

nists or even knew that Elizabeth Bentley was a Communist. Miss Bentley has testified under oath that Duncan Lee had been a Communist party member who actually paid his party dues to her, and had been her most valuable source of secret information in the OSS. She stated substantially the same thing in her book, *Out of Bondage*. And J. Edgar Hoover, head of the FBI, has officially stated: "All information furnished by Miss Bentley, which was susceptible to check, has proved correct. She has been subject to the most searching of cross examinations, her testimony has been evaluated by juries and reviewed by the courts and has been found to be accurate." The reader will have to do his own guessing about the loyalty of Mr. Lee, and where it lay. But about one thing he doesn't have to guess, and that is the extremely important part played by Lee in the OSS organization. For Duncan Lee came directly out of Colonel Donovan's own law office, and was made his special and confidential assistant in managing the world-wide operations of the Office of Strategic Services.

There was David Zablodowsky, an admitted worker in the Communist underground. There were Leo M. Drozdoff, Jack Sargeant Harris, J. Julius Joseph, Irving Fajans, Paul V. Martineau, Carl Aldo Marzani, Philip O. Keeney, Irving Goldman, Helen B. Tenney, and others who all later became Fifth Amendment Pleaders. They all had jobs, and most of them important jobs, in this extremely sensitive and important agency. And serving as head of the China section of Research and Analysis in this organization was Professor John K. Fairbank — who says he isn't a Communist. Since he has

been identified under oath as a Communist, but has denied under oath that he was, we shall have to let the matter rest there. But in view of his past actions and writings, he certainly ought to do, so far as the Kremlin is concerned, until a Communist comes along.

It was during these years that Communists and close fellow travelers infiltrated every important government agency; and pushed, pulled, and edged each other to very near the top in many of them. It would be easy to fill several pages with names of government employees who have since been shown to have put the welfare of Communist Russia above the welfare of their own country. (In fact, James Burnham has done so, in his remarkably good book, *The Web of Subversion*.) And when the war came to an end, in 1945, and so many of the wartime agencies were gradually liquidated, there was a great migration of these Communists and Communist sympathizers to the old-line agencies, such as the State Department, many of which—especially the State Department—were already badly infiltrated.

And finally, it was during these years that Dean Acheson climbed steadily to the top of our State Department, pushing out anti-Communists right and left as he climbed. In their place he brought in, and so surrounded himself with, Communists and Communist sympathizers, that on June 10, 1947 a Senate Appropriations Subcommittee addressed this then confidential memorandum (from which most names have been deleted, and which has already been published many times before) to the then Secretary of State, George Marshall:



## The Life of John Birch

CONFIDENTIAL

June 10, 1947

FROM: SENATE APPROPRIATIONS COMMITTEE  
TO: SECRETARY OF STATE,  
GEORGE C. MARSHALL

It becomes necessary due to the gravity of the situation to call your attention to a condition that developed and still flourishes in the State Department under the administration of Dean Acheson.

It is evident that there is a deliberate, calculated program being carried out not only to protect Communist personnel in high places, but to reduce security and intelligence protection to a nullity.

Regarding the much-publicized MARZANI case, the evidence brought out at his trial was well known to State Department officers, who ignored it and refused to act for a full year.

MARZANI and several other Department officials, with full knowledge of the State Department, and with Government time and money, promoted a scheme called PRESENTATIONS, INC., which contracted with a Communist dominated organization to disseminate propaganda.

Security objections to these and other even more dangerous developments were rebuffed by high administration officials; and there followed the substitution of unqualified men for these competent, highly respected personnel who theretofore held the intelligence and security assignments in the Department. The new chief of controls is a man utterly devoid of

background and experience for the job, who is and at the time of his appointment was known to those who appointed him to be, a cousin and close associate of a suspected Soviet espionage agent. The next development was the refusal of the FBI, G-2, ONI and other federal investigative agencies to continue the whole hearted cooperation they had for years extended to the State Department.

On file in the Department is a copy of a preliminary report of the FBI on Soviet espionage activities in the United States, which involves a large number of State Department employees, some in high official positions. This report has been challenged and ignored by those charged with the responsibility of administering the Department with the apparent tacit approval of Mr. Acheson. Should this case break before the State Department acts, it will be a national disgrace.

Voluminous files are on hand in the Department proving the connection of the State Department employees and officials with this Soviet espionage ring. Despite this, only two persons, one of whom is MARZANI, were released under the McCarran rider because of their subversive activity.

- |          |          |
|----------|----------|
| 1. _____ | 6. _____ |
| 2. _____ | 7. _____ |
| 3. _____ | 8. _____ |
| 4. _____ | 9. _____ |
| 5. _____ |          |

are only a few of the hundreds now employed in varying capacities who are protected and allowed to remain despite the fact that their presence is an obvious hazard to national secu-

## The Life of John Birch

city. There is also the extensive employment in highly classified positions of admitted homosexuals, who are historically known to be security risks.

The War and Navy Departments have been thwarted for a year in their efforts to carry out the German Scientist program. They are blocked by one man in the State Department, a protege of Acheson named —, who is also the chief instrument in the subverting of the over-all security program.

This deplorable condition runs all the way up and down the line. Assistant Secretary — also surrounded himself with men like — and with — who has a notorious international reputation. The network also extends into the office of Assistant Secretary —.

### SUBCOMMITTEE OF SENATE APPROPRIATIONS COMMITTEE

And these were the years when a communication of such a nature, from such a source, brought absolutely no action, interest, nor even visible attention. The Communists, their dupes, and allies had been able to rise so high in our government, to become so influential, that they could brush off charges like this without even missing a stroke in their subversive activities.

## XVII

### How Did It Come About?

TIME AND room for a more complete delineation of the web of subversion would remove any surprise on the part of a reader that the story of John Birch had been carefully suppressed. The interlocking cooperation by Communists

and their dupes and allies, to slant all efforts, actions, and information towards helping the Communist cause, and to eliminate or play down every item of unfavorable truth, was so widespread, so powerful, and so skillfully conducted behind the scenes, that getting the life and death of John Birch ignored was merely a minor chore. It was at this very time that this same conspiratorial group succeeded in convincing the American people, or enough of us to serve their needs, that Mao Tse-tung, Chou En-lai, and the other murdering tyrants in this particular advance troop of the Kremlin, were agrarian reformers and really good democrats at heart. And it was within the period we are talking about that they were powerful enough, and extended their fingers of control high enough in our government, to have the official report of General Wedemeyer on the true China situation completely suppressed, by the recommendation of George Catlett Marshall and the specific agreement of Harry Truman. In the midst of such epic achievements the little matter of keeping Captain Birch's murder out of the news was so easy and natural as almost to be automatic.

The real question then, even in a biography of John Birch, and in approaching all surrounding matters as the setting in which his purposeful life and tragic death occurred, is this: How did such a conspiratorial group of Communists, dupes, and allies ever get such tremendous direct power and far-reaching indirect influence in our government and throughout our nation?

To give the complete answer to that question we should have to go back to the days in the 1930's when it was fashionable for almost everybody in



## The Life of John Birch

Washington to express admiration for the "Soviet Experiment" and to vie with each other for the friendship of its representatives. When so personally foul a character as Oumansky, various parts of whose foulness from larceny to murder were public knowledge, could be and actually was treated with marked respect and even subservience by the most important representatives of this nation, because he was a Soviet "diplomat." When Earl Browder, head of the Communist party in the United States, had the run of the White House for years, and actually directed—from the White House—operations in 1938 to purge senators who had opposed the court-packing scheme in 1937. When both Franklin D. Roosevelt and John L. Lewis were sure they could "use" the Communists to support their own purposes and then discard them at will.

We should have to go back further. To 1934, when Frances Perkins and Henry Morgenthau and Henry Wallace persuaded President Roosevelt to have us join—and begin largely financing—that great organized conspiracy to socialize all the nations of the world, the (deliberately misnamed) International Labor Organization. To the hordes of ILO members, from Montreal and London and Geneva, who flocked to Washington, found themselves comfortable nests inside our government payroll, and began so energetically—and ably and slyly—creating a collectivist atmosphere in which communist doctrine could thrive. To 1933, when Henry Morgenthau and a young lawyer named Dean Acheson were so instrumental in getting the United States to officially recognize that government and establish diplomatic relations with

Moscow. When the great influx of Communist propagandists, organizers, saboteurs, and spies began, before the ink was even dry on their solemn promise that they would not thus abuse our hospitality.

And further back, to 1921, and the transformation of the old Intercollegiate Socialist Society into the League for Industrial Democracy. This league, of which leading lights over the next decade were Robert Morss Lovett, Charles P. Steinmetz, Norman Thomas, Harry W. Laidler, Stuart Chase, Paul R. Porter, Paul Blanshard, Louis Budenz, and John Dewey, had one specific purpose and reason for existence. This was "education for a new social order based on production for use and not for profit." *Production for use and not for profit* is, of course, at the very center of Marxian doctrine, and the League carried out its educational program with considerable success. For in 1933, when Roosevelt looked around for the generals and colonels and corporals to lead his army of "social change," the League for Industrial Democracy had 5,652 members as the greatest single source of these administrators and advocates of the new order. (Roosevelt called it the "New Deal," but the German and British Socialists had called it by such names as the "New Order" or the "New Course"; and most of these converts were well aware, even if the American people were not, that it was exactly the same program.)

And yet further back. To 1905, when the Intercollegiate Socialist Society, which was later to become this League for Industrial Democracy, was itself formed, in a loft at 140 Fulton Street, New York. Among the sophomoric

## The Life of John Birch

young idealists who founded the society were Upton Sinclair, Clarence Darrow, Jack London, Morris Hillquit, and Owen R. Lovejoy. The organization of chapters began at once, and was carried on so energetically that by 1912 there were forty-four such chapters in that many different colleges. Among the early presidents of local chapters were Walter Lippmann at Harvard, David J. Saposs at Wisconsin, Frieda Kirchwey at Barnard, and Walter Reuther at Wayne. Prominently active in other chapters, in the years before the first World War, were Bruce Bliven at Stanford, Vida Scudder at Wellesley, Alexander Trachtenberg at Trinity, John Spargo at Amherst Agricultural, and Eugene V. Debs at Columbia. Other leaders in early stages of the movement included Ordway Tead, Alexander Meiklejohn, Isador Lubin, William Shirer, Paul H. Douglas, Vladimir Karapetoff, Heywood Broun, Lewis Gannett, and Broadus Mitchell. Among those acting as organizers, or as writers and lecturers to help the organization along, were Ella Reeves Bloor, Frances E. Perkins, Lincoln Steffens, Rose Pastor Stokes, Victor L. Berger, Bouck White, W.E.B. DuBois, Scott Nearing, John Haynes Holmes, Roger M. Baldwin, Frederick Vanderbilt Field, Felix Frankfurter, Joseph P. Lash, Max Lerner, J. B. Matthews, Nathaniel Peffer, Victor Reuther, Anna Louise Strong, Jerry Voorhis, and James A. Wechsler. Here are found many of the names of those who deliberately set out to make America over, into the pattern of a socialist-Marxist state, as had been envisaged for Germany by university students and professors, the radical theorists, and the class-hatred boys of Bismarck's day—and as their cousins in

the Fabian Society of England were already doing for that nation half a generation ahead of them. Keeping in touch with the theories, methods, and successful experiences of the German and British leaders of socialist thought and action was a most important function of these American collegiate organizations.

And earlier still. To Germany of the 1880's when Bismarck and later William II were stealing the thunder of the rising Marxist storm, and cleverly using it to build a central government with more detailed power and minute controls over the lives of its subjects than had been seen since the time of Constantine. When Adolph Wagner and his associates were crystallizing the nebulous theories and generalities of socialism into its infinitely intricate and opportunistic legislative pieces. When the practical planners were proving that socialism, instead of being willingly and consciously assumed by the masses as a desirable condition of life, was something to be imposed on a people from the top; and were gradually accepting the inevitable corollary that a descending hierarchy of government agents, to force this socialistic organization of society on the people for their own good, was justified if necessary. When the pattern of *state socialism* was being set for all the world to follow for a hundred years.

And further back yet. To the fulminations of Karl Marx and the elucidations of Friedrich Engels. To the writings of John Stuart Mill and Jeremy Bentham and Robert Owen. To the widespread promulgation of that fundamental concept of all socialist idealism, "the greatest good of the greatest number." We should have to go back



## The Life of John Birch

to the very beginning — in modern times — of that incredible assurance, on the part of an increasing number of sociological geniuses and experts, that they *knew*, beyond all possibility of doubt or error, what was best for their more ignorant fellow-humans and what would actually result in "the greatest good of the greatest number." To the beginning of that militant determination on the part of these self-appointed demi-gods, basking in the delightful glow of their own infallibility, to use *any* means to force governments and peoples into the mold designed and being built by themselves. To the last beginning of this recurrent pathological cyst in the philogenetic case history of the human mind.

We should have to trace the gradual growth of this cyst, of omniscient tyrannical altruism, as it developed in three generations to the point that the noblest idealists have been willing — are still willing — to resort unhesitatingly to perjury and murder and treason to foist their ideas upon the world. To give the full story of the spread and deepening of this obsession we should have to write a hundred books of a thousand pages each. And that is obviously beyond our purpose, or ability.

We can point out, however, that these "infallibles" close their eyes to many easily discernible facts. One is that the institutions of civilized man, his sociological machinery, cannot long survive or function creatively when inundated by the flood of collectivism. Historical experience has proved this beyond question, with regard to human social units of every size and circumstance; from Robert Owen's New Harmony experiment on a fertile pioneer front, to the great Roman Empire of the West

with all of its accumulated urban and commercial advantages, to the middle-sized city state of Sparta at the very height of its ascetic virility. But the disciples of Mill and Marx and MacDonald are afraid to look at this historical evidence. Even to glance at such ruins might cause the glittering mirage, on which they are focussing with such hypnotic concentration, to lose some of its brilliance or even to begin to fade away. On the beauty and the reality of this mirage they are willing to gamble high stakes indeed; to gamble on causing the starvation, torture, or prolonged suffering of still more hundreds of millions of their fellow human beings; to gamble on causing, or hastening, the suicide of a civilization; to gamble on two even more far-reaching catastrophes which we'll discuss in the final section of this book. To such people the murder of John Birch would have seemed an inconsequential trifle in this gamble for Elysium, even if they had known such a heroic individual—and opponent—ever existed.

### XVIII

#### THE OPPOSING FORCES

OUR FIFTH and last question was: What is the significance of the life and death of John Birch? That question involves deep and fundamental premises as to the significance of any individual human existence. But this is not a book of philosophy, and we cannot pause here for a study of man's relation to cosmological purpose. Keeping our inquiry, therefore, within the narrower limits that were intended and are appropriate, we might restate it this way: What is there about the life of John Birch, except for its human-interest value, that justifies a formal biography?

## The Life of John Birch

If the reader will bear with us, we'd like to approach this question along several different lines of thought. They all converge to place this young man at a focal point of a physical and ideological struggle far greater and more important than has ever yet been generally realized. And here, too, we can hope that the answer will gradually become both clear and convincing as we thus consider the forces which he so faithfully represented and those to which his whole outlook was so unalterably opposed.

For John Birch personified everything that the Communists hate. First, he was not only an American, he was one of the finest examples of Americanism, in all the traditional meaning and promise of that unique term. He lived and worked and fought and died, always literally giving the best that was in him, to strengthen those principles and beliefs which had brought human evolutionary and spiritual progress to its highwater mark in the America he inherited.

There was poverty in that America. Sometimes it was grueling and widespread poverty. John Birch had lived through it and knew it well. But John also knew, both intuitively and from actual observation, the difference between poverty in America and poverty in other lands. The ceaseless gnawing hunger accepted as commonplace in huge parts of China was rare indeed in this country, and actual famine completely unknown. Nor was hunger ever deliberately imposed on any segment of the American people, by government for its own ends. The brutal and literal starvation of three million Ukrainian kulaks by Stalin, on their self-sufficient land, and simply because they resisted

collectivization of that land, occurred at the same time as the worst of our depression of the thirties. But the like of any such catastrophe in this country was so little to be feared, or even imagined, that this Kremlin-contrived mass murder could not even be believed until the evidence and revelations became overwhelmingly conclusive.

Poverty is something which the Communists everywhere try to exploit. But poverty in America produced no bitterness, in men like John Birch, towards their government or towards their fellow men. For there was always freedom to move, to try, to hope and plan, to pit oneself against economic rather than governmental forces; to struggle against poverty as an individual or family responsibility, rather than as something imposed by the errors or ambitions of a tyrannical state and thus beyond the power of the individual to do anything about. An individual could enter that struggle with a justified American assurance that work and self-denial and thrift would bring better days in time; that while the boat of his own destiny was sailing in temporarily rough waters, he was still, under God, the captain of that boat and the master of his own fate.

John Birch had been through all the experiences of America's worst economic travail, without losing any of his preference for the American economic and political system to those that other countries had to offer. He had not become in the slightest susceptible to the doctrine that it is either the duty of the state to order the lives of its citizens, or within the power of the state to provide for them better than they can do it for themselves. A "prose poem" which he wrote in April, 1945, con-



## The Life of John Birch

tained this sentence: "I want of government only protection against the violence and injustices of evil or selfish men." And this characteristic of Americanism is one which makes the Communists boil with frustrated rage.

There was pacifism in America, and internationalism, and distrust of the political purposes and honesty of our own government. These were attitudes which the Communists intended to exploit to the fullest. The freedom to criticize and disagree among ourselves had torn us widely apart. The Communists knew, better than anybody else, to what ends they would go and what means they would use to sow even greater dissension among us in the years after World War II. There could not be the slightest question, however, that John Birch would maintain an unshakable and heroic loyalty to America, in whatever cold wars or hot wars might arise with any foreign power. And a loyalty to one's own country, that cannot be weakened or divided even by allegiance to the noblest ideals of human brotherhood, much less by the phony parade of the shells of such ideals for the promotion of a tyrant's aims — such a loyalty, while still by no means exclusive to America, is another characteristic of classic Americanism which the Communists hate as a mole hates the daylight.

It is a tenet of Americanism that the right to own private property must not be abridged. It is a widely held conviction among Americans that their economic freedom is inseparably intertwined with their political freedom and their personal freedom in all other activities. They recognize, more by instinct from their pioneer past than by knowledge of how completely their

feeling is supported by historical experience, that any chipping away of their economic freedoms, however insidiously done by governmental forces, means a surrender of other rights as well. The Communists, aware that economic freedoms are the most vulnerable of all to demagogic attack, and aware of the inevitable consequences of their destruction, have turned loose every propaganda device in their arsenal to batter down this characteristic of the American philosophy. But with John Birch they could never have made the slightest impression. In that same "prose poem" we have already quoted, John had his "war weary farmer" say: "I want some fields and hills, woodlands and streams, that I can call my own." Although determined on a career of ascetic dedication for himself, he had a fundamental American respect for the desire to own property, and for the proper place of this desire in a civilization of free individuals, that no amount of Communist sophistry would ever have been able to shake. A man who takes that half of his salary that he retains for himself, and invests it in barren land and in young trees to be planted on that land, to make it no longer barren — such a man is no prospect, not even a remote possibility, for the siren salesmen of Marxian revolution.

Next to the individual himself, the unit of responsibility and the basis of reciprocal dependence in America is the family. Our society is an organized purposeful entity, of which the millions of families are the sustaining cells. There is nothing unique to America in this characteristic. Extremely strong family ties have been a notable part of the pattern of social organization in

## The Life of John Birch

many countries. But this tremendously powerful family relationship between individuals is something which the Communists have been compelled to wear away by abrasion and practically to destroy altogether, before they could convert enough of the individuals of these families into willing slaves and worshippers of the state. Not only have the Communists debased both the ritual and the significance of marriage, in every country that they have controlled long enough; not only have they tried to make children at an early age look to the state, rather than to their parents, as the purveyor of necessities and the guardian of their well-being; not only have they deliberately torn families apart by the millions; they have committed a far greater crime than any of these, by overpowering, with their specious indoctrinations, one of the noblest and most deeprooted instincts of man. For the Communists have successfully achieved the willing betrayal of parents by their children, and of children by their parents, for nothing more reprehensible than a lack of enthusiasm for a slave state. They have done this on a widespread basis, always on the grounds of a starry-eyed idealism that cannot admit the possibility of its own error, and as an important part of the Communist means of stamping out all opposition to its régime, of the present or of the future.

But for Americans of John Birch's background, of his love for his parents that amounted almost to reverence, of his deep and glowing affection for his brothers and sisters that shines out so continuously in his many letters to them, of his memories of their poverty and struggles and pleasures and sorrows and proud moments together; for him

any Communist effort to tear down this idyllic attachment to a family hearth would have been absurdly futile. A man who, wishing to own forested land for his own future security, still takes one-half of his officer's salary (the first appreciable income he had ever had) and sends it gladly every month to his parents for the remaining three years of his young life, to make their living a little easier — the persuasion of such a man to substitute loyalty to the parent-hood of the state for loyalty to the human parents he revered and admired would have been beyond even the Communists' most clever and patient cunning. Sons like John Birch were, and would remain, insuperable stumbling blocks to the Communists' most insidious attacks on American family life.

Americanism is not completely definable, of course. And even of those prejudices, beliefs, and traits of character which most observers would accept as components of Americanism, there are many about which there would be strong differences of opinion as to whether they called for praise or censure. But when the doubtful or controversial characteristics are winnowed out, and only the noblest moral, political, and traditional values are left, out of that total environment for human life and human happiness which we inherited, we reach two parallel and irrefutable conclusions. One is, that John Birch embodies the best of these values. And the second is, those are exactly the values and ideals the Communists hate most, as obstacles to their conquest of America and enslavement of the world.

But there are *two* great bulwarks still in the way of this Communist



## The Life of John Birch

ambition. One is a political entity, the United States of America. Other countries are resisting Communism, of course. But it is the productive strength of America and the ideological strength of Americanism that form the core of this military and political resistance.

The other great bulwark is the organized power of the Christian religion. Here too, other religious faiths — the Jewish and the Moslem followings, in particular — are doing much to oppose the Communist advances. But it is the greater numerical and material strength of Christianity, and the complete irreconcilability of Christian ideals with Communist methods and purposes, that form the core of this spiritual resistance.

And so it happened that John Birch represented each of these anti-Communist forces with equal honor and faithfulness. To him Christianity was no vague obligato of half-defined doctrines to which one paid lip service, and of discomforting moral precepts which merely kept an elastic conscience from stretching too far. It was a dynamic faith, which pointed the way through humility, brotherhood, and righteousness to a better world composed of more noble human beings.

Many of us today cannot share the simple and fundamental faith which moved John Birch to such a self-sacrificing life of service to his fellow-men, and caused him to project for himself an even more single-minded devotion to the service of his God and of humanity in the years to come. But those of us who have not lost all sense of gratitude to the saints and martyrs, the teachers and poets, the heroes and dreamers, the workers and inventors, the good men and wise, who slowly and painfully created for us that pre-

dominantly Christian civilization which we inherited — we do share with John Birch a number of cardinal beliefs which are ties that bind together men of good will throughout the world. And these are the very beliefs, of man about his spiritual nature, that the Communists know they must overcome before they can substitute therefore the pseudo-religion of Communism.

One is exactly that right, of any human being, to believe what he wishes about his own relations to God, and to worship any Divine Being to the extent and in the manner dictated by his own belief and his own conscience. We simplify this great principle by the word *tolerance*. And while almost all religious groups have practised cruel intolerance at some time in the past, we have all learned over the centuries — Jews, Christians, Moslems, and others alike — that tolerance is an important manifestation of a great spiritual tenet common to us all: "Do unto others as you would have them do unto you." Today only the Communists have reverted to that principle, of the dark ages of religions and of civilizations: "Destroy your enemy's gods, and force him by the sword to worship yours."

It happens that John Birch, in the ardent certainty and fervor of his own early faith, had been guilty of intolerance — or of what might be so construed by many people. He was too kind and too civilized a Christian, even in those days, ever to have carried this intolerance to the point of cruelty to another human being or oppression of another faith. But he believed that a man who had been hired, by a particular group of a particular religious persuasion, to teach and preach their beliefs to their sons and daughters, had no right to use his

## The Life of John Birch

position to preach opposing doctrines. And at Mercer he had conducted quite a militant campaign in support of this point of view.

But it is doubtful if, by the time he reached China as a missionary, John would have felt that, in religious matters, even this course of action was justified or wise. He had learned to lean entirely on the power of persuasion, and on a sublime confidence that the truth as he saw it would ultimately prevail. Just how tolerant, in spirit as well as in action, John had become, is revealed by one development incidental to his war service. It is a development in the recital of which we must tread on tender ground. For in the southeastern states, where John was raised, there were almost no Catholics. For this reason a prejudice against Catholics, growing out of ancestral traditions and reasons that were themselves largely forgotten, had been transmitted and strengthened from generation to generation, through lack of any direct contact with objects of that bias which might soften it, until the prejudice had become both strong and almost universal. Just how strong the feeling was, at the very time John Birch was a growing boy in the South, became a matter of record when such staunchly Democratic states as North Carolina and Virginia went for Herbert Hoover in the 1928 presidential election, rather than accept the Catholic, Al Smith, as their candidate. There is no doubt that, to a fundamentalist Protestant like John Birch, it was actually much harder to see goodness in a Catholic than in a Jew or even a Moslem. The attitude of tolerance, friendship, and cooperation which John acquired towards Catholics, even Catholic priests, during his experiences

in China, therefore, redounds greatly to his credit and to theirs.

There are many witnesses to this attitude, but one will suffice. Here are the exact words of Colonel Wilfred Smith, repetitious but revealing:

"The thing I liked about John was that although he was a very fervent Christian, he was also a very fine soldier. He reconciled the work he was doing in the Army with his burning missionary zeal and a strong feeling that China would have to be freed from the Jap menace before missionary work could be started again. We had two or three Catholic officers. One day John came to me and said, 'I have learned something. I find I can respect the Catholics. I have learned they can be gentlemen. We do not have many Catholics down south, and I have learned something. I have learned from my experience that Christianity is something from the heart. When I was ordained and came out I did not think that was possible.' John matured in his Christian experience. I saw him develop and change from a rather naive approach to one of maturity. It was very evident in the tolerance which he was able to feel toward Christians of other denominations than his own. I first knew John as a Southern Baptist, but John said that Christian fellowship was possible with anyone from the heart and not from denomination. It used to amuse me but without any kidding or urging he volunteered that information. He changed from a boy to a man."

The Communists, in their war to the finish on all religion, as in all of their



## The Life of John Birch

other strategic drives, have left no tactical stone unturned in their conduct of that war. They have systematically stamped out religious observances and destroyed or taken over religious meeting places; they have consistently reviled, persecuted, and murdered religious leaders; and they have attempted to eliminate every religious hold on the mind of the young — except for always temporary concessions of a limited nature for the sake of expediency. And with the insidious cunning which is one of their most effective tools in every enterprise, they have succeeded in fomenting distrust by various Christian denominations of each other, and in promoting a jealous and suspicious division between and even within denominations, which everywhere lessens the strength of opposition to Communism on the part of any Christian group. John Birch was, and clearly would have remained, a militant enemy of their strategy and an unreachable exposé of their tactics, in all of these designs. His Christianity was not on the defensive, dissipating its strength in disproving calculated libels. He was a leader of a Christian offensive to carry a sense of Christian brotherhood and tolerance and justice to all the world. And at an early age he had already matured too much for the Communists to have been able to muddy his understanding, or to deflect him from his purpose, by any amount of their sophomoric mental poisons.

A second cardinal belief of Christianity, bitterly condemned by the Communists, is in the worth and importance of each individual human being. This belief John Birch exemplified in every word and deed. To the Communists fifteen million men suffering unending

misery in slave labor camps are just so many pawns being used in a game, and not worth a second thought in connection with the winning of that game. To John Birch, driving the Japs from China was a lofty and overpowering cause, to which many lesser causes might properly be sacrificed. But not one single missionary was he willing to leave to die of starvation or mistreatment, even though the evacuation of some one missionary might cost heavily in plane time and fuel and human effort that otherwise would be devoted directly to winning the war. And not one Chinese child, Christian or non-Christian, was he willing to see suffer, when any practicable effort or sacrifice on his part could prevent it.

In some of the subtle Communist propaganda that has permeated every American medium of communication over the past many years, the suggestion has been carefully planted, for the gullible to dig out and proudly flaunt as their penetrating discovery, that the poor abused persecuted Communists are today's version of the early Christian martyrs. There are many things wrong with this insinuating and deceptive thesis, but one fallacy vitiates the whole body of the claim. That is, the true Christian martyr of the early centuries was willing himself to die for his belief, but he didn't want anybody else to die for it, not even his enemies. He was especially willing to die for it rather than lie about it. Your Communist, on the other hand, is very anxious that others — including, but by no means limited to, his enemies — shall die for his cause by the millions. But the Communists use every known means of blaming their actions on others, as in the case of the Katyn Massacre; of get-

## The Life of John Birch

ting others to fight their battles for them, as in the seduction of idealistic American innocents into the "Abraham Lincoln Brigade"; and of personally escaping, rather than suffering for, the consequences of their own crimes against society when caught. Sometimes they even have to drive their own soldiers, with guns at their backs more threatening than those in front, as at Stalingrad. As for individual Communists standing firm for their faith under stress, they are willing to do so at the cost of ranting in public, or of reviling or torturing other people; but lying about it, to escape the consequences of their worship of Communism, is a fundamental "virtue" of their cult.

We are told that in the twenties in Europe, and in the thirties in Asia, there were some Communists who preferred and accepted death rather than deny their faith. Certainly there have been Communists who would have been willing to do so. For retrogressive, cruel, stupid, and full of childish incongruous monstrosities as this communist philosophy may be, it has caught with its deceptive mirages the mesmerized gaze and devotion of many noble men and sincere idealists. But the custom of martyrdom has been discouraged, and the martyrs forgotten, by the Communists themselves. And the reason for the complete difference between early Christianity and today's Communism in this respect lies in the principle we are discussing, that to the Communist the individual is of too little importance for any such deliberate self-sacrifice of the individual's life to make sense. Even when some few individuals, such as the Rosenbergs, have been executed according to the compulsions of the social organization which they

were seeking to destroy, the Communists have made it clear that their interest in these executions, even for propaganda value, was as a means of more rapidly publicizing their own lies and distortions of fact. They seize such opportunities to break down confidence in the civilized procedures by which even a humane society tries to protect itself against those who would undermine it through criminal betrayal. They have no sentimental concern with the individuals executed.

To the Communist the individual is always expendable, for even the slightest contribution to the cause — or for the elimination of the slightest obstruction to the cause. To a Christian, even the lowliest individual is never expendable, either positively as a sacrifice to the cause of Christian civilization, or negatively for the vilest form of blasphemy against Christianity itself, without all the protection that the circumstances of war or peace will possibly permit, and even then with only the gravest anxiety and misgivings. According to official records, John Birch "stuck his neck out" more than any other man in China, during the whole three years he was engaged in the war there, to live up to this principle of Christian humanity. It was another principle, in the necessary dilution of which, and in the ultimate banishment of which from the minds and actions of men, the Communists found and would have continued to find John Birch their implacable enemy.

A third tenet of Christianity, which the Communists cannot allow to survive, is that there can be coexistence of temporal power and organized spiritual power in the same state at the same time. Christians have accepted this as



## The Life of John Birch

theory from the earliest days. They have observed it, with varying degrees of encroachment, throughout the centuries. The Communists have denied it, both in theory and in practice, from the very beginning of the Communist conspiracy.

The Christian, provided his freedom of worship, and of support of his church, is not denied or interfered with, is perfectly willing to pay the taxes, observe the laws, and support the sovereignty in temporal matters, of a duly constituted completely secular government. He does not see this as a divided allegiance, but as two separate non-conflicting allegiances. The Communists, being unwilling to allow any allegiance — to the family, to friends, to organizations, or to causes — other than allegiance to the Communist state, for fear that there might be conflict between this allegiance and some other, cannot even consider allowing organized religion to exert or possess any material strength or even unified spiritual influence. If the Christian thought like a Communist, he would have to destroy the state. Since a Communist thinks as he does, he must destroy not only religion, but the church. Since the Christian does not think this way, he can work for his church and patriotically support the state at the same time. And the Communists thus find this principle of social organization a reinforced bulwark against their making subservient satellites out of Christian nations.

John Birch understood this principle very well. He had been raised in a country where its soundness was taken completely for granted. Nothing in his more mature experience caused him to doubt its soundness in the least. His

most evangelistic crusading on behalf of Christianity in the most pagan corners of Asia would not have given the temporal rulers of those corners the slightest reason to distrust his efforts from a civil point of view — unless they were Communists — or to put any obstacles in the way of his conversion of the natives to Christianity. But every such conversion would have meant one more cell of stronger resistance to the Communists when they came. How bitterly they hate Asiatic Christians, and the influence of the Christianity of John Birch and other missionaries among the Asiatics, is revealed by the recent report from inside Red China. They are temporarily permitting the resumption, under certain carefully humiliating restrictions, of Christian worship in some of the strongest Christian centers. Those who are ardent enough in their faith are innocently rushing like schools of fish to seize the tempting bait. And the Communist tyrants are already gloating that they will thus know who are the irreconcilables and stalwarts left among the population, to be liquidated in the next general purge. It is a cruel formula which the Communists have used many times before.

Last and most important of the philosophical and spiritual conflicts between Christianity and Communism, which we shall discuss here, is the Communist belief that the end justifies the means and the Christian conviction that this is one of Satan's most tempting lies. For this is, by ultimate analysis, the one firm foundation of our quarrel with the Communists and with the socialists who support them with this same rationalization. And the argument is tied to John Birch not only through his holding a belief contrary to the

## The Life of John Birch

Communist doctrine, but by his being a victim of that doctrine in its actual implementation.

None of us knows beyond all question that a socialist or communist organization of society, such as the Communists claim to desire, would not make for a happier world. We do not believe it, and there are sound reasons in historical experience, in philosophic reasoning, and in intuitive integration of the infinite guides to the pursuit of happiness, which support our contrary conviction and encourage our resistance. But we are willing to deny ourselves that claim to infallibility which we condemn so in the Communists. We are willing to grant that, conceivably, they could be right.

If the Communists and their socialist allies would depend, therefore, on persuasion rather than coercion, on an honest presentation of their arguments and blueprints rather than on opportunistic crimes of every nature, to advance their cause, we should have no right nor reason to condemn them. The men, for instance, who founded the Intercollegiate Socialist Society to which we referred above, were not criminals or scoundrels. On the contrary they were, almost without exception, idealistic young men motivated by the noblest aims. It was only as some of them, swept along by the encouragement of their fellows into a growing fanaticism about their own superior wisdom, joined the Communist criminal conspiracy or at least began to condone the use of any means to bring about a socialist society, that they lost the right to our admiration no matter how completely we disagreed with them. But over the years many of these "liberal" idealists, even those who claim

that they hate Communism, acquired a blind spot, like that caused an automobile driver by the windshield support at either end, for the dirty tactics, all the way up to murder, of the Communists themselves, whenever they thought the Communists were advancing the cause of socialism. For condoning such tactics they deserve our contempt. For running interference for such tactics they deserve careful investigation. For actually participating in such tactics they deserve to be prosecuted with energy and justice, according to our civilized laws. For even good ends do not justify foul means. And a whole civilization — the best our poor fumbling, bungling race has yet arrived at — has been painfully built on the principle that the individual or the mob must be limited by law in the means chosen to achieve its ends. Neither the Communists, their fellow travelers, nor their philosophically kindred socialists, have any such *prima facie* case that they are right and we are wrong as to justify their reversion to barbarism to establish their desired form of social organization.

Your true Christian, like John Birch, will not even stand passively on the sidelines and allow crimes against the code of a Christian civilization to be perpetrated without protest and militant action. He had already sensed the beginning of sinister events in China before he died. During the last months of the war he wrote home that the American diplomats and leaders in China had much to answer for, and that when he returned to America he would have some surprising things to tell.

As Captain Birch, he willingly cooperated with the Chinese Communists



## The Life of John Birch

during the war whenever the occasion arose. And there is no doubt that, so long as his natural American ignorance of the nature and extent of the Communist conspiracy remained, and if the Communists appeared to exert their control according to civilized standards, he would have felt that the coexistence of a Nationalist Government and a Communist Government in China was not his concern. But as soon as the Communists began to reveal their true nature; to wreck every effort of the Nationalist Government to reestablish communications, industry, and the whole economy on a peaceful basis; to turn loose their flood of lies about Chiang Kai-shek, in America, and about Americans, in China; to murder, and pillage, and destroy, John Birch would not even have had to stop to commune with himself as to whether their philosophy and professed aims were good or bad. He would have used all the force of his convincing voice and determined energy, supported by a thorough personal knowledge of the Chinese scene, to deny their lies and to try to stop their destructiveness. When all the rest of humanity, except the Communists, were looking forward to peace and rehabilitation, ten days after the Japanese surrender, the very group that murdered John Birch, at that very time, were engaged in tearing up railroad tracks and tearing down telephone wires, for the specific purpose of causing misery and despair to the civilian population. And they were quite right in assuming that, whatever their ends, their means alone would have made John Birch a foe who could not be silenced except by death.

By one of those dramatic coincidences which the tempo of war makes com-

mon, it so happens that John Birch expressed himself on some of the Christian principles we have been discussing, in the last letter which he ever wrote. It was begun on August 13, 1945 (August 12 in America), to his parents in Georgia. Added to and continued off and on, according to habit, and obviously brought to a close on August 15 with forgivable abruptness, it did not reach Mr. and Mrs. Birch until after the news of their son's death. And it seems worth while, as a fitting end to this chapter, to incorporate that short letter here in full. To paraphrase one paragraph in it, John Birch wanted peace, for all people and for many reasons, with all his heart. But he would never have been willing to accept peace, even for a short time, when purchased by a tolerance of such evils as he would have seen the Communists spreading across China and the world.

China, August 13, 1945

Dear Folks:

Here at my little outpost we are all waiting for President Truman's word tonight concerning Japan's answer to the Allied qualification of the first surrender offer. Yesterday, Sunday morning, I held a service especially thanking God for bringing us to the eve of victory, and all my men voluntarily attended except one operator who had to stay by the transmitter. We have been holding Sunday morning services every week that I am here to lead them. This has been the case for several months now.

The C.I.M. have a splendid group of Christians at Fowyang, Anhwei; I preached to six hundred plus of them

## The Life of John Birch

there on Sunday morning not long ago, at the invitation of the pastor. It was the first time I have preached in Chinese since leaving Changsha.

Father, do not worry about my "turning back in the furrow." I may "make tents" in my own way; but as long as it pleases God to use my voice for preaching His Gospel, I expect to be doing that.

Please convey the following message to George Stanley, wherever he may be. Dear George S.: Congratulations on your marriage to as fine a person as I'm sure Alice is. I think often of you both, despite the evidence of my poor letter writing to the contrary. I do want to take issue with a statement you made — but surely cannot have meant — in a letter forwarded to me by Betty. You said: "At best this or any other war is just 'beating our heads against the wall' . . . all fighting and winning is temporary only." I will admit that much of what we rightly "render to Caesar" is of a temporary nature, because it is all in the present life. But many of these temporary things are of high importance and enjoined by God (as the execution of wrath upon evildoers by human governments). To me, it is of the utmost importance to gain the temporary opportunity to preach Christ's Gospel! Have you ever seen a humble Chinese brother, who was beheaded because he preached Christ rather than the Emperor of Japan? I have. To me it is of high importance that peace-loving Chinese peasants be allowed to live out their lives in peace!

Have you ever watched a Jap soldier steal the pitifully few grains of rice belonging to a large family of

starving children? I have. Have you ever seen Chinese girls after the Japanese machine-gunned them? I have.

I want peace, but not that purchased by tolerance of such evils as I saw Japan spreading across this part of the world!

Without much military training or knowledge, excepting brief observation of fights between Japs and guerillas in Chekiang, I tried to volunteer as a private, but they made me a second lieutenant instead. Since that day I have tried, as wholeheartedly as I could, to serve the flag that had protected my life so far. If you had ever lived for one day under the shadow of the Jap secret police, you would thank God that America had enough "suckers," as you call them, to redden the sands of Tarawa or drop flaming to death through the China skies; that there were enough "suckers" to stop the Imperial Navy at Midway and the Jap bombers at Kunming.

Word has just come over the radio that Japan has unconditionally surrendered. Praise God from Whom all blessings flow! No, brother of mine, we did not vainly beat our hands against a wall; we cut our hands smashing the teeth of a monstrous mouth that was devouring, and that rapidly, the lives, land, liberty, and happiness of poor helpless human beings in many parts of the world. And now that mouth, even though it be temporarily, is *closed*! Yes, George, liberty is worth its price!

Good night, and love to all.

John



## The Life of John Birch

### XIX

#### THE WAR IS NOW

IT IS THE purpose of this small book to ensure that John Birch did not die in vain. It is true that, at the time, we were deliberately denied the opportunity to know or to evaluate the circumstances, the forces, or the philosophy which his murder might have made more clear. As a consequence his sacrifice contributed nothing to our needed enlightenment, during the past nine years while the octopus of Communism was reaching its creepy tentacles ever more penetratingly over the whole planet. But even now his story may still serve to throw one more needed beam of light on the nature and the aims, the strategy and the tactics, of the conspiracy that will destroy us unless we expose and destroy it first. If so, one thing of which we can be gratefully certain is that John Birch would have considered his own life and death to have been very much worth while.

For it seems to me, and to many like me, that we now face, directly and with ominous nearness, the most transcendent crisis within not only the recorded and semi-recorded history of the human race, but within the biological history of the human species. We have already mentioned, among probabilities now threatening us, the enslavement of America and all other free nations, the destruction of a whole civilization that has been thousands of years in the building, and the ruthless substitution of the temporal religion of communism for all spiritual religions — the last danger including the extermination from the human tradition of those principles of morals, ethics, and humanity which have been common denominators of the great religions. To

any human being who is not mentally blind, even to those who are proponents of communism for whatever cause, these are clear and present dangers.

But there are two more dangers, which reach beyond even these threats in their ultimate consequences. One is obvious. Through mishandling of celestial powers by little men, either for conquest or for defense, the explosive or radioactive forces of hydrogen or cobalt atoms in chain reaction may get out of hand and literally destroy the planet — or *all life on it*. Whether a similar catastrophe has happened once or billions of times before we have no way of knowing. The Persian poet wrote:

And fear not lest Existence closing  
your  
Account, and mine, should know the  
like no more;  
The Eternal Sáki from that Bowl has  
poured  
Millions of Bubbles like us, and will  
pour.

It may well be — it is beyond our present knowledge to guess either way — that an Eternal Power has not only shaped millions of solar systems like our own, but has permitted the evolution of life on millions of planets within those systems. The surmise, however, is poor consolation to the heirs of a billion years of one such evolutionary climb, on the prospect of seeing themselves and their inheritance swept into nothingness.

The second possible catastrophe, of completely final import to the human race, is less obvious and slower in its operation, but no less conclusive in the long run. It derives from the fact that the communists and other socialists,

## The Life of John Birch

instead of being infallibly right in their belief as to what is best for the human race, may be — could be — completely, irreparably, and *fatally* wrong. The possibility is sufficiently ominous to justify deeply thoughtful attention for two or three painful paragraphs.

For civilization is evidently just one, of an infinite number, of the evolutionary contrivances of nature. It might be seized upon, by any dominant species of a necessary minimum intelligence, at a certain advanced stage in its struggle for survival and growth. And it is apt eventually to be over-used, to the dangerous detriment of the species, like any other physical or psychical adaptation to circumstances.

And civilization, or the progress of the species by means of and during civilization, depends on competition with members of other species being entirely supplanted by competition between individuals within the species. This competition, being between equals who were alike in physical endowments, has, in our own case, had far greater impact on man's mental growth than on his physical adaptation. The result has produced not only you and me, in our proud superiority to the other primates, but the opportunity for the development of a human being as far superior to ourselves, in mental stature, as we are to the apes.

But collectivism, then, is more than the tragic *sociological* mistake for civilized man which we have already discussed. Collectivism is a *biological* false path; not only a retrogressive tendency in any species which has reached any of the higher evolutionary stages, but one of Nature's perennially unsuccessful experimental tangents which always ultimately ends in a

"blind alley." This fatal *cul de sac* quality of collectivism — and of its even darker tributary tangents, such as Communism and mass slavery — stands starkly revealed by a hundred million years of insect history.

If, therefore, the Communists or any of their philosophical descendants succeed in fastening the regimented non-competitive organization of life and of effort onto *all human beings, everywhere on the planet*, the growth of *homo sapiens* will have ended. If this ant-like system of non-competitive co-operation is established with sufficient rapidity and universality for only the few generations needed, to have it automatically (and after a while instinctively) accepted, as the natural pattern of human activity; and if there are no exceptions left anywhere on the planet to suggest otherwise; then the increasingly rare individuals who might wish to rebel against the system will have no more chance of flaunting the community conscience than would a lone ant that tried to hoard and hide some of the nest's honeydew for her own personal use.

Man, thereafter, in unhappy stagnation of intellect at its present level, will simply exist through the ensuing millenia until environmental changes occur, or outside competition arises, with which our species cannot cope. If the planet itself lasts long enough man will then disappear in time, as surely as will the ant, as surely as did the dinosaur, and for the same basic reason. This possible catastrophe is not fanciful, and is not one which man, at his present fortunate stage of understanding of himself and his universe, should be stupid enough to ignore.

But this has been, necessarily, too



## The Life of John Birch

slight an excursion into too deep a subject. This particular danger was included in our list only for the sake of an honest completeness; and we have no quarrel with any reader who wishes to discount it. The other dangers are too palpable, and too imminent.

For the Communists are rapidly proceeding right now, with visible daily progress on almost every front, towards the successful achievement of their total goals. And they are doing so, in the remaining free and semi-free nations of the globe, by use of exactly the same means that they have used for the capture of every sizable country, including Russia itself, since they first gained a foothold from which to operate. These means consist primarily of infiltration, deception, indoctrination, and the gradual seizure of power, *from within*. When any man tells you today that the danger of Communism, to America, is not from within our country, but from without, that we should stop worrying about the Communists and their sympathizers in our midst and worry only about their armies and their possessions outside, he is either a pro-Communist, completely uninformed, or naive beyond reason. For he is denying all experience, a huge total of very tragic experience indeed, with this unappeasable enemy. And what is true of America is true of every major country outside of the Iron Curtain.

Except in very weak adjacent states like Latvia and Finland, and in areas which were pre-conquered for them by Hitler or the Allies, like Poland and East Germany, the Russian Communists have not anywhere risked the direct use of their own armed forces. They have, when infiltration and treason have made the time ripe, maneu-

vered Spaniards (with volunteers from other nations) into fighting Spaniards, Yugoslavs into fighting Yugoslavs, Chinese into fighting Chinese, or North Koreans into fighting South Koreans. They have sent equipment and technicians and strategists into these frays, to help those fighting on the Communist side. But their technique has been to take over every country, when their infiltration and treason had gone far enough, by a peaceful coup if possible, or by bloody *internal civil war* if necessary; never by conquering arms from without. Guatemala has recently fallen to Communist control; Italy may fall at any time. But the Communists have never had *one regiment* of "foreign" soldiers in either Guatemala or Italy, nor even threatening their borders. They have now used this technique, continuously and successfully, in country after country, large and small, for decades. Except as noted above, they have never used any other. With it, in just the last ten years, they have added six hundred million people to their slave empire; and have reached the point that their threat is serious and immediate in half of the world that still remains unconquered. They are so obviously using the same technique in America, so confidently, patiently, and justifiably counting on its ultimate success, that only the willfully blind can honestly deny the growing menace any longer.

The truth is terrifying but inescapable. The pressure exerted on American public opinion, and directly within our government, by the Communists and their dupes and allies, is so subtle and insidious, so clever and well-planned, so invisible and unrecognized, and still so extensive and cumulatively over-

## The Life of John Birch

whelming, that it sweeps even our ablest and most patriotic diplomats and administrators down its patiently chosen path. The world-wide Communist hierarchy thrives on prestige and the aura of success, far more than on what it wins by bullets or by bombs. And yet we go on handing them one diplomatic victory, one prestige-building success, after another, practically on a silver platter. And the overall results prove conclusively, however much the infinite details and separate events may be argued about, that treason is the strongest force pulling the strings that guide us. For as James Forrestal so truthfully complained, if it were only stupidity that dictated our course in foreign affairs, some of the mistakes would be on our side.

There are probably not more than twenty-five thousand traitors in this country, today, in a population of one hundred and sixty million. But every single one of those twenty-five thousand is a fanatic. Almost every one has a warped but functionally brilliant mind, because it is to that kind of mentality that Communism most strongly appeals. Every one of the twenty-five thousand is committed, in his whole being and purpose, to the conquest of America by Communist doctrine and the eventual rule of America by Communist masters. This goal is not something additional to his private ambition, to be given the leavings of his energy. It is, to him, the reason for his existence, to which all other aims and efforts are contributory or merely incidental. He is determined to do his full part towards bringing about this Communist victory by any means, for the end is all that matters. He accepts the discipline of those who plan Communist

strategy, fully aware that the reins of that discipline and that planning lead all the way back to Moscow. To further Communist strategy, even when he does not understand it, he will strive for positions of honor, and do his best to promote other Communists into similar positions. He will concoct policies that are two-edged, knowing that the edge which damages American interests is the one that will be pressed effectively. Disguised as a patriot, he will distort the aims of true patriots, and help to ruin their careers, while building up the prestige of other traitors like himself. He will lie and steal and even murder, if necessary, though he usually prefers to have the murder done remotely, if possible, through the effect of his policies, rather than by his own hands. If so ordered he will, by patient guile over the years, make himself a respected leader in labor or law or education or any field, without the slightest visible trace of any Communist connection, in order that he may work behind the scenes for Communist aims. Posing as a humanitarian liberal, he will multiply the reach of his own voice a hundred or a thousand fold by beguiling honest liberals to follow his bellowing like so many sheep. For the "egghead" that talks like a Communist is of small importance compared to the real Communist who pretends to be an egghead.

It was these traitors and their dupes and allies who kept the story of John Birch from the American people, most of them without ever having heard of John Birch themselves. It would be easier for us to write the final chapter of this book in a more restrained tone, and to hew more closely to the line of orthodox biography. But this would be



## The Life of John Birch

a betrayal of the aims for which John Birch gave his life. For the tremendous cumulative direct power and indirect influence of these same traitors, their further converts, their dupes and allies is still with us and still far-reaching.

And we are at a crossroads where their influence may be decisive; a crossroads not just of a nation, nor even just of a civilization, but of the human race itself. It is the first time since man began to spread over the planet that the fate of the whole race has been at stake in any struggle. One road leads easily and appealingly down, eventually to slavery, stagnation and increasing darkness. The other leads up the winding and difficult road to greater freedom, further growth and more enlightenment. And as if it were not enough temptation to the spirit of man to see the apparently easier road before him, there are charmers who would seduce and slavemasters who would drive him to make the leftward, downward turn.

We have built this sermon around John Birch, for in one blade of grass lies the key to all creation, could we only understand it; and in the forces that swirled around John Birch lay all the conflicts, of philosophy and of implementation, with which our whole world is now so imperatively concerned. *Therein lay the significance of his life and death.* Actually we must choose between the civilization, the form of society, and the expression of human life, as represented by John Birch, and their parallels as envisioned by Karl Marx and his spiritual successors. There is no middle ground, at least for the foreseeable future; not because no middle ground is philosophically possible, nor because intelligent and humane beings could not prefer some middle

ground, but because the Communists will not permit it. The man who stands ideologically half way between John Birch and a young Malenkov or Vishinsky has no more chance of ultimate survival in a state once thoroughly subdued by the Communists than did Captain Birch himself. The Communists will use compromise, to serve their purpose; but will not permit compromise to stand, once that purpose has been carried out. Not only are you either with the Communists or against them. By their own determined and ruthless delineation, you are either with them *all the way*, without a shadow of a reservation, or you are one hundred per cent their enemy after you have served their purpose. This is a principle which those who would compromise with Communism, or with Communists, should learn well and never forget. It is far more literally true, in dealing with Communism, than it was in dealing with the evil Lowell had in mind, that "they enslave their children's children who make compromise with sin."

John Birch was a just an American farm boy who might have been your son or mine. But he was the first, or very nearly the first, casualty in American uniform, in a war still being waged against us nine years later; a relentless war of which there is no end in sight. John Birch was killed by typical Communist tactics, as a part of typical Communist strategy, in a typical Communist-style war—a continuous undeclared war which observes no rules of international law, of civilization, or of human decency. He commanded no armies, headed no government, converted no nations to his creed. His impact would have been of transient

## The Life of John Birch

memory and comparatively small importance, had not that impact occurred at a time and in a way to make it supply particulars from which momentous generalizations can properly be projected. *With his death and in his death the battle lines were drawn, in a struggle from which either Communism or Christian-style civilization must emerge with one completely triumphant and the other completely destroyed.*

As John lay dying during that last hour or two of agony, after he had been shot and bayoneted and his body tossed aside, he must have realized that the rise of anti-Christ, which he had foreseen, was already upon us. There is no way in which we can reach back, across the nine-year interval, and let him know that his death was not in

vain. But what really matters, what would have mattered most to John Birch, is whether his sacrifice does in fact help to awaken his countrymen to their danger and their duty; and whether his career does help to inspire them to revere more sincerely, and to protect more devotedly, that hard-earned freedom, as a birthright of all men, for which he fought so well. If we rediscover some of our sounder spiritual values in the example of his life, recharge our determination from the spark of his courage, and learn essential truths about our enemy from the lesson of his murder, then his death at twenty-six ceases to be a tragedy. For in a full lifetime he could not have accomplished more.



*How many times have you gone to a bookstore—  
or even two or three bookstores—  
and failed to find the book you were looking for?*

You'll save time, money, and postage by  
ordering any book published in the United States  
from

## THE BOOKMAILER

*The Complete Bookstore By Mail*

We pay the postage anywhere in the world. We serve regular customers in all 48 states and in 109 foreign countries. Ninety-five percent of all orders filled by return mail. Your card enclosed in gift books. Write us for free lists of current books, with brief reviews.

## THE BOOKMAILER

BOX 101

MURRAY HILL STATION

NEW YORK 16, NEW YORK

Our office is at

209 East 34th Street, New York 16, N. Y.

## *Comments From Readers Of The Manuscript*

*(Before publication in 1954)*

"*The Life Of John Birch* should be required reading for every American devoted to the preservation of the freedom of his country. The author of *May God Forgive Us* has again produced a hard-punching book showing Communist methods, whether in China, Russia or the United States."

ARTHUR BLISS LANE  
*Former Ambassador to Poland*

\* \* \*

"... you have done a magnificent job and a patriotic service."

FRANK E. HOLMAN  
*Past President, American Bar Association*

\* \* \*

"This book is a strong publication pointing to the evils of communism both within and without our country. It should be read by all Americans who love our country and want to preserve it."

GEORGE E. STRATEMEYER  
*Lt. General, U.S.A., Retired*

\* \* \*

"... I was drawn on to read the book at a sitting, perfectly fascinated with your account ... If the response matches the impact of the book, it will be overwhelming."

REVEREND EDMUND A. OPITZ  
*Spiritual Mobilization, Los Angeles*

\* \* \*

"I don't know how you do it, but this book even smells like China."

W. BRUCE PIRNIE  
*Colonel, U.S.A., Retired and  
Former Acting Major General  
in the Chinese Nationalist Army*

\* \* \*

"Once more Robert Welch uses the tragedy of our immediate past as a constructive warning about our future, if any. For your complacent friends here is a real shot in the arm."

CLARENCE MANION  
*Former Dean, Notre Dame Law School*

\* \* \*

"I wish your books could be placed in every library in the United States. As a matter of fact, they should be required reading in grade school, high school and college."

CLAIRE LEE CHENNAULT  
*Major General, U.S.A.F., Retired*



THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

INCORPORATED

Belmont 78, Massachusetts

February 29, 1960  
Bulletin For March  
Copyright 1960 by The John  
Birch Society, Incorporated

Foreword

The Land we from our fathers had in trust,  
And to our children will transmit, or die;  
This is our maxim, this our piety;  
And God and Nature say that it is just.

Wordsworth

Daily now, and ever more visibly and blatantly, the drive increases -- in both strength and speed -- to surrender this great country we inherited into the destructive hands of a universal tyranny. The repeal of the Connally Reservation would remove one last barrier to the formal surrender of much of our sovereignty. The forthcoming Summit Conference, if conducted as now expected, would -- though less formally and more subtly -- carry this surrender infinitely further. Only a few years thereafter agents of a foreign dictator would be telling our farmers what to sow, our laborers where to work, and our wives how much food they were allowed to have for their children. And those who resisted the tightening bonds would be carted off to live their remaining days in forced-labor camps, of which the most cruel Assyrians would have been unspeakably ashamed.

Many of our leaders of both parties are, for the temporary advancement of their political ambi-

62-1521-

tions, helping with all their clever might to bring about this surrender. All of them know, and some of them intend, that their support of our enemies, in exchange for our enemies' support of themselves, will help to enslave their countrymen. They count on the ignorance, the apathy, the opportunism, and the moral callousness of the American people to make possible the fulfillment of their megalomaniacal dreams. Each is concerned primarily with how to outwit his rivals, by making his dependability, from the Communist point of view, more visible to the Communists and less visible to patriotic Americans. Only once before, we believe -- in Athens, in the time of Alcibiades -- has any nation ever been so mercilessly betrayed by its own most honored citizens.

The conspiracy which endangers us today is tremendously more extensive and more expertly organized than was the Spartan apparatus which took over the Greek world by treachery and deceit. And because of the greater complexity of our modern society, the treasonous forces are at work through a far greater number of channels and media and disguises than the agents and dupes of Sparta needed or could use. But for the same basic reasons it is possible to organize opposition far more rapidly and effectively today, than when Sparta was sending runners with instructions to its cells in Athens and to the governments of its satellite states. Also, because the enemy is at work on so many fronts, there are more points at which we can fight him. He is vulnerable in more places. And this is important when you remember that we have so much greater numbers. The truly patriotic citizens of this country outnumber all of the Communists and their agents and sympathizers and willing dupes in our midst, combined, by at least ten to one. Our problem is: Organization,



direction, dedication.

Which brings us back to the lines from Wordsworth with which this foreword began. For millions of us there is no question about dying for our country and our cause, if and when the occasion demands it. But that is true of tens of millions of other human beings, already behind the iron curtain, for whom death would at present be a vain sacrifice. It is more difficult and more important to sustain the dedication of living and working daily, in all the little ways that are effective only if added to myriads of others. To supply the organization and direction which makes all these efforts cumulative is the duty and objective to which we are giving the best that we have; the dedication is, for each individual, his own consideration and his own responsibility.

#### And Yet More Introduction

While we are still comparatively quite small, we are now already strong enough and effective enough on some minor fronts for the knifing from without, and the carping from within, to have started in earnest. Almost daily we receive from some loyal member a copy of a letter written that member by some critic of our Society, calling your Founder all kinds of names and making all kinds of accusations. What is worse, almost daily now we receive a letter from some good member, violently objecting -- or even, in rare instances, resigning -- because we have somebody else on our COUNCIL, or known to belong to the Society, whom that member does not like.

This is all to be expected, and of course it will get inordinately worse, as we gather size and numbers.

We ask all of you to be as unruffled about these matters as we shall be. As Col. Tom Hutton has pointed out, if the Kremlin had specifically planned every detail of the feuding and fighting among conservatives and between Americanist organizations in this country today, the results could not have been more satisfactory from the Kremlin's point of view. This is partly because much of the feuding, of course, has been subtly instigated by agents of the Kremlin. And it is partly because conservatives, being individualists above all else, are bound to find so many areas of disagreement when they try to work together.

It is our purpose in The John Birch Society to inspire and to coordinate greater efforts on the part of all men and women of good conscience and good will, who want to bring about "less government, more responsibility, and a better world." Our long-range objectives are not negative, but positive. We know, however, that under present circumstances a preponderant part of our efforts must be directed to turning back the Communists, as a prerequisite to all else we wish to accomplish. In neither the defensive nor the constructive part of our program is it necessary, nor even desirable, that all of our members be alike, or think alike on all subjects. One of the very things we are trying to prevent is the conversion of our civilization into a collection of standardized robots.

So we welcome into the Society A, who disagrees with B's ideas of how to fight Communists, and B who dislikes A, and C who looks scornfully at them both; and D who is too rabid, and E who is too restrained, and F who can stand nobody except those who land on what he considers middle ground; and G who wants to get his gun and come out shooting (if we



would only say the word), and H who wants to win the whole struggle solely by educational means, and J who thinks that militant animosity and slow educational procedures must both be subordinated to practical political action; and K who thinks that L is too uncouth, and L who thinks that K is a stuffed shirt, and M who can't tell the difference between them; and N who thinks that every third member of the Society is a Communist infiltrator, and O who thinks any expectation of Communist infiltration is exaggerated and ridiculous, and P who thinks it doesn't matter; and Q who thinks that R is a hound for personal publicity, and R who thinks that Q is a nonentity, and S who is sure that neither is a credit to the Society; and T who thinks that V is too bossy and V who thinks T is too mousy, and parliamentary W who thinks that even lunch should be eaten according to Roberts' Rules Of Order; and X who thinks that Y is too much of a sinner, and Y who thinks that X is too much of a saint, and Z who wants to spend too much of his time worrying about somebody else's religion instead of his own.

You will note, gentle reader, that U and I were left out of the above list. That is because U, of course, are guilty of none of these distracting or disturbing attitudes; and because I, with so much of the responsibility for the ultimate effectiveness of The John Birch Society, must -- within the limits of honor and of safety -- be tolerant of them all. We do not even want to discourage the complaints, for out of a bushel of overdrawn fears and prejudices and accusations we are bound to find now and then the grains of truthful warning which we need. We may be slower to move than is liked by some who make charges or air their suspicions. While we are sure that other members will consider us too drastic in the use of our rights of expulsion, if and when we do become con-

vinced that charges are justified. But we shall do our utmost to get members of The John Birch Society, from A to Z, to work together for the purposes of the Society, regardless of how, on the outside, they may feel about each other. We shall insist on loyalty to the Society while any person is a member, without concerning ourselves as to what that person says about the Society, or about your Founder, after he or she resigns from membership. We have and want, absolutely no control over or responsibility for the actions of anybody, except as a member of The John Birch Society, and then only with the frequently confirmed understanding that the same anybody is free to resign from the Society at any time.

So, to return to the major point. Fuss and feud and criticize each other if you must, but do not let it interfere with your own work for the Society. Report to me all of the horrible things you will increasingly be hearing about your Founder, if you think it is worth while, but put no credence in them, no matter the source from which they come -- or resign from the Society if you do. We shall have no time to refute smears, or to explain and justify all of our actions, or to smooth out ideological or personal differences between our members. We have a job to be done. It is a man's job which will not get done if we act like children. And -- to repeat once again -- we are not just going through a lot of motions, but do mean business every step of the way.

\* \* \*

*The above is simply an exact reproduction of the beginning of the 24-page bulletin of The John Birch Society for the month of March. If you would like to know more about us, we invite you to read our self-introduction on the pages that follow.*



THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY was founded, in Indianapolis, on December 9, 1958.

Its founder and present head is Robert Welch, of whom biographical notes are given at Page 14 of this brochure.

Its top governing body, under the Founder, is the COUNCIL, which was formed in December, 1959 and held its first meeting in Chicago, on January 9, 1960. The men constituting the COUNCIL are listed and identified on Pages 15 and 16.

The Society operates largely through local chapters, usually of between ten and twenty members each. Merely being patriotic or anti-Communist is not a sufficient qualification for membership. Because of our basic objectives (which will be more fully explained further along), we must have associated with us, now and in the future, only men and women of good will, good conscience, and religious ideals. For we shall strive to set an example, by dedication, integrity, and purpose -- in word and deed -- which our children's children may follow without hesitation.

We now have, as of the day this is written, from one to twenty such local chapters in each of the following states: Maine, New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, Virginia, South Carolina, Georgia, Florida, Louisiana, Tennessee, Texas, Michigan, Illinois, Wisconsin, Iowa, California, Oregon, and Washington. We also have a Home Chapter, which maintains contact with its members only by mail. There are now members of this Home Chapter in all but a few of our states, and the roll includes several hundred of the most influential men and women in our country. Also, proba-

bly half of our new members first come into the Society as members of the Home Chapter, and are then transferred into local chapters which they themselves help to form, or which are formed by others in their community.

For taking the lead in establishing chapters, and for the supervision and guidance needed to keep them functioning most effectively, we have salaried staff men, called Coordinators. We also have, in many areas, men and women with other jobs who devote large parts of their time and energy to serving The John Birch Society as Volunteer Coordinators. The Society is now represented by such Coordinators and Volunteer Coordinators in about twenty states. We shall appoint Coordinators in the other thirty states, and increase their number in the areas which are at present too thinly covered, as fast as our growth and resources will permit.

We now have one Major Coordinator, supervising the activities of Coordinators and Volunteer Coordinators in the ten southern states. We shall add further Major Coordinators, and otherwise increase our organizational strength, from the bottom up, as rapidly as we can afford it and to whatever extent it seems wise to do so. Neither the list of our members, of either local chapters or the Home Chapter, nor their number, is ever given out to anybody. But during the fifteen months since The John Birch Society was founded its growth has been sure and solid. We expect that growth to continue, with increasing speed and momentum, until we have the million members -- of fervent patriotism and unassailable character -- which is our goal.

\* \* \*



THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY is named in honor of one of the greatest young men that America has produced.

John Birch was a Christian missionary, from a farm near Macon, Georgia, who was in China when we entered World War II. His heroism, accomplishments, and nobility of character were to make of him a legend which the Communists could not allow to live.

On July 4, 1942, John Birch officially joined General Chennault's forces in Chungking as a volunteer. He organized Chennault's intelligence service, rose to the rank of Captain in the United States Army, and served with unsurpassable bravery and brilliance throughout the war. He was frequently referred to, by both his associates and superiors, as the most important man in our forces struggling against the Japanese in China.

Ten days after V - J day, while in uniform, on a peaceful and official mission for our government, John Birch was brutally murdered in cold blood by our "allies," the Chinese Communists. This was on August 25, 1945. He thus became probably the first American casualty in that third World War, between the Communists and the ever-shrinking "free world," which is still being waged against us fifteen years later; a relentless war of which there is no end in sight.

You have probably never heard of John Birch. This is simply because the Communists in Washington planned it that way. It took five years of persistent and determined effort on the part of his parents, aided by Senator Knowland and many other good patriots, to pierce the blanket of oblivion which had been so brazenly thrown over his life and death by Communist sympathizers in our government. As the Saturday Evening Post pointed out, in a long edi-

torial on January 22, 1955, based on The Life Of John Birch by this writer: "Amazingly, there were in Washington responsible officials who were willing to suppress news of the murder of an American officer, apparently to prevent the American people from rising in their wrath and vetoing further appeasement of communism."

John Birch was killed by typical Communist tactics, as a part of typical Communist strategy, in a typical Communist-style war -- a continuous undeclared war in which our enemies observe no rules of international law, of civilization, or of human decency. He commanded no armies, headed no government, converted no nations to his creed. His impact would have been of transient memory and comparatively small importance, had not that impact occurred at a time and in a way to supply particulars from which momentous generalizations can properly be projected. With his death and in his death the battle lines were drawn, in a struggle from which either Communism or Christian-style civilization must emerge with one completely triumphant and the other completely destroyed.

Partly for these reasons, but even more because John Birch -- in all of his short but outstanding career -- so typified the best of America, we have named our organization in his memory. If we rediscover some of our sounder spiritual values in the example of his life, recharge our determination from the spark of his courage, and learn essential truths about our enemy from the lesson of his murder, then his death at twenty-six ceases to be a tragedy. For in a full lifetime he could not have accomplished more.

\* \* \*



THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY is a group of Americans who have voluntarily joined together:

- (1) To combat more effectively the evil forces which now threaten our country, our lives, and our civilization.
- (2) To prevail upon our fellow citizens to start pulling out of the deepening morass of collectivism, and then climb up the mountain to higher levels of individual freedom and responsibility than man has ever achieved before.
- (3) To restore, with brighter lustre and deeper conviction, the faith-inspired morality, the spiritual sense of values, and the ennobling aspirations, on which our western civilization has been built. The long-range objective of the Society has been summarized as less government, more responsibility, and a better world.

We are digging far more deeply into the problems we face, however, and building far more solidly in our coordinated effort to overcome the destructive forces around us, than can be indicated by the brief outline of our purposes given above. A more complete presentation of the background, methods, and purposes of The John Birch Society has now been given to selected small groups of leaders in different parts of the country, in full two-day meetings, more than twenty times since the Society was founded.

This presentation is available in tape form, wherever we have Coordinators to play back the tape recordings. There are now films available, of a part of the presentation, in some areas. But the most readily accessible form of the full presentation is in the Blue



Book of The John Birch Society, which we brought out quietly by ourselves a few months ago because we have not wanted the publicity of commercial publication.

In this presentation we have attempted: (1) To outline the nature and the frightening advance of the threats against our nation, our religion, and our civilization; (2) to evaluate these dangers, and place them in their proper perspective, against the backdrop of world history and the rise of western civilization; (3) to set forth a positive philosophy and program to which men of good will, religious ideals, and humane traditions may rally with confidence and determination; (4) to offer leadership which can make the dedication of such men and women more constructive and more fruitful; and (5) to describe in detail the organization, function, and procedures of The John Birch Society.

Since defeat of the Communist conspiracy overshadows all other objectives at the present time, our action program for the near future breaks down into ten categories: (1) Dissemination of Americanist books and pamphlets as widely as possible; (2) increasing the circulation and readership of the best Americanist periodicals; (3) enlarging the audiences of Americanist commentators and newscasters on radio and television; (4) making more effective use -- through better planning, direction, and coordination -- of the weapon of letter writing; and (5) organizing Americanist fronts for many different purposes, including the widespread use of petitions in some instances; (6) waking up the American people to the seriousness of our danger by exposing, wherever possible, the pro-Communist activities of Communist sympathizers; (7) making it more difficult for hundreds of pro-Communist speakers to appear before thousands of unsuspecting audiences; (8) making Americanist speakers available for audiences which are



now, simply by default, at the mercy of pro-Communist lecturers; (9) supplying encouragement and renewed hope and determination to anti-Communist refugee groups throughout our country; and (10) carrying on an educational campaign on the political front, so that our members will understand better - and can help their fellow citizens to understand better -- the issues and candidates offered to them by both political parties.

We are already seriously engaged in about half of these areas of activity. And we shall expand our efforts into every one of the ten fields just as rapidly as we can.

\* \* \*

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY invites you:

(1) To buy The Life Of John Birch, referred to on Page 10, if you would like to know more about this heroic young American. Paperbound edition, 88 pages, \$1.00, postage paid.

(2) To buy the Blue Book of The John Birch Society, if you want to know more about what we are trying to do, and how, and why. Plain cardboard cover, plastic link binding, 186 pages, \$2.00, postage paid.

(3) To submit an application for membership in either the Home Chapter or a local chapter of The John Birch Society, whenever you are convinced of the sincerity of our purpose, the value of our program, and the integrity of our leadership. A blank for that purpose, with the dues schedule printed on it, is enclosed. If accepted, you will become one of a growing legion of truly dedicated men and women who are determined to save for our children and their children some semblance of the glorious country and humane civilization which we ourselves inherited.



## ROBERT WELCH

Born December 1, 1899, on a farm in Chowan County, North Carolina. Ancestry, full of farmers and Baptist preachers, traceable to one Miles Welch who came to this country from Wales in 1720. Educated at University of North Carolina (four years), United States Naval Academy (two years), Harvard Law School (two years), and school of hard knocks (about forty years). Came to Boston from North Carolina in 1919. Has lived in Belmont for the past twenty years. Has one wife, two sons, a Golden Retriever dog, and fourteen golf clubs—none of which he understands, but all of which he loves.

Has spent a great part of his life getting from where he was to where he wasn't, for reasons which seemed worthwhile at the time. This includes two trips to England specifically to study the effects of the Socialist government; one trip around the world; and fairly extensive additional traveling in North America, South America, Europe, and Asia.

Author of *THE ROAD TO SALESMANSHIP*, published in 1941 by the Ronald Press Company; of *MAY GOD FORGIVE US*, published in 1952 by Henry Regnery Company; and of *THE LIFE OF JOHN BIRCH*, published in 1954 by Henry Regnery Company. Is editor and publisher of *AMERICAN OPINION*, a monthly magazine which reviews current events and appraises contemporary leaders on the world-wide stage. Has done much public speaking, and will climb on a soapbox to argue against the evils of socialism whenever anybody will listen.

Has been in the candy manufacturing business all of his adult life. Was for many years Vice President, in charge of sales and advertising, of one of the larger candy manufacturing companies, with factories on both coasts, and of its subsidiary sales corporations in various cities throughout the country. Is a director of one bank, and has served as a director of several other business corporations. . .

Was a member of the board of directors of the National Association of Manufacturers for seven years. Also served three years as a Regional Vice President of NAM, and two years as chairman of its Educational Advisory Committee. Has been active in many other business associations and committees, and in many community and educational activities — including service on the Belmont School Committee.

As of January 1, 1957, Mr. Welch gave up most of his business responsibilities — and most of his income — in order to devote practically all of his time and energy to the anti-Communist cause. Believes that the only thing the Communists now fear is having the truth become widely known, to the American people, about the methods and the progress of the whole international Communist conspiracy. For his readers or his listeners, Mr. Welch simply puts together clear but separate facts about the Communist advance, so that their significance becomes more apparent. Through this method he is trying to wake up as many of his fellow citizens as he can, to the horror and the imminence of the dangers which they face.



THE COUNCIL  
of  
THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

Each of the men listed below, who make up our COUNCIL, came into the Society solely as an individual, representing in no way any other group or organization. But simply for identification, we have given against each name the briefest line or two concerning other connections, or past accomplishments.

Dr. N. E. Adamson, Jr. A Boston surgeon. Assistant Medical Director of New England Mutual Life Insurance Company. Youngest member of the COUNCIL.

Mr. Thomas J. Anderson. Editor and Publisher of FARM AND RANCH, farm paper with 1,300,000 circulation.

Hon. T. Coleman Andrews. Former Commissioner of Internal Revenue of the United States. Now Chairman of the Board of two large (and affiliated) insurance companies.

Mr. John T. Beatty. Chicago business man. Former President of the Chicago Employers Association. Also author of several biographies.

Hon. Spruille Braden. Former Ambassador to several countries, former Assistant Secretary of State. A top authority on Latin American affairs.

Col. Laurence E. Bunker. Former Personal Aide to General Douglas MacArthur for 6½ years — during the Japanese occupation, the Korean War, and MacArthur's early months in this country after his return.

Mr. Ralph E. Davis. President of General Plant Protection Corporation and affiliated companies, Los Angeles. (We believe this is the largest business of its kind in the United States.) An ex-Marine with the patriotic courage that made the Marines justly famous.

Dr. S. M. Draskovich. Author of *Tito, Moscow's Trojan Horse*. Editor-in-chief of SRPSKA BORBA (*The Serbian Struggle*), a weekly newspaper, published in Chicago, with sizable circulation in thirty-six countries. His father Milorad Draskovich, many times a Cabinet minister in Serbia before World War I, was assassinated by a Communist in 1921 for having led the Yugoslav Parliament to outlaw the Communist Party.

Mr. Wm. J. Grede. President of Grede Foundries, Inc., Milwaukee. Former President of the National Association of Manufacturers and former head of the International YMCA.

Mr. E. P. Hamilton. President, Hamilton Manufacturing Company, Two Rivers, Wisconsin. Former President, Wisconsin Manufacturers Association. Active on many important boards, and an outstanding citizen of his state.

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr. President, Cherokee Mills, Sevierville, Tennessee. Author of *One Man's Fight For Freedom*. A very successful manufacturer and a very dedicated patriot.

Dr. Granville F. Knight. An outstanding physician and public-spirited citizen of Santa Barbara, California. Author of many scientific papers, especially on the misuse of chemicals and adulterants in foods.

Mr. Fred C. Koch. President, Rock Island Oil and Refining Company, Wichita, Kansas. Strong supporter of many patriotic movements, and especially of right-to-work legislation.

Mr. Alfred Kohlberg. The "China Lobby" in person, according to the smears of the Left. A very successful importer who has devoted a terrific amount of energy and money to fighting the Communists, especially in the Far East. How highly Alfred Kohlberg is regarded by conservative leaders in America was emphatically demonstrated at the dinner in the Waldorf Astoria, given

him on his seventy-third birthday, which was sponsored by General A. C. Wedemeyer, Styles Bridges, Herbert Hoover, Barry Goldwater, Francis A. Walter, and three or four more of his special friends.

Dean Clarence Manion. Former Dean of Notre Dame Law School. In 1953 was appointed, by President Eisenhower, chairman of a Special Commission on Intergovernmental Relations. He later resigned rather than stop crusading for the Bricker Amendment. Founded the Manion Forum, which now reaches a radio audience of many millions every week.

Mr. Frank E. Masland, Jr. President of C. H. Masland & Sons (carpet manufacturers), Carlisle, Pennsylvania. A leader in his community and state, who serves as chairman, vice-chairman, or active member of the boards of a great many educational, philanthropic, and industrial organizations. Also famous as an explorer of out-of-the-way places in the world.

Mr. W. B. McMillan. President of the Hussman Refrigerator Company, St. Louis, Missouri. An outstanding business leader. Was, next to your Founder, the first member of The John Birch Society.

Mr. Adolphe Menjou. Famous actor of screen, stage, and television. Also famous as an anti-Communist patriot.

Dr. Revilo P. Oliver. Professor of Classical Languages and Literatures at the University of Illinois. Recognized as one of the very top scholars in America in his field. Now becoming rapidly recognized, also, as one of the ablest speakers on the Americanist side.

Mr. Cola G. Parker. Former President of the Kimberly-Clark Company. Former President of the National Association of Manufacturers. At present, United States Employer Delegate — a stoutly patriotic and embattled delegate — to the International Labor Organization.

Mr. Louis Ruthenburg. Chairman of the Board of Serval, Inc., Evansville, Indiana. Long a leader in and fighter for conservative causes.

Mr. James Simpson, Jr. A former conservative Republican Congressman. Now President of Simpson Estates, Chicago, and with many business interests.

Mr. Robert W. Stoddard. President of Wyman-Gordon Company, Worcester, Massachusetts. On board of directors of several of New England's largest businesses, including First National Bank of Boston. Has just served two terms as President of Associated Industries of Massachusetts. Active on the boards of many educational and philanthropic institutions.

Lt. General Charles B. Stone, III, U.S.A.F. (Retired). Chairman of the Board and Chief Executive Officer of United States Leasing Corporation, San Francisco. Succeeded General Claire Chennault as Commander of our 14th Airforce, in China, near end of World War II, and is lifetime Honorary Chairman of the 14th Airforce Association.

Mr. Ernest G. Swigert. President of the Hyster Company, Portland, Oregon, with other factories in the Midwest, South America, and Amsterdam, Holland. Former President of the National Association of Manufacturers, and a most dedicated American patriot.

The basic function of the COUNCIL is threefold: (1) To show the stature and standing of the leadership of the Society; (2) to give your Founder the benefit of the COUNCIL's advice and guidance, both in procedural or organizational matters, and in substantive matters of policy; and (3) to select, with absolute and final authority, a Successor to myself as head of The John Birch Society, if and when an accident, "suicide," or anything sufficiently fatal is arranged for me by the Communists — or I simply die in bed of old age and a cantankerous disposition. And we believe that both the growth and the effectiveness of our Society will be greatly helped by the experience, ability, and resolute purpose of so strong a governing body. RW



THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

INCORPORATED

Belmont 78, Massachusetts

June 1, 1960

Bulletin For June

Copyright 1960 by The John  
Birch Society, Incorporated

Foreword

"Say not the struggle naught availeth,  
The labor and the wounds are vain,  
The enemy faints not, nor faileth,  
And as things have been they remain. "  
Arthur Hugh Clough

The above quatrain has been quoted many times, since it was written over a hundred years ago, by many men to many groups and for many causes. But we can think of no occasion and no audience for which its encouragement was more appropriate than it is for the growing army of resolute Americanists, in their struggle with the Communists today.

For while we should never deceive ourselves, and the picture as a whole grows darker by the hour, neither should we disregard the shafts of sunshine that do sometimes break briefly through the clouds. The postponement of the summit conference was certainly one such glint of light, as we shall try soon to impress on any doubters in our midst. And the patriotic Americans in this country had a great deal to do with bringing about that "consummation devoutly to be wished." They have reason to rejoice. There was a retreat by the enemy, no matter how cleverly disguised, and our own labor of the last many weeks was anything but in vain.

62-1521-



### General Comment

For this "postponement" of "six to eight months" was exactly what we had been demanding. It is true that the President of the United States should never have gone to Paris at all. It is true that the loss of prestige by the United States, and the buildup of Soviet prestige, through the "humiliated" Eisenhower's reactions to the bullying Khrushchev's bluster, were important gains for the Kremlin. But these results were still immeasurably less disastrous than would have been the huge "concessions for the sake of peace" which had clearly been contemplated as the function of the meeting.

The Communist influences in this country, which had so industriously promoted the "Summit," had carefully arranged to have many "feelers" leaked out, and "trial balloons" surreptitiously let loose, as to what they expected to accomplish there. This included such brazen steps of American surrender as the sell-out of Berlin, the betrayal of West Germany into some kind of forced confederation with East Germany as a parallel "sovereign power," and negotiated arrangements for disarmament leading to the presence of at least token Russian armed forces -- or "United Nations" armed forces -- on American soil. And not only did the nationwide protest against these proposed steps become too vigorous and too visible for carrying them out to be strategically wise, but there was an uprising of mammoth proportions against the very idea of our participation in any summit conference at all.

Our members can certainly take much pride and satisfaction in the part played by The John Birch Society in this achievement. About six hundred thousand of our postcards, "Stay Away -- U. S. A.," went into the mails. (This was a far cry from the ten million we had suggested as a goal, but was a significant



volume, nevertheless.) The editorial message on those cards was reprinted in full (as a letter to the editor, or as an actual editorial, or otherwise) in papers with a total circulation of about three million, to our knowledge; in how many more we do not know. And our members flooded the White House with letters and telegrams besides.

Of course the DAR and many other good organizations were vehemently opposing the "Summit." Senators Bridges and Goldwater, and other members of Congress, had been outspoken in their objection. Dean Manion had devoted one especially strong and effective broadcast specifically to the battle, as we pointed out in our last bulletin. Many other patriotic broadcasters voiced their vigorous objections to the conference. Colonel Hutton's Handbook For The Summit was given considerable circulation by The Minute Women and other groups and individuals. There were so many additional forces at work that it is hard even to guess just how appreciable was our contribution to bringing about the postponement (though some of the other opposition was also inspired by our early and determined campaign of protest). We simply do not know how much of a hand we had in calling off the game.

But the matter of credit to be claimed is unimportant. What counts is that all of the patriotic efforts together did bring about a "postponement" of the conference. The Communists, in Washington as well as Moscow, decided that they did not dare go through with their plans as to what the "Summit" was to accomplish, in the face of so widespread and articulate a resentment as had been disclosed on the part of the American people. So it seemed better to "postpone" the conference altogether.

That the Communists, having made this decision,

would find some way to seize the initiative, twist appearances, save face, and make it seem that the conference had been postponed for their reasons, was to be expected. That in doing so they would use the occasion to salvage whatever gain they could out of the situation was inevitable. And that our government could be jockeyed and maneuvered, by the Communist influences which now control it, into going through every necessary motion of designed "blunders" and self-abasement, to help the Soviets put over their play, was as certain as that Washington will keep on subsidizing Castro.

Even if the U-2 plane had not been deliberately flown into Russian Territory at this particular time, and brought down there, as a part of the act (which seems almost certain), few things could be basically more absurd -- and laughable -- than Khrushchev's swelling his veins in anger and going through his bombastic gestures over so trivial an incident. With Soviet spies and agents crawling out of the woodwork all over the United States, Khrushchev's corny gesticulations over this ethereal lone ranger would have been an excellent performance by the mimic in a burlesque show, as everybody knew.

What kept the whole world from laughing uproariously at so ridiculous a pose was the combination of three factors which are almost always present on any international scene today. First was the consciousness of Khrushchev's immense cruelty. A man that cruel, no matter how ludicrous he may become, is never really funny. Second was the willingness of our officials to cringe and crawl to just the right extent, show a guilty confusion, and otherwise play up to Khrushchev's act as if it were real. And the third was the Communist influence over so large a part of the press and other mass media of communication even on this



side of the Iron Curtain. Khrushchev could count in advance, for instance, on a vast majority of the American newspapers to react solemnly to his pretenses. Whether the reaction was one of avowed anger against the Soviets, or of attempted "understanding," or of solicitousness over the "unfortunate" results of our "blunder," hardly mattered at all to Khrushchev and his fellow Communists in Moscow, Paris, and Washington -- so long as most of the reactions took seriously his exaggerated nonsense.

With the full cooperation, therefore, of Messrs. Herter, Dulles, et alia, besides our President, Khrushchev chalked up the following gains: (1) The whole world was led to see, and to believe, that a "summit conference" now and henceforth depends on the willingness of Khrushchev and the Soviets to participate, rather than on the consent of Eisenhower as in the past; (2) the Soviets have now risen above, and the United States fallen below, even any "big two" status; and the ostensible parity between them (which the Soviets had been so proud to parade only a few years ago) has now given way to a situation in which the pretended balance is between Khrushchev on one side, and Eisenhower, Macmillan, de Gaulle, and the governments they represent, all tossed in together as the opposing weight on the other side; (3) the American people have been angered, and psychologically conditioned, to a willingness to spend even more billions on wasteful measures of a phoney defense against an external enemy, when our whole danger is from infiltration by that enemy and treason right in our midst; and (4) the American people, patriotically stirred, will now again rally enthusiastically in support of those very same leaders whose treason, misguided idealism, and stupidity (in fluid and undetermined combinations) have already brought us to so frightening a pass.

Since prestige and emotional attitudes, both artificially manufactured, are far more important weapons to the Communists than either bombs or butter, the above steps of Soviet progress in the now Lukewarm War added up to a considerable attainment by the agents of the Kremlin. But they still constituted a comparatively small price for us to pay, to avoid the overwhelming disaster that had been in store for us. As made evident by many signs, including Khrushchev's report to his "friends" in East Germany, the debacle at the summit was a decided victory for the anti-Communists, all the way from Adenauer to The John Birch Society. And it was important.

#### An Aside To The Squeamish

We thoroughly understand, and sympathize with, the lack of enthusiasm expressed by some of our members for our message to the President, "If you go, don't come back!" Our own preference certainly, at all times, is to be "squeamish" ourselves, in our careful concern for the niceties of language, the amenities of respect for office, and even what Will Durant once called a decent regard for the little hypocrisies of mankind. It is one of our many sorrows that, in fighting the evil forces which now threaten our civilization, for us to be too civilized is unquestionably to be defeated. We can never let down one inch in our morals, no matter what the need; but a sacrifice in manners for the sake of forcefulness is quite another thing. And we believed that a barrage of these messages, by telegram, postcard, and letter, proving to the guiding influences that were pushing the President into this summit sell-out just how vigorous and determined was much of the opposition, might be the final hammer blow on a very hot iron to bend it in the right direction.



In the present instance we regret having asked for the sending of these messages, but for one reason only. Which is that apparently they were unnecessary. This was a last-minute activity. And in retrospect it is evident that at least a tentative decision to call off the "Summit" (after the face-saving-for-the-Communists dramatic performance already discussed) had already been reached before those messages could have begun to arrive in Washington. If we could have known or guessed that these messages would be superfluous, of course we would have rested on the huge volume of entirely polite protest which we had poured on Washington during the preceding months.

The incident raises a question, however, that is of more than passing interest. And despite the complaint of one of our very good members (and Chapter Leader of a very strong chapter) that she would like "less oratory and more requests for action" in these bulletins, we think one or two brief paragraphs on that general question may be well worth while.

For in charting the course of the Society we are at all times torn between two forces tugging in opposite directions -- or tugging in the same direction at very different speeds. Many of our members want us to be much more outspoken or even belligerent in our statements and letters, and much more positive and aggressive in our resistance to the continued betrayal of our country to the Communists. Others wish us to be even more restrained than we usually are. They want us to do our fighting on so respectable -- and respectful -- a level (where nobody would ever think of calling a spade anything less dignified than an agricultural implement), that we cannot possibly antagonize any of that vast majority of people who are patriotic at heart but simply do not know the score. We give careful thought at all times to both points of view.

As to the final messages opposing the "Summit," we were persuaded to take a strong line by three considerations: (1) The betrayal of our interests by our government was becoming so pronounced and so visible that we wanted to set the pace, if possible, for a more forceful resistance by patriots everywhere; (2) the intended surrender of large slices of American independence at the summit conference was going to be so disastrous that drastic and dramatic objection seemed to be in order; and (3), because these two points were so well recognized, a number of our members were already doing what we were about to ask, on their own initiative. (That is, they were adding to their post cards or letters, urging the President not to go to the summit conference, the blunt demand that if he did go after all, he should not come back. We simply condensed the diverse phrasing of these various requests into what we thought was an effective slogan.) We felt that giving more articulate expression to what was already so widespread a feeling of resentment and objection was a potent tactic.

Of course we were aware that we would get some criticism, even from our own members. Actually it was far less than we had expected, although of course many members, who did not approve, refrained from telling us so, we are sure. Of those who did write or telephone, or send comments back through our Coordinators, however, the number applauding the slogan ran about four to one against those who disliked it. What surprised us more was that it was our most influential and best informed members, in general, who showed the most enthusiasm for the use of this unmistakable directness in expression of our patriotic alarm.

So we hope that those good members who did feel that this message was "in poor taste," or "politically a mistake," will bear with us this time, in the assur-



ance that we do not intend to "run wild," nor to indulge in any dramatics just for the excitement. On the other hand, all of us must face up to the fact that the enemy is now becoming bolder all of the time, is gradually closing in on us on every front, and wants nothing more than for us always to be too gentle, too respectable, too unwilling to come to grips with realities, and hence too late in our opposition. That has happened in every country which the Communists have taken over. If we occasionally become a bit rugged, therefore, in the way we try to use whatever strength we have, let us remind you from the Blue Book that this is not a cream-puff war in which we are engaged, the stakes are not those of a pillow fight, and we do mean business every step of the way.

#### Agenda For The Month -- Act One

And goodness knows we need to be realistic. For let's not forget that even the abortive summit conference produced huge gains for the Soviets and losses for ourselves. All we have been rejoicing about, in the earlier pages of this bulletin, was that we had helped to hold down the Communist gains and Americanist losses, and to make them far less staggering than they would have been if the "Summit" had come off as scheduled.

And unfortunately the most important news to Americans over the past few weeks has probably not been what was happening in Paris at all, nor even what was happening in Korea or Turkey, but what was happening right in San Francisco. The Communist-inspired student riots there, against the hearings of the House Un-American Activities Committee, not only bear a marked resemblance to those that began the purposeful lawlessness and pressure that overthrew Syngman Rhee, and to

the similar student riots that began the trouble in Turkey, and not only were they all unquestionably a part of the same basic planning by some nerve center of the conspiracy; but those in San Francisco were the first riots of this kind on American soil. For the first time the Communists have felt strong enough, and far enough advanced in their preparation and in their secret control of the reins of power in this country, to let it become visible that "what can't happen here" is already beginning to happen -- on a small scale as yet, and undoubtedly with deceptive periods of quiescent retreat to follow, but with unmistakable certainty and purpose nevertheless.

The very first task to which we should turn our hands this month, therefore, is support of the House Committee on Un-American Activities. And we think that support should take at least five forms. As perhaps the most helpful way of making this multiple request thoroughly clear, we submit herewith the five separate letters which your Founder intends personally to sign and mail.

1. Hon. Francis E. Walter  
House Office Building  
Washington, D. C.

Dear Congressman Walter:

This letter will, I am sure, be one of a great many written you by patriotic Americans as a result of the rioting aimed at your Committee in San Francisco.

Villification and smears of yourself and of the other members of HUAC, including the members of the Subcommittee which actually met in California, are something to which all of you, unfortunately, are



already too well accustomed. The insulting ranting and obstructionist tactics of brazen Communist liars and traitors within your Committee rooms are something with which you are all too familiar. But when Communist-inspired riots attack your Committee's hearings so viciously, from the outside, as to bog down or prevent the normal functioning of such a duly established committee of the United States Congress, it is time for a lot of good Americans to come to their senses as to what is now starting to happen in our own country -- as it has already happened in so many others. And we think that both our friends and our enemies may be surprised at how many of us there are who will make our voices heard.

There are rumors that you are thinking of resigning as Chairman of HUAC. Let us beg of you not to do so. You have already stood more than your share of the abuse, and carried more than your share of the load, that fall on the shoulders of any outstanding American patriot today. But we plead with you to keep right on in your present position, despite every discouragement, doing all that you can to awaken the American people and to save the United States. We think there are both more who will help you, and more who will thank you, than you have had any reason so far to believe.

I am writing both my own Congressman and my local newspaper on this same matter today, and shall urge my friends to do the same.

Gratefully and sincerely,  
(Signed) Robert Welch

2. Mr. Richard Arens  
House Committee On Un-American Activities  
House Office Building  
Washington, D. C.

Dear Mr. Arens:

Just a brief note to let you know that I am today writing my own Congressman and my local newspaper in support of HUAC and all it is trying to do. And I am urging my friends to do the same.

Don't let them get you down. The American people may be just starting to rise up. And goodness knows it is time.

With my most earnest thanks for everything you are doing to save our country, and with all good wishes, I am

(Signed) Sincerely,  
Robert Welch

3. Mr. James Roosevelt  
House Office Building  
Washington, D. C.

Sir:

Parallel to your movement to abolish the House Committee on Un-American Activities, a number of us would like to see a movement started to abolish James Roosevelt -- and to bury his public career under a mountain of contempt.

Why don't you lead both movements? It would give you reams of desired publicity, and certainly would not make you look any sillier than you usually do



anyway,

(Signed)

Not yours, truly  
Robert Welch

4. Hon. Edith Nourse Rogers  
House Office Building  
Washington, D. C.

Dear Mrs. Rogers:

You and I probably disagree on many things, but you are one member of our Congress about whose fervent patriotism there never has been, nor could be, the slightest question. And we are now fast reaching a point in this country where plain patriotism outweighs all other considerations.

You are well aware, I know, of the insulting ranting and obstructionist tactics of brazen Communist liars and traitors that are all too common within the committee-room hearings of the House Committee on Un-American Activities. But when Communist-inspired riots, <sup>as</sup> begun in San Francisco, attack these hearings so viciously, from the outside, as to bog down or prevent the normal functioning of such a duly established committee of the United States Congress, it is time for all Congressmen who love their country to come to the support of HUAC more aggressively, more openly, more effectively, and with more determination than ever before.

I hope that you will take the initiative in doing so. And let me assure you that there are, to my personal knowledge, a great many actively good citizens in your district who will be equally determined in your

support, if you do.

With kind regards and all good wishes, I am

(Signed) Sincerely,  
Robert Welch

5. Editor, The Boston Globe  
Boston, Massachusetts

Dear Sir:

It is perfectly obvious that the same Communist nerve center, in the Kremlin or somewhere, planned the recent Communist-inspired student-led riots in Korea, in Turkey, and in San Francisco.

What "can't happen here" is already beginning to happen -- on a small scale as yet, and undoubtedly with deceptive periods of quiescent retreat to follow, but with unmistakable certainty and purpose nevertheless.

What are you as a responsible newspaper going to do about it? One thing you can do is to give your vigorous editorial support to the House Committee on Un-American Activities, at which the riots in San Francisco were aimed. I hope you will.

(Signed) Sincerely,  
Robert Welch

Of course these letters should serve you only as guides or samples, and should be followed, as to either substance or form, only to whatever extent you wish. Especially in the case of your letter to your Congressman, in place of my letter to Mrs. Rogers (who is my Congressman),



you should adjust both thought and wording to the circumstances -- the record and outlook of your Representative, as well as your relations with him. And in the case of Congressman James Roosevelt, you may wish to find some entirely different way to try to discourage his continued attacks on HUAC.

But the main point is for you to write all five of the letters indicated, or more -- as to more than one newspaper, for instance (changing your wording if both papers are in the same town). For the very essence of the activities of The John Birch Society should be the thoroughness with which we do a job.

If there is any letter to be written or action of any kind to be taken, as requested by us, that goes against the conscience of any member, of course that member should refrain. Which principle, clearly established by us from the very beginning, ought to be a sufficient answer to any sincere critics who are "disturbed" by the "dictatorial" nature of our organization. For even if a member's conscience too repeatedly tells him not to comply with our requests, in too large a proportion of instances, nothing more serious can result than his willing or requested resignation from membership -- with a pro rata refund of any dues paid in advance. And -- to repeat here what we shall probably repeat many times in the future -- goodness knows we want no personal responsibility for what anybody outside of the Society does; nor do we want anybody to join the Society unless he clearly wishes to do so, nor to remain a member one minute longer than he desires.

Also, we know that, due to age, illness, or occupation, some of our Home Chapter members simply cannot carry out many of our assignments, and that was thoroughly understood when they joined. But -- of all other loyal

members, where no objection of conscience is involved, we do ask and expect a large measure of compliance with our requests. While conscientious objection may be a legitimate excuse, indifference or procrastination is not. For only if we move as a body, through the coordination as to both timing and substance of the efforts of all of our members, can we become a force, out of all proportion to our actual size, for turning back the collectivists and then accomplishing our more positive aims. So please do your part, beginning with the five or more letters requested in this section -- and going on to the many and equally important requests outlined in other sections of this bulletin, and of future bulletins.

#### Agenda For The Month -- Act Two

Now that the summit conference, on which we concentrated our major effort for so long, is at least temporarily off the slate, let's turn our unceasing attention on another monstrosity bred by Communist purposes, and now being so carefully nourished by "Modern Republicanism." That is American Foreign Aid. The fact that perfectly loyal Americans can accept even the theory of our "foreign aid," much less its subversive implementation and sordid practice, is itself a frightening manifestation of the power of Communist propaganda and of the gullibility (or opportunism) of entirely too many Americans.

Let us repeat -- once again -- that the very idea of American Foreign Aid was dreamed up by Stalin, or by his agents for him. The first seeds of the idea were planted in this country by Earl Browder. The seedling was nourished by Earl Browder, Elger Hiss, Harry Dexter White and other great favorites of Franklin Delano Roosevelt. Even in the very earliest days of "foreign aid," UNRRA money was used primarily to enable Madame Sun Yat-sen in China, Menshikov in Poland, Tito in Yugoslavia, and



other Kremlin agents elsewhere, to herd the Communist sheep into corrals supplied with food, and starve the anti-Communist goats, in their respective countries.

Next came the Marshall Plan, which was inaugurated, with the blessing of the Truman administration, largely by soft-on-Communism Democrats led by Dean Acheson, with the able assistance of that earliest of "modern Republicans," Christian A. Herter. For propaganda reasons they affixed to it the name of that idol of the Left, George Catlett Marshall, who had nothing to do with the whole scheme except for being assigned the job of delivering one speech about it at Harvard.

The truth about the Marshall Plan is not yet popular even with many good Americanists, who still are not willing to admit that -- despite whatever comparatively small amount of good it may have accomplished -- it was basically a brilliant scheme of the Communists to get the United States to do exactly what the Communists wanted us to do, but to do it under the guise of fighting Communism. Among the several major advantages accruing to the Communists from the American foreign-aid program, one of the most important has been the use of Marshall Plan billions to keep socialist governments in power and to enable them to become more socialistic. Actually, it was the most important single force in bringing about that continued and steady advance towards socialism, in most countries on this side of the Iron Curtain, instead of a reversion to the "normalcy" of conservatism which is to be expected after the turmoil of any great war. A case history of what the Marshall Plan did to the economies and the political developments in, for instance, just Belgium or England, will clearly demonstrate that the Communists accomplished, with regard to promoting socialism, exactly what they had planned with this colossal deception in the

first place.

Then the Marshall Plan, which had been presented to the American people by Acheson, Herter and Company as a strictly temporary measure, was metamorphosed into the permanent and more ambitious program which is now called Mutual Security (unless they change the label again before we can get into print). There has probably been only one greater fraud perpetrated on any nation by its own leaders -- again through a combination of treason, misguided idealism and stupidity, in varying proportions -- in all human history. (And, in order not to complicate the present issue, we'll not elaborate here on that even greater deception.) But there is almost certainly one more step to come, in this progression from UNRRA to Marshall Plan to Mutual Security -- unless we can put an end to the whole idiocy before it is too late. That step, long advocated by Christian Herter -- and by Earl Browder before him -- is to be a combined outpouring of aid to the "under-developed" nations by the United States and Soviet Russia, acting in partnership. We imagine the name of the program would be something like "Joint Aid, Monetary And Economic, For Global Peace And Democracy." Which would probably soon get shortened down to JAM For Everybody. You already know who would supply the jam, and you can guess who would take the credit.

The Communists are now fully two-thirds of the way on their long road to total conquest of the whole world. During most of their progress so far they have had nothing to work with but cunning and terror; and the cunning always had to be successful to some extent before the terror could even be utilized. So the cunning had to be brilliant, professional, and painstakingly developed at every turn. But when the Communists asked themselves how on earth the American people could be



beguiled into allowing billions on billions of American taxpayers' money, in the postwar decades, to do precisely those things which the Communists wanted to have done, the answer was comparatively easy, and strictly logical from their point of view. For it involved that exact and complete reversal of the truth which is the key to Communist planning. All that was required was to present and "sell" the whole program to the American people as a means of fighting Communism. The American taxpayer would be willing to make more sacrifices, and to accept more profligacy on the part of his government, for that announced objective than any other. Such a program once firmly established in the American mind as being for that purpose would become more sacrosanct, and more invulnerable to criticism or impervious to truth, than anything else that could be offered the electorate.

Again despite the admonition of "less oratory and more action," we have gone into the above amount of detail because we have wanted all of our members to be as adequately provided with "background information" as is practicable, to give them the feeling of being on more solid ground in all they do to protest a continuation of "foreign aid." And while we are sure that a great many of our members know much more about the subject than we do, it seemed well worth while to share our own conscientious analysis of the whole picture with everybody that is interested. For we shall now ask for an all-out drive to abolish "foreign aid" altogether (with the minor exception noted below). And we probably shall keep right on asking for it until the drive is successful, no matter how long it takes.

For that purpose you need, and we will need, a very brief summary of the main arguments against "foreign aid." So we do our best to that end in the skeletonized presentation offered herewith.

## LET'S END FOREIGN AID

To All Members Of Congress:

The undersigned American citizen respectfully urges the discontinuance of all "foreign aid," except for strictly military assistance to our unquestionably anti-Communist allies, for the following reasons:

1. The whole scheme is of Communist origin, and was designed to accomplish Communist purposes. (See, among other sources, Earl Browder's Teheran, published in 1944.)

2. It was "sold" to the American people, as a means of fighting Communism, by the Communists themselves, with the support of their sympathizers, dupes, and a lot of misguided idealists who swallowed the Communist line. (Among its earliest supporters were Earl Browder, Alger Hiss, and Harry Dexter White.) It has never been opposed by the Communists and their most ardent sympathizers in this country. (And the Communists know what they are doing.)

3. From the very beginning, to the present, large amounts of American foreign-aid funds have been channelled, under specious excuses or arrangements, directly into the hands of known Communists, bent on subverting their respective anti-Communist countries into Communist hands. (Examples: Madam Sun Yat-sen in China, Souphannou Vong in Laos, Rashid Karami in Lebanon, and many others.)

4. It has been used, and is still used, to keep socialist governments in power, and to enable them to become even more socialistic. (Examples: Belgium, England, India, and many others.)

5. American foreign aid is from government, to governments. It thus replaces, and prevents, the free flow and sound use of American private capital and free-enterprise methods abroad.

6. It heavily subsidizes industrial plants abroad,



run as parts of a government-managed economy, so that they can compete unfairly with American free-enterprise plants -- which must pay the very taxes thus used to destroy their own businesses.

7. The huge domestic contracts resulting from American foreign aid are used to bribe or beguile an important segment of our whole business community into "going along with," or actual support of, our own government's policies that lead to socialism.

8. The total wastefulness in administration of the program is beyond any understanding except as, in many instances, a deliberate effort simply to get rid of American money. And the cost of the program, added to the extremely profligate other activities of our government, is an important cause of the inflationary movement that is ruining the value of our currency.

9. With our own national government virtually bankrupt today by any sound accounting, giving away billions of dollars to other nations is an act of criminal irresponsibility.

10. The foreign-aid program is used to make truly anti-Communist governments gradually become more and more dependent on the receipt of these American millions, and then to force on such governments policies which are "soft" on Communism and inimical to their countries' own desires and best interests.

11. It maintains huge hordes of American officials and their families in foreign countries, lording it over the natives, and making us more hated as "imperialists by the dollar" than we would be as actual "imperialists by the sword."

12. Increasingly, brazenly, and with ever more flimsy excuses, our foreign-aid money is supplied directly to outright Communist governments that are our avowed enemies. The pouring of American millions into the coffers of Gomulka of Poland, Tito of Yugoslavia, Sukarno of Indonesia, and a dozen other viceroys of the Kremlin, can only be the result of either treason or

stupidity. And it is time to put an end to both.

Sincerely,  
(Signature)

The petition indicated above will be printed on one side of a "giant" postcard, of which a sample will be enclosed with this bulletin. On the other side of the postcard will be a cartoon, which we believe will be quite effective in dramatizing the fallacy of the whole theoretical excuse for foreign aid. These cards will be available, in any quantity, at the prices printed on them. Also, as in a similar situation in the past, permission is hereby granted to any member of The John Birch Society to reproduce these cards locally, under certain conditions: (1) That the reproduction be in full, and exact (preferably by offset printing so that no errors can creep in); (2) that equally good stock and good printing be provided as used for the original cards; and (3), that such cards, if reproduced locally, not be sold or offered for sale at a profit. (In large quantities our prices would probably be as good as any you could obtain, but for smaller quantities we simply have to charge more, to cover the cost of handling.)

Whether you order the cards from this office, or have a supply printed locally, we ask all of our members to start pouring these messages in on all members of both the House and the Senate, just as promptly and in just as large a volume as you can. Once again we think that the sheer number of such cards arriving in Washington -- and going through the mails -- will be important. And we are growing fast enough now for that number to be very sizable, if all members do their part.

There is also inserted with this bulletin a sample copy of the full-page advertisement placed by a number of business firms in Sevierville and Gatlinburg, Tennessee,



in their local newspaper, The Gatlinburg Press. This takes the form of an open letter to the two United States Senators from Tennessee and the U. S. Congressman from that district, with coupons which can be clipped out to serve as individual letters to each one.

This advertisement attacks the foreign-aid folly through just one of its vital absurdities, which is No. 6 on our list above. But the point made is both easily understandable and very important, to all American business and all American labor. Reprinting of this advertisement elsewhere is not only permitted but urged by its sponsors. Adjusting the copy, so as to name the two Senators and the one Congressman for any particular district, is very simple. The picture at the top of the page is a "line-cut," not a halftone, so that it can be reproduced satisfactorily right from the enclosed copy. And if as many as twenty local firms can be reached, by telephone or otherwise, who are willing to join in the sponsorship of this full-page advertisement in your local paper or papers, the cost to any one firm will not be prohibitive. Also, the advertisement gains strength and effectiveness by having the names of many local business firms listed at the bottom.

So here is another weapon in our campaign, ready for use by those who can wield it. But as is also true for the use of our giant postcards, promptness of action is important. For while it is going to be well worth while to keep hammering away at the stupidity and/or treason of foreign aid, no matter how much the appropriation for it may be cut this year or even if there is no cut at all, our first objective is to see that there is such a cut, and a very large one indeed. And with the members of both Houses anxious to be free to attend their respective Party conventions, a final decision on all appropriations is likely to be reached by the end of June or very early in July.

So "go after" foreign aid with a veritable flood of the postcards, with the placing of these full-page advertisements wherever it can be arranged, and by all other means you can devise that are practicable, patriotic, and based on common sense. And keep constantly and permanently in mind: Our goal now is to reduce foreign-aid all we can, but our ultimate and unceasing objective is to wipe it out. Let's contribute both the labor and the leadership that will take this Communist leech off our national body.

#### Agenda For The Month -- Act Three

As most of our members know, your Founder publishes a monthly magazine, AMERICAN OPINION. More precisely, the magazine is owned by Robert Welch, Inc., a free-enterprise corporation, of which I owned 86% of the authorized common stock, and approximately 18% of the preferred stock outstanding. AMERICAN OPINION (technically, Robert Welch, Inc.) also puts out reprints of various articles which have appeared in the magazine, including such items as the "Summit" postcards, and the "foreign aid" postcards referred to in this bulletin. There were many advantages to this arrangement. Such items have been for sale to the general public on exactly the same terms as to members of The John Birch Society. The name of the Society thus was not bandied around, for instance, on six hundred thousand postcards going through the mails. And there has been no official connection between the Society and AMERICAN OPINION.

But there have been disadvantages, too; almost all of them the result of my having to lean over so far backward to make sure that AMERICAN OPINION did not benefit from the informal connection, and from the physical association of the two activities in one set of



offices. It is for this reason that we have almost never made any action requested in these bulletins dependent on information in AMERICAN OPINION. And in the one instance where we have done so, in connection with our long article a year ago on "Soustelle and Algeria," we mailed an individual copy of the magazine to every member, just the same as we have done with a Dan Smoot Report or any other "outside" material made necessary background by a request in the bulletin. And not only have we never urged our members to subscribe to AMERICAN OPINION (except by merely mentioning the combination offer with HUMAN EVENTS, in which there is certainly no profit for either of us); but to avoid the possibility of even implied pressure for subscriptions, we have maintained a standing and repeated offer to enter a subscription to AMERICAN OPINION free for any member of the Society simply on that member's request.

The worst handicap imposed on us, however, by thus having to be like Caesar's wife, has been the necessity of repeating in our bulletins much background information which not only was also in articles in the magazine, but which can usually be given there in more helpful detail. So much of this, very bulletin, for instance, especially with regard to the summit conference, and foreign aid, is taken almost verbatim right out of the June issue of AMERICAN OPINION. But I knew of no way to campaign for a sufficiently high percentage of subscriptions to the magazine, among our members, so as to eliminate such duplication in due course, without the possibility that the result might eventually, somehow and to some extent, redound to my personal profit.

So I have now cut the whole Gordian knot, by a knife-blow that is swift and sure. I have simply donated to The John Birch Society, Inc., all of my stock in AMERICAN OPINION (Robert Welch, Inc.). Because the magazine has lost money steadily since it started over

four years ago as ONE MAN'S OPINION, and the above stock has absolutely no book value today, the gift hardly qualifies as a huge gesture in magnanimity. Nor -- since I have never drawn one cent of income of any kind from either the magazine or the Society -- will the reduction in salary caused by this "merger" prove burdensome. But the fact remains that this stock had originally cost me a little over ten thousand dollars in cash (and that was when ten thousand dollars was still worth nearly five thousand dollars); I have put tremendous work into bringing the magazine along this far; and I had counted on AMERICAN OPINION, eventually turning profitable, to provide me with Cadillacs in my old age. So there was at least a little sentimental sacrifice, though none of substance, in this transfer of stock.

It is unquestionably the wise course, and the right course, nevertheless. The official relationship is now, still, nothing more than that The John Birch Society owns stock in Robert Welch, Inc., a "regular" American free-enterprise corporation, exactly the same as it owns a little stock (given it by members) in other and far better known corporations. It assumes no responsibility for the fiscal affairs of any of those corporations -- and, in actual fact, some of my friends and I may still have to go on digging down into our pockets to keep AMERICAN OPINION afloat. But if, with the greater interest and help of the Society's membership, which now can properly be sought, and with any advantages of any kind that may accrue to the publishing business from the connection, the magazine does now turn the corner presently and begin to prove profitable -- as we actually expect to happen and had already expected to happen -- there isn't going to be any "conflict of interest" for anybody to lift an eyebrow about. Neither I nor any member of my family will own a share of the stock. And if, in this happy eventuality, the few "outside" shareholders, who put up so much of the capital



and own so little of the stock, some day got some kind of return on their money, it would mean that The John Birch Society was getting a far greater return on the very enterprise which their money had made possible, and I am sure nobody would begrudge them those -- as of now -- highly hypothetical dividends.

So the final point of all this explanation is that AMERICAN OPINION now belongs to The John Birch Society. It is your magazine. And we want you to do something about it. We'll even be specific:

(1) Subscribe. If you are not already subscribing, and if you can afford it, do so to begin with our June number -- which is now at the printers, and will go into the mails about ten days behind this bulletin. We believe you will find much in that number of very unusual interest (despite our plagiarism in this bulletin). And we think that our combined July-August, SCOREBOARD FOR 1960, number, will be an eye-opener that you cannot afford to miss. The subscription rate, in this country and Canada, is five dollars per year; elsewhere in the world, seven dollars per year.

(2) If you can afford it, subscribe also for your friends, relatives, business associates, salaried employees, and patriotic acquaintances. Helping to build up the circulation of AMERICAN OPINION, and to increase its readership and influence, is a practicable means of forwarding our total purpose which could prove quite effective and important.

(3) If, after paying the Society's dues -- and especially after paying for all of the postage some of our requests require -- you do not feel you can afford to subscribe, don't let it embarrass you in the least. And don't hesitate to write us a note or card for a free subscription. Some of our most valuable members and hardest workers in the Americanist cause are in the income brackets where every five dollars counts. We

still have a few hundred subscriptions (all paid for by friends of ours for just this purpose) to be entered for members of the Society who merely request such subscriptions -- as long as they last. And we hope to have more as the need grows.

(4) If you, on the other hand, are fortunate enough to be able to provide some of those "undesignated" gift subscriptions to be used as indicated in (3), don't hold back on that assistance either. The multiple-purpose subscription blank, which will be enclosed with this bulletin, speaks of such gifts for, among others, legislators and opinion-molders. And we use many for that purpose. But members of our Society will still have first consideration at all times for the unallocated gift subscriptions that are available -- except on those that the donor specifically designates for other categories.

(5) Promote the readership and circulation of the magazine in all other ways that you can -- especially in libraries, doctor's waiting rooms, and other public or semi-public places. Every patriot who learns enough of the truth becomes another recruit on our side. And we honestly believe that AMERICAN OPINION is an excellent stimulator, for getting good citizens started on steps to the truth.

#### Miscellaneous

Every member of our Society, and in fact every conservative in America, has his own "black beast" in the Communist advance, to which he is giving his own concentrated attention. And, as is quite natural, he cannot understand why that particular black beast does not loom larger to us than all of the other monsters on the whole collectivist front.

One lady is threatening to resign from the Society, for



instance, because we have done nothing about Senate Concurrent Resolution 83 and House Concurrent Resolution 531. These identical "enabling acts," introduced respectively by Joseph S. Clark in the Senate and Charles O. Porter in the House, would give President Eisenhower the power to commit the United States to total disarmament and an international police force of the United Nations to enforce it. We thoroughly agree that these two bills are as horrible as their two sponsors. And anything anybody can do to squelch all four, we are certainly for it.

Another member writes us at length of the summer campaign caravan, stumping the country for disarmament, which is scheduled to set out from New York about June 10. This barnstorming tour is a project of the "1960 Campaign For Disarmament," sponsored by the United World Federalists, the National Committee For A Sane Nuclear Policy, and other nice people. They plan to get strong statements by political candidates endorsing **TOTAL WORLD DISARMAMENT UNDER UN INSPECTION AND CONTROL**, as an immediate goal of American Foreign Policy. We are told that inquiries should be addressed to Mr. Curtis Crawford, 1960 Campaign For Disarmament, 17 East 45th Street, New York. Obviously protest should be addressed to the same place. And whatever our members can do, within proper limits, to heckle the campaign caravan into frustrated futility, or to convince Mr. Crawford of the error of his ways, has our hearty applause.

We think that the dumping of United States mail to Czechoslovakia, if it bears the Masaryk stamp (which is perfectly legal United States postage), is one of the most annoying descents from civilization yet perpetrated by the Communist barbarians. And we think that our Post Office Department should be prodded into "making a thorough investigation" and then "taking a firm stand."

We think that some of the recent excursions of Life Magazine, into still worse areas of bad taste for even that expert in the field, deserve a tornado of resounding condemnation. We agree that the unceasing drive for increasing Federal Aid to Education strikes at the very foundations of Americanism, and ought to be stopped. We concur that the editorial, "The Aftermath Of Syngman Rhee," in the New York Herald Tribune, was one of the most disgraceful distortions of the truth ever to appear in a supposedly reputable American publication; and that the editor ought to be told what thousands think of such misuse of journalistic power.

And so on, for another thirty pages. Nor is any of this "writ sarcastic" in the slightest degree. Also, please understand that we want all of these literally hundreds of prods and suggestions. But we do ask you please to remember that we must concentrate our efforts in order to be effective; and that if we choose too many targets on which to concentrate, it is no longer concentration. We use the best judgment we can, after full consideration of many factors involved in all that we do. We ask for your patience, your understanding, and your support, in connection with a course that is conscientiously determined.

Of course in this work we live under a constant fire of criticism from all sides. Right now, for instance, the present administration of the United States Chamber of Commerce is having a small hemorrhage, and writing some very hotly worded letters, over what we had to say about their training courses in our May bulletin. Since we stand behind what we said, and admit no error (except that their course for plant foremen does not have the official name which we ascribed to it), we would simply go on our way without further comment, but for the fact that their objection does have one leg on which to stand. We asked our members themselves to look into what was actually being taught in these courses in their



own communities, and then -- if the slant was socialistic -- to protest on the basis of their own personal knowledge and documentation. Apparently many of our members did not do this, but wrote protests simply on the basis of our account -- given them as a guide as to what to look for -- of a very unsatisfactory slant in specific instances. And for whatever impetuous unfairness may have resulted from that zeal we do apologize.

Spokesmen for the Chamber are making much of the fact that their Discussion Leader's Guide is clean as a hound's tooth of any socialistic or internationalist slant. We certainly did not say, and would not have expected, anything to the contrary. Any un-Americanist views would unquestionably be introduced by the individual teachers or discussion leaders, and obviously there would be a huge variation of the men chosen for -- or who wormed themselves into -- these jobs. We asked our members to help to eliminate the wrong ones -- as discovered by the members themselves. And we not only still assure the Chamber that they have some "wrong ones," but that it would be extremely naive to think that they didn't. The reaction of the Chamber heads, however, has been very much the same as that of the State Department a dozen years ago, when various people began to insist that there were Communists within their walls. Instead of the good Americanists in the Department getting busy to find and throw out the bad apples, and thus save both the character and reputation of the State Department, its personnel, top and bottom, simply vented their wrath and ridicule on any critic who dared to suggest that there were any bad apples in the barrel. Any realist knows what has happened to the State Department as a result, and the U. S. Chamber could well profit by its example.

We expected to obtain the copies of War Crimes Discreetly Veiled, for the distribution mentioned in our



last bulletin, on a perfectly sound business deal which would have saved the Society some money. There has been a delay in the arrangements, so please be patient. Our chapters will get the book in time. Also, for all chapters with a number above 220, there may be some delay in receiving Barry Goldwater's Conscience Of A Conservative, simply because of the way the book is selling. (It is going far beyond the most optimistic expectations.) But we have another order in, which will be filled as soon as the printer can get to it. And incidentally, canvass your bookstores and libraries to see that they have Goldwater's great book available.

Last month we ran out of space before we could give anybody our "honorable mention." So this time we catch up with our schedule by naming two recipients of so tiny a token of our appreciation. First is Mr. Charles M. Crawford, Chapter Leader of Chapter No. 89, in Los Angeles. Next is Mrs. E. F. Eastman, Chapter Leader of Chapter No. 103, in Dallas. And no two people ever deserved this small recognition more. It would take many pages just to describe adequately the labor and dedication that either one has given to The John Birch Society. To Mrs. Eastman and to Charlie Crawford, and to all of their hardworking members in both chapters, we send our earnest thanks.

But to all of our members, everywhere, we express as well as we know how our deep appreciation for so much loyalty, and so much effort devoted to our cause. And I send to each of you -- as always -- my very kindest regards.

Sincerely,

*Robert Welch*



Application For Membership

\_\_\_\_\_, 19

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
Belmont 78, Massachusetts

Gentlemen:

This is my application for membership in the \_\_\_\_\_  
Chapter of THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY, for one year  
from this date, and for automatic renewal each year  
thereafter, unless I resign in writing. I understand  
the dues schedule printed on the back of this sheet,  
as applicable to myself.

If my application is accepted, I agree that my mem-  
bership may be revoked at anytime, by a duly appointed  
officer of the Society, without the reason being stated,  
on refund of the pro rata part of my dues paid in  
advance.

Sincerely,

(Name) \_\_\_\_\_

(Address) \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

Dues Received \_\_\_\_\_

Application Approved

By \_\_\_\_\_

Title \_\_\_\_\_

62-1521-

## DUES SCHEDULE

Life membership in the Home Chapter,  
(which automatically covers membership in any local chapter), for men or women . . . . . \$1,000.00  
(This may be paid in two consecutive annual installments of \$500.00 each.)

Regular annual membership in the Home Chapter	For men . . . . .	\$24.00
	For women . . . .	12.00

Membership in a local chapter, minimum per year:	For men . . . . .	\$24.00
	For women. . . .	12.00

(This may be paid as \$2.00 per month for men, and \$1.00 per month for women, to the local Chapter Leader.)

If any member wishes to pay larger dues, to support the Society's work (or to make contributions for that purpose), such dues or contributions may also be split into monthly installments if desired.

(Applications for membership in local chapters should be approved by the Chapter Leader. Applications for membership in the Home Chapter will be approved by the home office.)



# THE SCOREBOARD

Basic Communist strategy for conquest of the world, as laid out thirty-five years ago and relentlessly followed ever since, consisted of three steps: (1) Take eastern Europe; (2) next take the masses of Asia; (3) then take the rest of the world, including the United States. The Communists completed their first step in 1950; the second step is now at least three-fourths accomplished; and they have gone more than one-fourth of the way towards carrying out their third step. Which means that the Communists have now covered well over two-thirds of the total distance to their final goal of world-wide dominion. And the momentum and the speed of their progress are steadily increasing.

BETWEEN 1937 AND 1957 the expansion of Communist power in the world was approximately eight hundred percent — whether you measured that growth in the number of Party members, in the number of enslaved subjects, or by whatever unit of comparison. But during the past two years the rate of expansion has markedly increased.

For a decade after World War II the Communists *averaged* adding to their empire seven thousand newly enslaved subjects every hour, twenty-four hours of every day, 365 days of every year. But by 1958 that rate of conquest had come up to about twelve thousand new slaves per hour. And the once free peoples of Indonesia, Iraq, Morocco, Tunisia, Bolivia, Venezuela, Cuba, Ghana, Guinea, and other nations now slipping into Communist police-state rule, would gladly bear witness to both the truth and the horror of this record. How free the status of their former "colonialism" would seem to many of them today!

But the most ominous part of the Communist advance is also the most

difficult to appraise. That is the rise of Communist influence in countries which are still considered to be clearly in, and on the side of, the remaining "free world." That there are ways of estimating how far the insidious tide has risen, however, even in these areas where much firm dry land still remains, has been decisively demonstrated by our experience in putting together the scores in this tabulation.

For several different scholars on four different continents, each of them a serious long-time student of the methods, purposes and progress of the Communist conspiracy, compiled his scoreboard independently of all the others. Each one made his own estimates as objectively and conscientiously as he knew how. And the resulting figures from these different experts, for all but one or two of the 105 countries listed, were so close as to be startling — and convincing. Believing therefore that our composite appraisals are dependable, significant, revealing — and frightening — we present *The American Opinion Scoreboard for 1959*.

This article is reprinted from *American Opinion*, an informal review published eleven times per year. Annual subscription, five dollars. Or send one dollar for two consecutive issues to find out whether you like us.

Address: AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts

62-1521-

## The American Opinion Scoreboard

In the following tabulation we have undertaken to estimate the present degree of Communist influence or control over the economic and political affairs of almost all of the "nations" of the world. (The omissions have been, due to lack of size, importance, or autonomy.) The chief source of such control or influence may be Communist-run labor unions (as in Bolivia), or Communist sympathizers in government (as in India), or powerful Communist political parties (as in Italy), or highly successful Communist agitation and propaganda (as in Mexico). The total extent of Communist control or influence over any country, however, is due to the impact of all Communist pressures, direct and indirect, visible and undercover, working together. In most cases, of course, that total cannot be measured with exactness. But

we believe the estimates given below to be conservative, as of June 1, 1959.

It is only when this scoreboard is compared with any similar one, which might have been compiled as recently as 1952, that its significance becomes so shockingly apparent. Each change since the 1958 Scoreboard — if sufficient to change the whole bracket shown against any country — is indicated by a star, and itemized on the last page of this insert.

The Kremlin's biggest concern now is to keep the remainder of the free world, and especially the people of the United States, from realizing the speed and certainty with which the Communists are completing their conquest of the planet. We intend to publish a revised scoreboard once a year until the conspiracy is entirely successful or has been entirely destroyed.

### COMMUNIST INFLUENCE

As A Percentage Of Total Control

1. Aden	20 to 40%	19. Chile	40 to 60%
2. Afghanistan	80 - 100	20. Communist China	100
3. Albania	100	21. Nationalist China	0 - 20
4. Argentina	40 - 60	22. Colombia	20 - 40
5. Australia	0 - 20	23. Costa Rica	20 - 40
6. Austria	20 - 40	24. Cuba	70 - 90★
7. Belgian Congo	20 - 40★	25. Czechoslovakia	100
8. Belgium	20 - 40	26. Denmark	20 - 40
9. Bolivia	70 - 90★	27. Dominican Republic	0 - 20
10. Brazil	40 - 60	28. East Germany	100
11. Britain	40 - 60★	29. Ecuador	20 - 40★
12. British Guiana	80 - 100	30. Egypt	80 - 100
13. Bulgaria	100	31. El Salvador	20 - 40
14. Burma	60 - 80	32. Ethiopia	60 - 80
15. Cambodia	80 - 100	33. Finland	60 - 80
16. Canada	40 - 60★	34. France	30 - 50★
17. Central African Federation	20 - 40★	35. French Equatorial Africa	20 - 40
18. Ceylon	60 - 80	36. French Togoland	40 - 60



## The Scoreboard

37. Ghana	80 to 100%	72. Outer Mongolia	100%
38. Greece	40 - 60	73. Pakistan	30 - 50★
39. Guatemala	60 - 80	74. Panama	60 - 80
40. Guinea	80 - 100★	75. Paraguay	20 - 40★
41. Haiti	20 - 40	76. Peru	20 - 40
42. Honduras	40 - 60	77. Philippines	20 - 40
43. Hungary	100	78. Poland	100
44. Iceland	80 - 100	79. Portugal	0 - 20
45. India	60 - 80	80. Romania	100
46. Indonesia	80 - 100	81. Saudi Arabia	60 - 80
47. Iran	20 - 40	82. Sierra Leone	30 - 50★
48. Iraq	80 - 100★	83. Singapore	70 - 90★
49. Ireland	0 - 20	84. Somalia	40 - 60
50. Israel	40 - 60	85. South Korea	10 - 30★
51. Italy	40 - 60	86. South Vietnam	40 - 60
52. Japan	20 - 40	87. Soviet Union	100
53. Jordan	20 - 40	88. Spain	0 - 20
54. Kenya	20 - 40	89. Sudan	50 - 70★
55. Laos	80 - 100	90. Sweden	20 - 40
56. Lebanon	60 - 80★	91. Switzerland	20 - 40
57. Liberia	30 - 50★	92. Syria	80 - 100
58. Libya	60 - 80	93. Tanganyika	20 - 40
59. Luxembourg	20 - 40	94. Thailand	40 - 60
60. Madagascar	20 - 40	95. Tibet	80 - 100
61. Malaya	40 - 60	96. Tunisia	80 - 100
62. Mexico	40 - 60	97. Turkey	0 - 20
63. Morocco	60 - 80	98. Uganda	20 - 40
64. Nepal	60 - 80	99. Union of South Africa	0 - 20
65. Netherlands	20 - 40★	100. United States	30 - 50★
66. New Zealand	0 - 20	101. Uruguay	40 - 60
67. Nicaragua	20 - 40	102. Venezuela	80 - 100★
68. Nigeria	30 - 50★	103. West Germany	0 - 20
69. North Korea	100	104. Yemen	80 - 100
70. North Vietnam	100	105. Yugoslavia	100
71. Norway	50 - 70★		

### Footnotes On Changes

Obviously there have been changes in the degree of Communist influence in practically every country. But the changes shown, and discussed below, are only those which moved our estimate into a whole new bracket from the one given last year.

7. Belgian Congo. 1958: 0-20%. 1959: 20-40%. This change reflects the long reach of the

agitation against "colonialism," sparked by Kwame Nkrumah.

9. Bolivia. 1958: 40-60%. 1959: 70-90%. The Communists have steadily tightened their grip. They now own Bolivia, to whatever extent they wish to show their hand.

11. Britain. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 40-60%. Thanks to the "let's surrender" crusade of Ber-

## Footnotes On Changes

trand Russell, the pusillanimous appeasement policies of Harold Macmillan, and other factors, the Communist influence in and over Britain has markedly increased during the past twelve months.

16. Canada. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 40-60%. The erosion of resistance to Communist men and measures is subtle, gradual—and deadly.

17. Central African Federation. 1958: 0-20%. 1959: 20-40%. This is simply due to the Communist forces now increasingly at work all over Africa.

24. Cuba. 1958: 40-60%. 1959: 70-90%. Last year the potential Communist take-over of Cuba was merely casting its shadow before it. This year it is an accomplished fact.

29. Ecuador. 1958: 0-20%. 1959: 20-40%. It is no secret that the situation in most of Latin America has rapidly grown worse since June 1, 1958.

34. France. 1958: 40-60%. 1959: 30-50%. This is the one improvement noted on the whole planet. In our opinion much credit must go to de Gaulle and even more to Jacques Soustelle.

40. Guinea. 1958: (As part of French West Africa), 40-60%. 1959: 80-100%. Sekou Touré has now made the break with France complete; the break with civilization, and absorption of his country into the Soviet barbarism, all but complete.

48. Iraq. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 80-100%. This "swing" is drastic, but so were the developments. Our estimate last year was undoubtedly too conservative. The violent seizure of Iraq by the Communists was more sudden and complete than anything we had anticipated.

56. Lebanon. 1958: 40-60%. 1959: 60-80%. Lebanon was just one more victim of a "Murphy good-will mission" — as well as of other forces. Under the guise of protecting and helping Lebanon, our government made Rashid Karami, the leading Communist of that small country (and the man most approved by Nasser), its Prime Minister, Minister of Finance, Minister of National Economy, Minister of Defense, and Minister of Information. With just one more blow of our helping hand the Communist control of Lebanon could move into the highest bracket.

57. Liberia. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 30-50%. The change is merely another indication of the rising tide in Africa.

65. Netherlands. 1958: 0-20%. 1959: 20-40%. Whether or not our estimate in 1958 was too low, we don't know. We are sure this one is not too high.

68. Nigeria. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 30-50%. Just another case of crumbling before the African "wave."

71. Norway. 1958: 40-60%. 1959: 50-70%. The change is partly the recognition and result of a continuing process; but it is partly just to make our estimate of Norway more realistic than that of last year.

73. Pakistan. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 30-50%. Sad, unfortunate, not translatable into specifics—but true.

75. Paraguay. 1958: 0-20%. 1959: 20-40%. General Alfredo Stroessner, President of Paraguay, is one of the few firm anti-Communists still remaining as heads of Latin American governments. But of late months he has had to give considerable ground to "liberal" pressures.

82. Sierra Leone. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 30-50%. More washing from the African wave.

83. Singapore. 1958: 60-80%. 1959: 70-90%. The last elections show that Singapore is already "beyond the point of no return."

85. South Korea. 1958: 0-20%. 1959: 10-30%. The tremendous Communist efforts have gained footholds that cannot be ignored.

89. Sudan. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 50-70%. This heavy gain in the strength of the Communists is largely due to the help and encouragement given them by that sterling non-Communist (!), G. A. Nasser.

100. The United States. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 30-50%. We were worried about defending our own conviction that Communist influence, over everything of political or economic importance done in or by the United States, now amounts to more than thirty percent of total control. Then we got the surprise of our lives in the far higher estimates from some of our experts.

We have kept this bracket, with fifty percent as the top limit to our appraisal, nevertheless. We are aware that the actual number of Communists and Communist sympathizers within our borders has little bearing on the case. For the Communists have taken over some countries completely with as little as one percent of the population as active agents. We agree with our experts that the Communist influence inside our government itself today is overwhelming. We know that this influence is almost as extreme within our educational, religious, and labor organizations. But we feel that there are still tremendous layers of Americanist strength not yet rotted by all of the infiltration, indoctrination, and political sabotage to which we have been subjected.

Here is a fact, however, which good Americans should note with alarm and anxiety. These men are the best informed authorities we know. Several of them, in or from Europe, Asia or Australia, are able to look at our situation more objectively than we can. They agree closely with us, and with each other, concerning every other country. And these men believe that the degree of Communist influence in the United States today amounts to between 50% and 70% of total control.

102. Venezuela. 1958: 20-40%. 1959: 80-100%. As in the case of Iraq, our 1958 figure was too low. And perhaps in the case of Venezuela we should have been more aware of the nearness and force of the coming storm.



American Opinion  
Belmont 78, Massachusetts

Gentlemen:

Please enter my subscription to AMERICAN  
OPINION for one year, for which I enclose \$ 5.00

*(The paragraphs below should be ignored unless you  
wish to enter additional subscriptions for others.)*

Also, on the back of this sheet are the names  
and addresses of friends for whom I should  
like to have you enter subscriptions for one  
year. The total enclosed for these subscrip-  
tions is \$ \_\_\_\_\_

To enable you to reach as many congressmen,  
senators, state legislators, educators and  
other opinion - molders as possible, by your  
own selection of names from your own list, I  
am covering the cost for you to enter such  
subscriptions at \$5.00 each, by enclosing an  
additional \$ \_\_\_\_\_

The total of my remittance is \$ \_\_\_\_\_

Sincerely,

(Name) \_\_\_\_\_

(Address) \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

**Names And Addresses For Additional Subscriptions**

**Name** \_\_\_\_\_

**Address** \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

**Name** \_\_\_\_\_

**Address** \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

**Name** \_\_\_\_\_

**Address** \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

**Name** \_\_\_\_\_

**Address** \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

**Name** \_\_\_\_\_

**Address** \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_



PLACE  
4c STAMP  
HERE

POST CARD

*The Grass Gets Little Water, But—*  
**HOW THE COMMUNIST WEEDS DO LOVE IT!**





incl 1959 JBS Blue Book - "pending"  
U.S. Department of Justice

Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington, D.C. 20535

MR ERNIE LAZAR  
APARTMENT 6  
577 SOUTH THORNHILL ROAD  
PALM SPRINGS, CA 92264 7884

Personal # 38  
is copy of 2nd Printing  
of JBS Blue Book  
184 pp  
12/9/59  
"Dear Reader"  
detached

October 18, 2006  
Houston  
Subject: FILE 62-1521  
FOIPA No. 1049059- 000

#39 = 3/13/61  
#138 = 6/21/76

Dear Requester:

The enclosed documents were reviewed under the Freedom of Information/Privacy Acts (FOIPA), Title 5, United States Code, Section 552/552a. Deletions have been made to protect information which is exempt from disclosure, with the appropriate exemptions noted on the page next to the excision. In addition, a deleted page information sheet was inserted in the file to indicate where pages were withheld entirely. The exemptions used to withhold information are marked below and explained on the enclosed Form OPCA-16a:

GRV  
Houston  
Freedom In Action  
POD: William N. Hollis  
Asst State Director

Section 552

Section 552a

Houston  
62-1502 = MIA  
159-903 = Chicago  
Labrad

- ☐ (b)(1)
- ☒ (b)(2)
- ☐ (b)(3)
- ☐ (b)(4)
- ☐ (b)(5)
- ☒ (b)(6)

- ☐ (b)(7)(A)
- ☐ (b)(7)(B)
- ☒ (b)(7)(C)
- ☒ (b)(7)(D)
- ☐ (b)(7)(E)
- ☐ (b)(7)(F)
- ☐ (b)(8)
- ☐ (b)(9)

- ☐ (d)(5)
- ☐ (j)(2)
- ☐ (k)(1)
- ☐ (k)(2)
- ☐ (k)(3)
- ☐ (k)(4)
- ☐ (k)(5)
- ☐ (k)(6)
- ☐ (k)(7)

LR  
Assn of AR Klans  
20 1962 - in at  
there are refs to  
7 AS chapters  
in Penn Cliff AR  
led by mention to  
the Assn of AR Klans  
POD George F. Colvins  
Bill Williams  
100-3396 = JBS  
AR Klansman Assn  
used as adviser of Penn Cliff AR Klansman of the Assn of Arkansas Klans

589 page(s) were reviewed and 348 page(s) are being released.

- ☐ Document(s) were located which originated with, or contained information concerning other Government agency(ies) [OGA]. This information has been:
  - ☐ referred to the OGA for review and direct response to you.
  - ☐ referred to the OGA for consultation. The FBI will correspond with you regarding this information when the consultation is finished.
- ☒ You have the right to appeal any denials in this release. Appeals should be directed in writing to the Co-Director, Office of Information and Privacy, U.S. Department of Justice, 1425 New York Ave., NW, Suite 11050, Washington, D.C. 20530-0001 within sixty days from the date of this letter. The envelope and the letter should be clearly marked "Freedom of Information Appeal" or "Information Appeal." Please cite the FOIPA number assigned to your request so that it may be easily identified.

San Antonio  
JBS = 100 9/55

JBS  
MIA = 100 585  
SF = 100 474



☐ The enclosed material is from the main investigative file(s) in which the subject(s) of your request was the focus of the investigation. Our search located additional references, in files relating to other individuals, or matters, which may or may not be about your subject(s). Our experience has shown, when ident, references usually contain information similar to the information processed in the main file(s). Because of our significant backlog, we have given priority to processing only the main investigative file(s). If you want the references, you must submit a separate request for them in writing, and they will be reviewed at a later date, as time and resources permit.

☒ See additional information which follows.

Sincerely yours,



David M. Hardy  
Section Chief  
Record/Information  
Dissemination Section  
Records Management Division

Enclosure(s)

In the interest of providing the enclosed material more expediently, this release is being sent in advance of the payment. You are requested to sent a check or money order in the amount of **\$24.80** to cover the fee of ten cents a page for duplication of the enclosed pages pursuant to Title 28, Code of Federal Regulations, Sections 16.11 and 16.49. No fees are assessed for the first 100 pages. Please make your check or money order payable to the Federal Bureau of Investigation and include the FOIPA request number **1049059** with your payment to insure proper identification of your request.

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION  
FOIPA  
DELETED PAGE INFORMATION SHEET

Serial Description ~ COVER SHEET      12/28/1959

Total Deleted Page(s) ~ 232

Page 3 ~ Duplicate to 62-1521

Page 4 ~ Duplicate

Page 5 ~ Duplicate

Page 193 ~ Duplicate to 62-HO-1521(FO)sec.1

Page 194 ~ Duplicate

Page 195 ~ Duplicate

Page 196 ~ Duplicate

Page 197 ~ Duplicate

Page 198 ~ Duplicate

Page 199 ~ Duplicate

Page 200 ~ Duplicate

Page 201 ~ Duplicate

Page 202 ~ Duplicate

Page 203 ~ Duplicate

Page 204 ~ Duplicate

Page 205 ~ Duplicate

Page 206 ~ Duplicate

Page 207 ~ Duplicate

Page 208 ~ Duplicate

Page 209 ~ Duplicate

Page 210 ~ Duplicate

Page 211 ~ Duplicate

Page 212 ~ Duplicate

Page 213 ~ Duplicate

Page 214 ~ Duplicate

Page 215 ~ Duplicate

Page 216 ~ Duplicate

Page 217 ~ Duplicate

Page 218 ~ Duplicate

Page 219 ~ Duplicate

Page 220 ~ Duplicate

Page 221 ~ Duplicate

Page 222 ~ Duplicate

Page 223 ~ Duplicate

Page 224 ~ Duplicate

Page 225 ~ Duplicate

Page 226 ~ Duplicate

Page 227 ~ Duplicate

Page 228 ~ Duplicate

Page 229 ~ Duplicate

Page 230 ~ Duplicate

Page 231 ~ Duplicate

Page 232 ~ Duplicate

Page 233 ~ Duplicate

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX



Page 234 ~ Duplicate  
Page 235 ~ Duplicate  
Page 236 ~ Duplicate  
Page 237 ~ Duplicate  
Page 238 ~ Duplicate  
Page 239 ~ Duplicate  
Page 240 ~ Duplicate  
Page 241 ~ Duplicate  
Page 242 ~ Duplicate  
Page 243 ~ Duplicate  
Page 244 ~ Duplicate  
Page 245 ~ Duplicate  
Page 246 ~ Duplicate  
Page 247 ~ Duplicate  
Page 248 ~ Duplicate  
Page 249 ~ Duplicate  
Page 250 ~ Duplicate  
Page 251 ~ Duplicate  
Page 252 ~ Duplicate  
Page 253 ~ Duplicate  
Page 254 ~ Duplicate  
Page 255 ~ Duplicate  
Page 256 ~ Duplicate  
Page 257 ~ Duplicate  
Page 258 ~ Duplicate  
Page 259 ~ Duplicate  
Page 260 ~ Duplicate  
Page 261 ~ Duplicate  
Page 262 ~ Duplicate  
Page 263 ~ Duplicate  
Page 264 ~ Duplicate  
Page 265 ~ Duplicate  
Page 266 ~ Duplicate  
Page 267 ~ Duplicate  
Page 268 ~ Duplicate  
Page 269 ~ Duplicate  
Page 270 ~ Duplicate  
Page 271 ~ Duplicate  
Page 272 ~ Duplicate  
Page 273 ~ Duplicate  
Page 274 ~ Duplicate  
Page 275 ~ Duplicate to 62-1521 (FO)  
Page 276 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 277 ~ Duplicate to prev. release

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

Page 278 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 279 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 280 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 281 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 282 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 283 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 284 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 285 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 286 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 287 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 288 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 289 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 290 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 291 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 292 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 293 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 294 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 295 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 296 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 297 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 298 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 299 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 300 ~ Duplicate  
Page 301 ~ Duplicate  
Page 302 ~ Duplicate  
Page 303 ~ Duplicate  
Page 304 ~ Duplicate  
Page 305 ~ Duplicate  
Page 306 ~ Duplicate  
Page 307 ~ Duplicate  
Page 308 ~ Duplicate  
Page 309 ~ Duplicate  
Page 310 ~ Duplicate  
Page 311 ~ Duplicate  
Page 312 ~ Duplicate  
Page 313 ~ Duplicate  
Page 314 ~ Duplicate  
Page 315 ~ Duplicate  
Page 316 ~ Duplicate  
Page 317 ~ Duplicate  
Page 318 ~ Duplicate  
Page 319 ~ Duplicate  
Page 320 ~ Duplicate  
Page 321 ~ Duplicate to prev. release

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX



Page 322 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 323 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 324 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 325 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 326 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 327 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 328 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 329 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 330 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 331 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 332 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 333 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 334 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 335 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 336 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 337 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 338 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 339 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 340 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 341 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 342 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 343 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 344 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 345 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 346 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 347 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 348 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 349 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 350 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 351 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 352 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 353 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 354 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 355 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 356 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 357 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 358 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 359 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 360 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 361 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 362 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 363 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 364 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 365 ~ Duplicate to prev. release

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

Page 366 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 367 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 368 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 369 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 370 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 371 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 372 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 373 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 374 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 375 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 376 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 377 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 378 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 379 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 380 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 381 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 382 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 383 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 384 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 385 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 386 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 387 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 388 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 389 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 390 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 391 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 392 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 393 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 394 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 395 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 396 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 397 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 398 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 399 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 400 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 401 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 402 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 403 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 404 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 405 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 406 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 407 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 408 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 409 ~ Duplicate to prev. release

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX



Page 410 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 411 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 412 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 413 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 414 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 415 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 416 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 417 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 418 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 419 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 420 ~ Duplicate to prev. release  
Page 421 ~ Duplicate to prev. release

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION  
FOIPA  
DELETED PAGE INFORMATION SHEET

Serial Description ~ COVER SHEET      03/31/1961

Total Deleted Page(s) ~ 9  
Page 5 ~ b6, b7C  
Page 6 ~ b6, b7C  
Page 56 ~ b6, b7C  
Page 57 ~ b6, b7C  
Page 84 ~ b6, b7C  
Page 88 ~ b6, b7C, b7D  
Page 89 ~ b6, b7C, b7D  
Page 91 ~ Duplicate to serial 115  
Page 92 ~ Duplicate to serial 115

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX  
X Deleted Page(s) X  
X No Duplication Fee X  
X for this Page X  
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX





**Federal Bureau of Investigation**  
**Freedom of Information / Privacy Acts**  
**Release**

Subject: FILE 62 1521 (F0) *Houston*

## Wright To Ask Congress For Birch Society Probe

T. S. Rep Jim Wright, a senatorial candidate, said in Houston Thursday that he will call for a congressional investigation of the John Birch Society which he said employs methods that are insidiously un-American.

"This should not be a witch hunt because then it would defeat its own purpose," Wright said.

"It should be a quiet and searching scrutiny by trained investigators, aimed at developing the truth . . . so that those who have been unwittingly ensnared might know in time to avoid the further embarrassment that might come to them."

THE INVESTIGATION should disclose the means the organization employs to try to influence and intimidate people either into submission or silence, Wright said.

He said the gravest danger the United States can face during a time of international tension is internal division.

"In the extreme left," he said, "are the remnants of a philosophy which sprang up in the depression of the 1930s, teaching that enterprise is evil and business is basically bad."

"When confronted with a national problem their only solution is to socialize."

"Yet another segment of the economy at the other far extreme is a little group . . . so brainwashed by a barrage of one-sided propaganda that they have come to view their own government as their greatest enemy."

AFTER MAKING his statement to newsmen in a press conference at the Lamar Hotel, Wright shrugged and said:

THE HOUSTON POST  
3-31-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOFfile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-39

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 31 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



"I know this will make me their target."

The John Birch Society is a semi-secret society which its members say is patriotic in nature and intended as a weapon against Communism.

The organization has a leader — Robert Welch, 61, of Belmont, Mass. — who once called President Eisenhower a traitor and a Communist.

Wright said the idea of calling Mr. Eisenhower a Communist is outlandish.

**SPEAKING OF THE** extremes of the left and right in political philosophy, Wright, who calls himself a moderate in the Senate campaign, said:

"One of the common characteristics they share is a supreme intolerance for everyone who does not agree with them 100 per cent of the time.

"An example of fanatical right-wing extremism has recently come to light in the insidiously un-American tactics being employed by the group known as the John Birch Society."

"What they have failed to realize," he said, "is that we cannot effectively fight totalitarian-

ism by adopting the tactics and techniques of totalitarianism.

**"THEIR INSTRUMENTS** of terror and intimidation are reminiscent of Hitler's burning of the Reichstag and blaming it on others — reminiscent of the hysteria in our country during World War II — reminiscent of the Ku Klux Klan.

"America," he said, "has no place for secret societies designed to follow the word of one spokesman and thus to try to influence Congress by a barrage of intimidating mail and telephone calls."

Historically, Wright said, the danger to any nation has been the growth of fanaticism at two extremes so that there is no broad middle ground left.

**"THIS," HE SAID,** "is what happened in Russia. It is what happened in Poland."

He added: "Communists would like nothing better than a division that would destroy the sane, reasonable middle-ground leadership in any society."

About 800 persons at the City Auditorium heard Wright make a speech telecast by KPRC-TV at 8 PM Thursday.

**WRIGHT PROPOSED** that the United States share in guaranteeing an FHA-type loan program for Latin American countries whose citizens want to build homes. Such a program, Wright said, would lessen the appeal of Communism for some of those peoples.

About 20 television and movie entertainers provided a stage show after Wright spoke.

## Congress Probe of Welch Is Sought by 2 Senators

WASHINGTON — (AP) — Sen. Warren and others. Congress was urged Thursday to investigate the John Birch Society's founder for calling former President Dwight D. Eisenhower "a card-carrying Communist."

One congressman said he was a member of the society. He was Rep. Edgar W. Hiestand, R-Calif., who said, "I'm quite sure there are other members of Congress who are also members of the society."

"The society says its aim is to fight Communism."

But Sen. Thomas H. Kuchel, R-Calif., and Sen. Thomas J. Dodd, D-Conn., took the floor of the Senate to denounce the organization.

KUCHEL SAID Robert Welch, founder of the society, should be called before the Senate Government Operations Committee to answer questions about attacks on the character of Mr. Eisenhower, Chief Justice Earl

To call Mr. Eisenhower a Communist, Kuchel said, "is a fantastic and incredible lie."

He asked, "should the American people permit this kind of spleen to be poured on a man who has dedicated his whole life to freedom?"

But Sen. John T. McClellan, D-Ark., chairman of the Government Operations Committee, said it was questionable whether his group would have jurisdiction over the matter.

AND HE ADDED he had received no formal request for an investigation from Kuchel.

Dodd said attacks by Welch on Mr. Eisenhower, Warren, former Presidents Franklin D. Roosevelt and Harry S. Truman and others were "an affront to both decency and intelligence."

Welch, a 61-year-old retired Boston candy manufacturer, founded the anti-Communist society in 1958. At Belmont, Mass., Welch said through a spokesman that he had no comment Thursday.

While Kuchel called for an investigation in the Senate, it was revealed that Rep. Henry S. Reuss, D-Wis., had asked for an investigation in the House.

REUSS ASKED Rep. Francis E. Walter, D-Pa., chairman of the House Committee on Un-American Activities, to authorize a probe by his committee.

Walter, in a reply Thursday, said the committee has received numerous letters complaining that the organization was un-American. But, he added, their specific complaints alleged wrongs by individuals who have recourse to the civil courts.

Hiestand, however, said he would welcome an investigation of the society by Walter's committee.

Hiestand told the Washington Evening Star that such an investigation would help dispel charges that the society is "a dictatorial, fascist" organization.

THE HOUSTON POST  
3-31-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-40

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 31 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



**THE STAR SAID** he had written several fellow congressmen Wednesday, urging them not to attack the society "until you know the facts."

The letter was written, Hiestand said, because "a member of the other body has been putting a lot of stuff in the congressional record that is simply not accurate."

Hiestand did not name the senator, but, in recent weeks, the society has been strongly criticized by Sen. Milton R. Young, R-N.D.

Hiestand told the Star he joined the society in California "quite a while back."

"I don't indorse absolutely everything the society stands for," he said, "but the big 98 percent of its program is intense patriotism and anti-Communism."

**ASKED ABOUT** the star's story, Hiestand told the Associated Press it was substantially correct.

The society is composed of a "group of patriots, rugged individuals," Hiestand said.

Kuchel told the Senate it was the proper function of the Government Operations Committee to call Welch as a witness and ask him the basis for what Kuchel termed "these miserable charges."

Kuchel also said the committee should "make him apologize, not alone to Eisenhower and Warren, but to the people of this country."

Dodd told the Senate the society had attacked Young and Kuchel and "there are no more staunch anti-Communists in our country than these public servants."

He said he considered the attacks upon them "beneath contempt."

## Admirers of Birch Society At Issue With J. Frank Dobie

Persons who are admirers of the John Birch Society succeeded in jamming a telephone switchboard Thursday but failed to ruffle the equanimity of J. Frank Dobie.

"I refuse to be disturbed by the barkings of the members of the Character Assassination Anonymous," said Dobie.

MANY PERSONS telephoned the Southwestern Savings Association, where the Texas author autographed copies of his newest book later in the day, between 12:30 and 2:30 PM. Most of them said officials of the company had been duped by Dobie.

The apparent cause of their indignation was a remark that Dobie made Wednesday. He told a television reporter that the John Birch Society includes a number of fools.

THE LEADER of the Birch Society has called Former President Eisenhower a Communist. Members of the society have demanded the impeachment and removal of Chief Justice Earl Warren.

"I have had anonymous vilification a few times in my life," Dobie said after autographing 400 books. "I never respect such enough to reply, I like to talk serenely and, if I listen to all the barking, I can't be serene."

"If the John Birch people had their way, according to the pronouncements of their chieftain, Mr. (Robert) Welch, then one could say without any reserva-

tion that Russia had conquered the United States, not so much physically as mentally and spiritually."

REN G. BAKER JR., president of Southwestern Savings, said the company invited Dobie here from his home in Austin as the greatest living writer on the subject of the Southwest.

"We are happy that he could come," Baker said.

THE HOUSTON POST  
3-31-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-41

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 31 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



# Birch Society--It's Doctrine, Membership, Views

(Following is the second of three dispatches about the semi-secret John Birch Society, an organization that has created controversy across the land because of its methods of fighting Communism. A UPI special reporting team, headed by Barbara Bundschu of the New York Bureau, reports today on the society's doctrine, membership and various views on its operations.—THE EDITOR)

By BARBARA BUNDSCHU  
United Press International

At the start of 1961 the John Birch Society had organized one to 100 chapters in each of 34 states and the District of Columbia, according to its founder Robert Welch of Massachusetts.

(Still to be organized: Alabama, Alaska, Colorado, Delaware, Idaho, Maine, Maryland, Minnesota, Nebraska, Nevada, New Jersey, Oklahoma, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island, Utah and Vermont.)

In a blue-book of the organization's doctrine, Welch said:

"The John Birch Society is to be a monolithic body.

"A republican form of government or of organization has many attractions and advantages, under certain favorable conditions. But under less happy circumstances it lends itself too readily to infiltration, distortion and disruption. And democracy, of course, in government or organization . . . is merely a deceptive phrase, a weapon of demagoguery, and a perennial fraud . . .

"The John Birch Society will operate under completely authoritative control at all levels . . . No collection of debating societies is ever going to stop the Communist conspiracy."

He hoped for one million dedicated members to fight the forces of evil with "evangelical fervor."

Paul H. Talbert, Los Angeles insurance executive who is one of the society's council members, estimated recently that it might have 100,000 members by the end of 1961, its third year.

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
3-30-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-42

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 31 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

China," Welch has told members.

In his bulletin for March he urged them to write "more letters to the same congressmen . . . the same letters to more congressmen" and to the newspapers to prepare the way for undisclosed "special actions" to come.

Welch wrote in the bulletin:

"There is plenty of evidence that we already have the pot of the Warren impeachment boiling. What we need now, by adding more fuel and blowing on the fire, is to give that pot a head of steam that will be looked at askance by anybody who might want to sit on the lid . . ."

### Reaction in Congress

Congressmen, recently made aware of Welch's old accusation that former President Eisenhower was a Communist, are already looking askance at what they describe variously as a "trickle" or a "flood" of "impeach Warren" mail.

Republican Whip Sen. Thomas H. Kuchel of California, who said he had received about 200 letters since October, described the campaign as "contemptible and vicious." Sen. Kuchel said:

"One may, if he chooses, disagree on occasion with decisions of the Supreme Court, the votes of a member of Congress, or on a position which the American President takes. That is part of our right of free speech. But to attempt to heap slurs and abuse on any public figure poses an extremely dangerous problem for self government in this country."

Rep. Ken Hechler, D., W. Va., told the House on March 13 that the desks of many of its members "have been flooded for the past few weeks by a great deal of junk mail which maliciously and unfairly reflects on the integrity of our great chief justice of the United States, Earl Warren."

"I would like to know who is paying for all of these mimeographed and duplicated letters and cards . . ."

### High Endorsement

Rep. Edgar D. Hiestand (R-Calif.) is listed by the society as a member of its "Committee of Endorsers." Hiestand said he has been a member of the society for several years.

Rep. Hiestand told United Press International:

"It is a society of individualists dedicated to fighting Communism. They make up their own minds. They are violently anti-Communist. That is the one thing we have in common."

Hiestand said "a lot of prominent people have been misled by misinformation" and he is considering putting into the record a "well documented" reply to charges against the organization.

Rep. Gordon Scherer, R., O., a member of the House Un-American Activities Committee, also listed as an endorser, said he was not a member of the society, but "I look with favor on it."

### Form Letter Reply

The Senate Internal Security subcommittee is replying to inquiries with a form letter over the signature of its chairman, Sen. James O. Eastland D., Miss. It reads:

"The John Birch Society, about which you asked, is known to be a conservative anti-Communist organization officially. We are happy to state that it seems to be from our records, a patriotic organization. Very truly yours . . ."

All senators are not so sure. Senate Majority Leader Mike Mansfield, D., Mont., told the Senate:

"Something ought to be done to lay the facts before the

American people so they can judge this organization for what it is."

In California, Gov. Edmund G. Brown said on March 21 that he had asked State Atty. Gen. Stanley Mosk to look into the organization and report to him.

"Unless they violate a law, they have a right to speak," Brown said.

Welch telegraphed Brown the following day demanding a full-dress investigation by the State Senate's Un-American Activities Committee and promising "a dozen or a hundred or a thousand of our members in California will gladly testify."

### 'Oust Infiltrators'

Paul H. Talbert, Los Angeles insurance man who is a member of the society's council, said that if any members plead the Fifth Amendment "we would just love to find out just who these infiltrators are so that we can get rid of them."

Talbert said, "We all believe in loyalty oaths, preservation of the Connally Amendment, restoration of the investigative powers of the FBI and any other government committee for the purpose of investigating subversion . . ."

"What is happening to cause supposedly reputable newspapers to refer to us as Fascists, Neo-Fascists, Silver Shirts, Red Shirts, Black Shirts, subversives, and even to compare us with the Ku Klux Klan?"

### Attack on Churches

Congress was stirred to protest by the Birch Society's campaign against Chief Justice Earl Warren. But it is the society's



attack on the nation's churches that apparently has brought it to the attention of more communities—and has more bitterly divided those communities—than any of its other activities.

It is an attack that has been made for years by some religious fundamentalists and economic conservatives who see as both heresy and Communism the preaching of a "social gospel" which attempts to apply biblical teachings to current secular and political problems.

The people of Arizona are getting two barrels at the moment. It is one of the Birch Society's "biggest" states. And it is receiving similarly concentrated attention from the American Council of Christian Churches, a fundamentalist group which has been waging a hot war of words for many years against the larger National Council of Churches.

The division has been intensified by controversy over the House Committee on UN-American Activities' motion picture, "Operation Abolition," which is being promoted by the Birch Society, among many others, and which the National Council of Churches, also among others, has recommended not be shown without presentation of serious questions about its accuracy.

### Churches Answer

The Rev. Carl McIntire, a de-frocked Presbyterian minister who is a spokesman for the American Council, devoted his nation-wide radio program on two successive weeks to the situation in Phoenix, replying to a defense of the

National Council issued by 122 Phoenix clergymen.

In Santa Barbara, members of the First Presbyterian Church received through the mail a Birch Society "questionnaire" attacking its own church leadership and that of the National Council. The Rev. Eugene Carson Blake, stated clerk of the Presbyterian Church in the U. S. A. and a former National Council president, flew to Santa Barbara to accuse the Birch Society in a sermon: his text, "Thou Shalt Not Bear False Witness."

Blake told his audience:

"If you let these propagandists have their way they will divide this church right down the middle between Communists and fascists hating each other, labeling each other, and distrusting each other."

### Friction in Amarillo

At Amarillo, Brig. Gen. William L. Lee, retired commander of Amarillo Air Force Base, is head of the local Birch organization. He denied the society has anything to do with the rumored circulation of a list charging five prominent local men are Communists.

Lee said there are no Communists in Amarillo. But he acknowledged that the society is stirring up friction in local churches.

Gen. Lee told UPI:

"We have documented proof that the National Council has been infiltrated by Communists and some of these ministers just won't listen to us. Until we can convince them that the National Council has some Communist followers in it, there is going to be some friction."

Church leaders in Amarillo

have said they are fearful that congregations may be split into warring camps.

The Amarillo group has been less successful in another campaign. The public library refused to yield to its demand that it call off a "Great Decisions" discussion series sponsored by the 63-year-old Foreign Policy Association.

### Wichita's Battle

At Wichita, Kans., the society has moved to battle in policy matters in P-TA's, the library and college.

According to George H. Lewis, assistant professor of economics at the University of Wichita and director of the Kansas Council for Industrial Peace, they "virtually control the Wichita Chamber of Commerce and seem to have a dominant influence in the state chamber organization."

"One of their major objectives in the state is to destroy collective bargaining. They are preparing to push through some vicious anti-labor legislation during the next session."

### No Holds Barred

Members of the society from coast to coast have professed themselves undisturbed by Welch's pre-society charge that President Eisenhower was not a dupe but a Communist.

Said a Santa Barbara woman:

"If he (Eisenhower) is one, he doesn't know it."

Spruille Braden, former U. S. ambassador and a member of the society's council, said he didn't agree with the charge but that it in no way led him to question Welch's judgment

on other matters. Braden said of Welch:

"He may exaggerate sometimes. When you're in a har-rum brawl, no holds are barred. You don't fight by the Marquis of Queensberry rules."

(TOMORROW: Welch gives his opinion of Eisenhower, Taft, MacArthur and Goldwater; action of the opposition).

## Financial Matters

Welch said he wanted to raise \$1 million from sources other than dues during the society's first year—"and even that amount is an awfully small drop in the bucket, against what either the direct Communist propagandists or the Reutherite labor bosses are spending against us."

There is no public accounting of either money or membership.

Dues are \$24 a year for men and \$12 for women; life memberships are \$1,000, either sex. Appeals for additional voluntary contributions accompany virtually all mailing to members.

Welch has said he draws no salary. There are 28 full-time employees at headquarters and the society is reported to be the largest single source of revenue for the Belmont, Mass., post office next door.

Another 35 salaried persons work around the country as coordinators of member groups, and an additional 100 persons work full or almost full time as volunteers.

## Smear Technique

Welch frankly has borrowed the Communist technique of setting up "front" groups for specific purposes. He acknowledged that another technique he advocates—the use of loaded questions to smear a suspect he can't prove is a communist—is "mean and dirty."

Chapters operate at widely different levels of secrecy. In North Dakota, meetings are announced on local radio stations and everybody's welcome. The North Dakota organization, with about 400 members in 19 chapters, was active in a proposal to outlaw the federal income tax which was approved by the state's lower House but killed in the State Senate.

In Dallas, a 32-year-old businessman member of the society wouldn't give his name for publication, however, and explained:

"Most of our members in

Dallas are little people, just like I am. Most of these folks could not take a sustained smear attack. If it came along, they would probably be thrown out of their jobs. For that reason, the thing has been kept pretty quiet.

"There are no real millionaires in Dallas in it as far as I know."

He estimated there were 20 chapters in Dallas and said he had heard there were 100 in Houston. Chapters are generally made up of 20 members.

## 'Nose' for Reds

There is no rule of thumb in Welch's book for members to determine on their own who is or who isn't a Communist, or Communist dupe.

The blue book says:

"There are ways of sizing up both individuals and organizations in this battle which come only with experience, a knowledge of the interlocking plots and personalities and a feel for the way the Communists work."

"And while of course I can make mistakes too, I know from the way my opinion of various characters, formed independently, has then proved to coincide with the opinion of J. B. Matthews . . . that I have a fairly sensitive and accurate nose in this area . . . so we do not intend to be frustrated by indecisions of this nature."

Matthews is an associate editor of Welch's "American Opinion" as well as the standard by which he checks his nose for Communists.

He resigned as chief investigator to Sen. Joseph R. McCarthy's Senate Committee in 1953 after appearance in "The American Mercury" of Matthews' article stating that clergymen were "the largest single group supporting the Communist apparatus" in this country.

## Warren Campaign

The "most important activity" of the John Birch Society at the moment is its campaign to impeach Chief Justice Earl Warren.

In the view of the society's founder and leader, Robert Welch, the Supreme Court's School decision and all the racial troubles in the South have been brought about by Communists to foment civil war. "Civil rights" is a Communist slogan, "an exact parallel to the slogan of 'agrarian reform' which they used in



# Birch Society Alarms Department of Justice

Washington (UPI) — The Justice Department Friday expressed "concern" over the anti-Communist John Birch Society.

The Department refused to say whether it is investigating the semisecret society, but a spokesman said a "growing number of inquiries" the Justice Department has received about the John Birch Society has made it a matter of concern to the attorney general.

Vice-chairman Thomas J. Dodd (D., Conn.), of the Senate internal security subcommittee, said he would bring the possibility of investigating the archconservative group at the subcommittee's next meeting.

FBI director J. Edgar Hoover, in the April Law Enforcement Bulletin, severely criticized "vigilante action" by Americans combating communism. He did not mention any specific group.

He said Communists stand to gain from every rift among the American people. "Unfortunately, this involves certain people across the country who engage in reckless charges against one another."

"The label of Communist

Related Stories in  
Section 3, Page 5

is too often indiscriminately attached to those whose views differ from the majority," he added.

Dodd did not say whether he would press for a full-fledged investigation of the Birch Society.

Chairman John L. McClellan (D., Ark.) said his Senate government operations committee has no plans to investigate the society, because it has no jurisdiction.

Senate Republican whip Thomas H. Kuchel, Califor-

nia, Thursday proposed that the government operations committee call Robert Welch, of Belmont, Mass., head of the John Birch group, and demand that he substantiate charges of pro-communism he has made against former President Eisenhower and others, or apologize for making them.

The internal security subcommittee is headed by Sen. James O. Eastland (D., Miss.), but Dodd frequently serves as acting chairman.

The subcommittee so far has shown no inclination to look into the John Birch group's widespread activities.

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
3-31-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-43

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 3 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

# FBI Keeping Watch On Birch Movement

Bureau Chief, Attorney General,  
Solons Are Expressing Concern

By JIM MATHIS, Chief of The Post Washington Bureau

WASHINGTON — The Federal Bureau of Investigation has maintained a close watch on the development of the John Birch Society. The Houston Post has learned.

Though spokesmen for the Justice Department and for the bureau run by J. Edgar Hoover won't say an investigation is in progress, the bureau has kept far ahead of the rest of the country and newspapers in studying the movement.

**AGENTS HAVE SEEN** and read the controversial collection of speeches and letters entitled "The Politician" and attributed to Robert Welch, the founder of the society. The society says its aim is to fight Communism.

Agents have also inquired into the formation of such society policies as the attempt to impeach U.S. Chief Justice Earl Warren.

No attempt has been made, it is understood, to investigate individuals in the society, although the bureau has kept a lookout for possible Communist infiltration. None has been found.

**THE RESULT OF** investigations, and concern such as was expressed Friday by Atty Gen Robert F. Kennedy, plus demands for congressional inquiry into the organization, led to strong statements in the April 1 Law Enforcement Bulletin written by FBI Director Hoover.

Said Hoover, in warning against "reckless charges," "vigilante action," and "inept attempts" to fight Communism:

"The job of curtailing and containing Communism is one for legally constituted authorities with the steadfast co-operation of every loyal citizen.

"This is neither the time for inaction nor vigilante action.

"**ATTRIBUTING** every adversity to Communism is not only irrational, but contributes to hysteria and fosters groundless fears.

"There is above all the danger of irresponsible counter-action by citizens who lend impetus to Communism through attempts to fight this insidious menace."

The statements from Hoover, which named no one nor no

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-1-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOFfile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-44

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 3 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



organization, still must have been a shock to the society, which numbers the veteran FBI director among their front-line heroes.

The attorney general got into the outcry much more gently than Hoover. Through his press assistant, Kennedy let it become known that "the growing number of inquiries which the Justice Department has received about the John Birch Society has made it a matter of concern to the attorney general."

MEANWHILE, the National Association of Manufacturers in New York, which Welch once served as a board member, also made public a resolution passed last month in which it, in effect, censured the John Birch Society.

Charles R. Sligh Jr., NAM executive vice president, said the resolution was prepared and drawn up with the assistance of three former NAM presidents who are listed as members of the society's governing council.

The resolution, while not naming Welch, affirmed the NAM's confidence in Former President Eisenhower, labeled a Communist by Welch in "The Politician."

"THE NAM DOES NOT and will not knowingly associate with any individual or be a party to any organization that questions the loyalty and integrity of Former President Eisenhower or attempts to degrade the fundamental respect due him and his high office," the resolution said.

Sligh said Welch had not been connected with the association for many years.

Denunciations and demands for investigations were also resounding on Capitol Hill. Vice Chairman Thomas J. Dodd, D-Conn., of the Senate internal security subcommittee, headed the list. Dodd said he would bring up the possibility of an investigation at the next subcommittee meeting.

Dodd has been one of the most outspoken anti-Communist members of the Senate. He is known to feel the society and Welch's writings have damaged efforts to contain Communism.

OTHER SENATORS were simply renewing attacks launched before.

Sen Milton R. Young, R-Ind., who fired first among congressmen, said he had been deluged by a barrage of letters accusing him "of all manner of things." Young said many people, however, did not know about Welch's writings and accusations against important and respected officials.

Sen Thomas H. Kuchel, R-Calif., charged Welch with a "fantastic and incredible libel" for branding Mr. Eisenhower a card-carrying Communist.

Neither the Senate subcommittee nor the House Un-American Activities Committee appeared

anxious to launch an investigation, however.

Demands for activity from the conservative un-American Activities Committee came from Rep Henry S. Reuss, D-Wis.

Rep Donald C. Bruce, R-Ind., said the allegations made by Welch were before the society was formed. He said many people in his district in the society were good people, and he would move slowly in investigating them.

ONE DEFENDER, Rep Edgar W. Hiestand, R-Calif., called a news conference to make clear his position as a member. Hiestand disclosed his membership Thursday, and before newsmen met with him he telephoned Welch in Boston.

"My advice," Hiestand said, "is for people not to sound off before they have all the facts."

Hiestand said that 98 per cent of the people in the organization were emphatic anti-Communists, and no more. Only about 2 per cent would be extremists, he said. He admitted that there were some policies of the society "to which he did not agree."

"I CHOOSE to stay in the society," he added. "To me, the society would seem to have a achievement than any of the other sound and fine patriotic groups I know."

Hiestand said that the current newspaper stories on the society were Communist-inspired, and were proof of the good work the society was doing. He was asked to be specific in these charges, but was not.

The congressman said the society had a goal of 100,000 members. He named Rep John Roussetot, R-Calif., as another congressional member.

## John Birch Society Founder Asks Probe

Boston (UPI)—Robert Welch, founder of the John Birch Society, sent a telegram to the Senate internal security subcommittee Saturday asking for an official investigation of his organization.

Welch told Sen. James O. Eastland, chairman of the subcommittee, that members would testify openly and, "unlike our Communist enemies, none of our members will plead the Fifth Amendment."

(In Washington, Eastland said he had received Welch's telegram and would submit his request for an investigation to the subcommittee at its next meeting. The senator said that because of the Easter recess of Congress, he did not know when the subcommittee would meet next, but that he would call a meeting "as quickly as I can.")

### Kennedy Concerned

The request for an investigation came after the Justice Dept. reported in Washington that Atty Gen. Robert F. Kennedy was concerned about the ultra-conservative John Birch Society.

Sen. Thomas J. Dodd (D. Conn.) vice-chairman of the Senate subcommittee, said he would raise the possibility of a Senate investigation of the anti-Communist group. Other members of Congress pressed for an investigation.

FBI Director Herbert Hoover, in the April 1 Law Enforcement Bulletin, warned against "reckless charges" and "vigilante action." He said:

The job of curtailing and containing communism is one for legally constituted authorities with the steadfast cooperation of every loyal citizen.

### Danger Present

"This is neither the time for inaction nor vigilante action.

"Attributing every adversity to communism is not only irrational, but contributes to hysteria and fosters groundless fears.

"There is above all the danger of irresponsible counteraction by citizens who lend impetus to communism through attempts to fight this insidious menace."

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
4-2-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-45

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 3 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



# Birch Society Eyed By Bobby Kennedy

*While the story continues over the John Birch Society The Press continues presenting detailed and authoritative dispatches on the group. On Page 2 you'll find the third of these reports by a special UPI reporting team.—THE EDITOR.*

WASHINGTON, March 31.—(UPI)—A congressional member of the controversial John Birch Society defended the organization as an anti-Communist group today but other congressmen talked of an investigation, and the Justice Department expressed "concern."

Rep. Edgar W. Hiestand, R., Cal., the first congressman to identify himself as a member of the society, told a press conference he would welcome a congressional investigation. He said he felt the society had the best chance of successfully fighting "the Communist conspiracy."

## Mum on Probe

The Justice Department refused to say whether it is investigating the semi-secret society, but a spokesman said a "growing number of inquiries the Justice Department has received about the John Birch Society has made it a matter of concern to the attorney general."

Hiestand, however, rejected a call by the society's founder, Robert H. Welch Jr., for the impeachment of Chief Justice Earl Warren. Hiestand also said the founder's charges that former President Eisenhower was a Communist dupe had been misinterpreted.

Hiestand said he didn't know how many chapters or members the society had, but identified Rep. John H. Rousselot, R., Cal., as one other John Birch member he knew of in Congress. He said there might be others.

Rousselot was not available immediately for comment.

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
3-31-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-46

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 3 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

### Claims No Secrecy

Hiestand said the society was not a secret or Fascist organization. Besides anti-Communism, he said, its aims were to promote "less and less government."

Hiestand issued a statement saying he and the society's founder would "welcome a congressional investigation—the more thorough the better." However, he said he had not asked the House Committee on Un-American Activities to start an investigation. He added:

"I disagree on several things with the founder—just as I do not subscribe to everything in the Republican platform or agree with what all Republicans say. But I choose to stay because the society as a whole is a 98 per cent dedicated anti-Communist group."

Asked to explain the reference to 98 per cent, Hiestand said any such group might have members who "sound off and become extremists."

Vice Chairman Thomas J. Dodd, D., Conn., of the Senate Internal Security subcommittee said he would bring up the possibility of investigating the arch-conservative group at the subcommittee's next meeting.

### Hoover Criticizes 'Vigilantes'

FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover, in the April Law Enforcement Bulletin, severely criticized "vigilante action" by Americans combating Communism. He did not mention any specific group.

He said Communists stand to gain from every rift among the American people, adding:

"Unfortunately, this involves certain people across the country who engage in reckless charges against one another."

"The label of Communist is too often indiscriminately attached to those whose views differ from the majority."

Dodd did not say whether he would press for a full-fledged investigation of the Birch society.

Chairman John L. McClellan, D., Ark., said his Senate Government Operations Committee has no plans to investigate the society because it has no jurisdiction. The committee and its permanent investigating subcommittee, also headed by McClellan, have broad investigative powers but only in matters affecting government activities.

### Demands Welch Be Called

Senate Republican whip Thomas H. Kuchel, Cal., proposed yesterday that the government operations committee call Welch and demand that he substantiate charges of pro-Communism he has made against former President Eisenhower and others or apologize for making them.

Dodd's subcommittee so far

has shown no inclination to look into the John Birch group's widespread activities. It has been answering inquiries with a form letter over Chairman Sen. James O. Eastland's signature saying the group is a "conservative anti-Communist organization" and that so far as subcommittee records show is a "patriotic organization."

Kuchel and Dodd both attacked the society in Senate speeches yesterday and termed Welch's accusations "outrageous."

Sen. Milton R. Young, R., N. D., who first discussed the society in a Senate speech March 8, followed Dodd and Kuchel. He said he had been subjected to a barrage of letters accusing him of "all manner of things." But he said he was confident that many members were unaware of Welch's accusations against Mr. Eisenhower and other prominent persons.

### Congressional Probe Urged by Wright

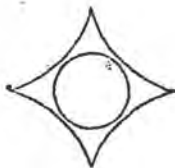
U. S. Rep. Jim Wright, a senatorial candidate, let it be known he wants to bring the John Birch Society under the "searching scrutiny" of a congressional investigation.

Campaigning in Houston yesterday, he said he would call such an investigation to disclose

the means the organization employs to try and influence and intimidate people into submission or silence.

Rep. Wright, who calls himself a political moderate, was speaking of the society when he said at the far right extreme there is a little group "so brainwashed by a barrage of one-sided propaganda that they have come to view their own government as their greatest enemy."





KXYZ

A NAFI BROADCAST DIVISION STATION • GULF BUILDING • HOUSTON, TEXAS • CAPITOL 2-6151

March 23, 1961

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover  
Director, The Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Ninth and Pennsylvania Avenue, N.W.  
Washington, D. C.

Dear Mr. Hoover:

Recently the John Birch Society has been very much in the news. Radio Station KXYZ has received hundreds of queries about the F.B.I.'s attitude toward the society from both members and critics.

Some members proclaim that you have endorsed the society. I have been unable to find this endorsement in any public statement of yours.

Since the John Birch Society Blue Book, with which I am sure you are acquainted, says on page 159 that John Birch is a secret society which considers democracy a perennial fraud. I would like to know whether the society is under surveillance or investigation by the F.B.I.

I will appreciate any enlightenment you might give me on the subject.

Sincerely,

b6  
b7C

[Redacted signature box]  
[Redacted name box] KXYZ

VE/jej

62-1521-47

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 3 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

March 31, 1961

b6  
b7C

[REDACTED]  
**KXYZ**  
Gulf Building  
Houston, Texas

Dear [REDACTED]

Your letter of March 23, 1961, has been received, and the interest which prompted your communication is appreciated.

Although I would like to be of service, the FBI is an investigative agency of the Federal Government and does not make evaluations or draw conclusions as to the character or integrity of any organization, publication or individual. Further, information in FBI files must be maintained as confidential through a regulation of the Department of Justice. I regret that I am unable to answer your inquiry, and hope you will not infer in this connection either that we do or do not have the specific data you requested. In light of the foregoing, I can assure you that I have made no statements endorsing the group about which you inquired.

Sincerely yours,  
J. Edgar Hoover

1 - Houston - Enclosure

62-1521-48

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 1 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	





SAYLOR HOUSTON POST

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-5-61

HOUSTON, TEXAS

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOFILE: 62-1521)

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR - 5 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

62-1521-110

## SOUND-OFF

# Mrs Rogers Asks What Critics Of Birch Society Have Done

I am a member of the John Birch Society and would like to make a few comments on the criticism of this organization.

If the John Birch Society does nothing but arouse Americans to action against Communism, I feel our society has been effective. I would like to see some letters from some of our critics listing just what they have personally done in the last 30 days to combat Communism. If our way is the wrong way, let's see some proof of the other ways and action taken immediately.

One way a newspaper could get the ball rolling is print a series on the front page of Communist ideology. We can defeat Communist ideology and at the same time build up our own country by the combined process of exposure and education. How about starting the ball rolling?

We must understand and recognize the enemy we face, his nature, objectives, tactics, strategy, who he is, and how he works in our everyday life.

As a member of the John Birch Society, I challenge our critics to show us that Communism can be fought successfully another way and get results.

MRS WM. P. ROGERS

5715 Warm Springs

1) Last Friday, the day you wrote your letter, Mrs Rogers, J. Edgar Hoover explained how the citizen can best fight Communism. In the April 1 issue of the Law Enforcement Bulletin, the FBI director wrote: "The job of curtailing and containing Communism is one for legally constituted authorities with the steadfast co-operation of every loyal citizen. This is neither the time for inaction nor vigilante action." If a citizen has evidence of subversion the FBI is at his service. The phone number and address are in the Telephone Directory under United States Government Offices. 2) The Post is on the ball, Mrs Rogers. In 1958, when FBI Director Hoover wrote his "Masters of Deceit," Jim Mathis of The Post sat down with him and distilled his ideas into a series, "The Communist Scourge." It appeared on Page 1 of The Post in April, 1958. In 1959, The Post reprinted Harry and Bonaro Overstreet's "What We Must Know About Communism." It appeared on Page 1 and the Editorial Page in March, April and May of 1959—Editor.

THE HOUSTON POST

4-6-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-50

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 6 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



### Arthur C. Evans Sr Quotes Huey P. Long

America's most able practitioner of the John Birch Society once stated that when Fascism came to the U. S. it would come in the guise of patriotism. It is certain that, more than any man of our time, he knew that to be true. The man was Huey P. Long. Surely patriotism is devoutly to be desired in all citizens. But, also, let us remember that it is truly "... the last refuge of scoundrels." Members of the John Birch Society seem not to know that statements attributed to them in the press and other media could not have been made with impunity were it not for the existence of the very court they would destroy.

ARTHUR C. EVANS SR

2617 Milwaukee

### Revoltin', Says Harold Andrew

It seems to me that the Communist bosses are calling out their big guns to meet the challenge of the John Birch Society, by bringing an editorial to the front page such as the revolting article in your paper today (March 29). I suggest that you print some anti-Communism articles on the front page instead of attacking one of the few groups that are apparently making some progress in this fight to the death for freedom. I am not a member of the John Birch Society but am joining as soon as I can ...

HAROLD ANDREW

Onalaska

### Give Welch a Chance, Says Everett Lindstrom

I am glad that we still have freedom of the press and can print such articles as the one about the John Birch Society. However, I would like to see Robert Welch get a better chance to defend himself, since Wednesday's article was slanted against him.

I would like to see The Houston Post become more conservative and patriotic.

EVERETT LINDSTROM

528 Sheldon Road, Channelview

The Post has given a clear explanation of Mr Welch's views, Mr Lindstrom.—Editor.

### Mrs Patrick Is Beginning to Suspect

Although I am not a member of the John Birch Society nor do I agree with all of their views, I do know enough about the society to know that your recent articles regarding this organization are definitely biased and unfair and am beginning to suspect some truth in their statement that the mass media of communications is pro-Communist. Mr Welch may be somewhat of an alarmist, but when the American people are exposed to such one-

sided reports from their so-called "objective" newspapers, I think it is high time for every one to become alarmed. Has the society been hitting too close to home in their accusations?

MRS D. J. PATRICK

5850 Flamingo

### Right or Wrong, Says Conrad Hofer

I believe it's past time the people started doing something, and the John Birch Society is doing something, right or wrong, until someone has the backbone to come up with something better.

CONRAD HOFER

6205 Tanager

## Birch Society's Right to Speak Belongs Equally to Other Views

The John Birch society is the newest topic of conversation.

This week, The Chronicle printed widely different views of the society by columnists Holmes Alexander and Ralph McGill.

Neither man questioned that the members of the society are sincere. Neither doubts that the vast majority of Americans concur with the society in its expressed objective: to oppose communism.

But both men found the methods and statements of the society sufficiently controversial to discuss. Mr. Alexander weighed the evidence and concluded the members were patriots; Mr. McGill weighed the evidence and concluded that the members were following dangerous dogma.

It is easy to say: "I oppose commu-

nism." The statement calls for no definition of communism—and anyone who reads the columnists or the letters to The Chronicle knows that the individual definitions vary widely. The statement calls for no evaluation of the techniques of opposing whatever target is defined—and anyone who read both columnists on the Birch Society knows that where one man said on balance, that the good outweighed the questionable means, the other said that the questionable means endangered the very freedoms we seek to protect.

One man whose views draw respect from all discussants is J. Edgar Hoover, director of the FBI, whose personal and official concern with communism is widely known. Mr. Hoover says:

"The job of curtailing and containing communism is one for the legally constituted authorities with the steadfast co-operation of every loyal citizen. This is neither the time for inaction or vigilante action.

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
4-5-61

Houston, Texas

W. P. STEVEN, Editor

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-51

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 6 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

11



"Attributing every adversity to communism is not only irrational but contributes to hysteria and fosters groundless fears. There is, above all, the danger of irresponsible counter-action by citizens who lend impetus to communism through attempts to fight this insidious menace."

What Mr. Hoover is saying, if we read him rightly, is this:

1. We should have confidence in our governmental leadership.
2. We have many strengths in our democratic system that negate the strengths of communism.

Among the organizations which come under the disfavor of the John Birch society is the American Civil Liberties Union. Last week the California chairman of the A.C.L.U. wrote to Gov. Edmund G. Brown of California:

"The right of all citizens to hold and to advocate their political views, regardless of how extreme and distorted these views may be, is inviolate. Only a showing that the advocacy of such views constitutes 'a clear and present danger' that unlawful acts will be committed would justify a restraint upon speech or assembly of the John Birch society. Even the alleged secret character of the society does not constitute grounds for investigation. As long as its assembly is peaceable, any minority has the right to conduct its business in private fashion."

This seems to The Chronicle clearly in accord with the United States Constitution, with the principle of free speech, assembly, and petition. Without holding brief for the A.C.L.U., it would be our wish that the John Birch society approach those who disagree with its views with the same judicious tolerance for their freedom of expression as the American Civil Liberties Union has extended to the John Birch society.

## THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE AND HERALD

PUBLISHED DAILY BY THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE PUBLISHING CO.  
(REG. U.S. PATENT) 512-520 TEXAS STREET, HOUSTON 2, TEXAS

JESSE H. JONES, Publisher, 1926-1956

JOHN T. JONES, JR., President

J. H. BUTLER, Executive Vice-President  
and General Manager

M. J. BUTLER, Business Manager

F. E. WARREN, Secretary-Treasurer  
and Controller

H. W. MOSSBERGER, Adv. Director

W. P. STEVEN, Editor

M. E. WALTER, Vice-Pres. and  
Editorial Consultant

HAROLD G. PYLE, Associate Editor

EVERETT COLLIER, Managing Editor

HARRY L. MCCLEARY, News Editor

CLAYTE BIRNIE, Production Editor

DAN COBB, City Editor

## Texas Legion Chief Says Birch Group's Aim Good

AUSTIN — (P) — The commander of the Texas Department of the American Legion said Saturday the work of the John Birch Society "is effective and directed for the right purpose."

Pete E. Turner of Midland spoke before the Texas Legion Department's committee on counter-subversive activities. The committee will recommend to the Texan Legion's executive committee here Sunday an official position on the Birch Society. A final decision will come from the executive committee.

**MEETING IN** a local hotel, the Legionnaires also discussed the controversial House un-American Activities Committee film "Operation Abolition." The film concerns the student demonstrations during the committee's 1960 hearings in San Francisco, Calif.

"I am not asking that the American Legion make a blanket endorsement of the John Birch Society," Turner said. He added he hopes the committee will point out "the attacks on the John Birch Society is a part of a conspiracy that began in Moscow."

Robert Welch, the former Boston candy manufacturer who heads the society, was invited either to appear at the meeting or to answer by mail a Legion questionnaire on the society's work. Welch neither appeared nor answered the questionnaire.

**TURNER SAID** the society's "design, its purpose is good." He said the American press, which in recent weeks has been critical of the three-year-old conservative society, lifted from what he said was a West Coast Communist publication, "a story attacking the John Birch Society, without there being a voice raised from the society to point out the truth."

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-9-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOfile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-52

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 10 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



He said what he called the country's "liberal press" had aided a Communist conspiracy "to crucify a patriotic organization by giving a unilateral dissertation on the subject matter."

Turner said wire services carried no stories of a speech Turner made before the 16th District Legion convention in McCamey March 25, in which he commended the Birch Society.

**AFTER TURNER** spoke, the committee met briefly in closed session, then turned to examining a large collection of publications and documents dealing with "Operation Abolition."

Bill Neel of Lubbock, chairman of the counter-subversive activities committee, said "it is not the purpose of this committee to scream Communist behind every tree."

During the reading at length of House un-American activities reports and other publications, Neel said the Rt Rev James Pike, bishop of the Episcopal Diocese of California, had spoken in favor of the student demonstrations in San Francisco.

Neel said Pike has stated he believes "Joseph was the biological father of Jesus Christ."

**"I MIGHT POINT** out that many people opposed to the House un-American Activities Committee seem to have some radical interpretation of the Holy Bible," Neel said. "We are facing a battle of God and anti-God."

"It shall be the purpose of this committee not to call anyone a Communist," Neel said.

The John Birch Society now claims hundreds of members in Dallas, Houston, West Texas and the Texas Panhandle. It has had its greatest growth in Texas in the past year.

In his speech in McCamey, Turner said:

"We do know that the John Birch Society is hurting the Communist cause. We do know that many Legionnaires belong to this organization and are doing effective work against Communism. The occasion, therefore, is to determine if the society hurts the cause of Americanism."

● **PRINCETON, NJ** — (AP) — Sen Jacob K. Javits, R-NY, demanded Saturday that Congress investigate the John Birch Society.

"Congress must show consistency in its congressional investigations by the willingness to investigate extreme right wing organizations as well as extreme left wing groups," he said at a news conference following a speech to a Princeton University symposium.

Javits said he did not object to the society on the grounds of its political philosophy, with which he said he disagrees, but rather because of its secrecy and methods of operation.

## Roundup of Comments On John Birch Society

The attorney general of the United States, two candidates

for the United States Senate from Texas, persons already in Congress, churchmen, an American Legion official and officials of the society itself expressed opinions last week on the John Birch Society.

"Ridiculous," said Atty Gen Robert F. Kennedy of the society, whose members say their purpose is to fight Communism.

"I THINK THAT THEY make no contribution, in my estimation, to the fight against Communism here in the United States, and in fact I think if anything, that they are a hindrance," the attorney general said.

Sen William A. Blakley, a Democrat campaigning for election to the Senate seat to which he was appointed, and John Tower, a Republican who got into a runoff with Blakley for the Senate position last week, were not ready to make positive statements for or against the Birch Society.

Each said he had never been a member of the society, though

each had some supporters in the society.

**EACH SAID HE** was convinced of the patriotism of Former President Dwight D. Eisenhower, whose patriotism has been questioned by some members and the leader of the Birch Society.

Blakley said he believes some members of the society have high ideals and are sincerely dedicated to fighting Communism.

Tower said he did not know enough about the Birch Society to denounce or defend it.

"I'VE HEARD both sides of the story," he said. "I've been too busy with my campaign and haven't had the opportunity to study the question."

At Princeton University, Sen Jacob Javits, R-NY, said:

"The John Birch Society has now come along to remind us again that the principles of a free society can be eroded from the extreme right as well as the extreme left."

Said Sen Stephen M. Young, an early critic of the society: "It is an ideological

abomination and the self-appointed vigilantes who are its leaders deserve the disdain and scorn of every American who values his democratic heritage."

**PETE E. TURNER** of Midland, state commander of the American Legion, told the Legion's state-wide counter-subversives activity committee, which was meeting to make a report on the Birch Society, that the society's design and purpose are good.

Last month he said, "I shall ask the committee to congratulate the John Birch Society for its effective work in fighting Communism."

Clarence Manion, former dean of the Notre Dame University law school and now a radio broadcaster and a member of the Birch Society's national council, said an attack had been started on the society by a California Communist newspaper, the People's World, on Feb 25.

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-9-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-53

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 10 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



"THEN TIME MAGAZINE came out in almost the same words as the People's World," said Manion, and the so-called liberal columnists began to pour it on."

A resolution passed at a Houston meeting of the Texas Synod of the Evangelical and Reformed Church condemned the Birch Society, saying such groups "in the name of saving democracy are aiding in its destruction by sowing seeds of mutual distrust and fear in communities, and bearing false witness against God."

Dr. James S. Riley, pastor of the Second Baptist Church, wrote of the society in his church paper: "There is something frightening and disturbing about this and any and all movements which are primarily negative and are built on suspicion, distrust of one's neighbors, and genuine doubts concerning our nation and the great majority of her people."

**THERE WAS DEFENSE** of the society by G. B. Rowland, a Houston Birch chapter leader, in a speech to the Salesmanship Club.

Some had said the Birch Society members see Communists under every bed.

"The John Birch Society does not see Communists under every bed because American cowards have taken up all the room," said Rowland.



**LEGION COMMITTEE MEETS** — Members of a committee of the American Legion met in Austin to work out a report on the John Birch Society and the controversial film "Operation Abolition." Chatting before the closed session are, left to right, Bill Neel of Lubbock, head of the Legion's state-wide counter-subversive activities committee; William G. Mani, Cuero; Pete E. Turner, Midland, Legion state commander; and Walter J. White of Houston.—AP Wirephoto

## Welch Will Speak Here Under SAR's Auspices

Robert Welch, the founder of the John Birch Society, has accepted an invitation to speak in the Music Hall here the night of April 18.

The retired candy manufacturer wired his acceptance Friday to Frank Tritico, secretary of the Paul Carrington Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution.

"THIS WILL BE a public meeting," Tritico said. "Everybody will be welcome until the Music Hall is filled."

Tritico thus laid to rest reports of a rift between his group and the John Birch Society over who would be admitted to the 3,000-seat Music Hall.

He had been quoted earlier as saying there would be no room for John Birch members.

Tritico, acting for the executive committee of his organization, had wired an invitation to Welch Thursday night to speak here. He said the committee approved the invitation unanimously after learning that Welch planned to visit Houston.

"THIS MAN HAS a right to

speak, just as others have a right to speak against him," Tritico said. "We'd like to hear what he has to say."

However, Akard S. Beall, a Houston co-ordinator of the society, said Welch's office in Belmont, Mass. told him by telephone Friday that Welch's talk would not be a defense of the John Birch Society.

In the acceptance wire, an aide said Welch would talk on "Through All the Days To Be."

Beall said Welch's office had no details on his visit here, except that there would be no press conference.

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-8-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOFfile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-54

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 10 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



## Birch Member Rowland Charges Americans Soft, Defends Group

A Houston chapter leader said Friday that "the John Birch Society does not see Communists under every bed because American cowards have already taken all the room."

G. B. Rowland, owner of the Monarch Laundry and Cleaning Co, made the remark after finishing a talk to the Salesmanship Club in the Rice Hotel.

**IN HIS TALK**, Rowland asked:

"Why can't we act like Americans for just a little while and save our confounded necks?"

Rowland, who said he heads a chapter of 15 members, charged that the American people have gone soft and lazy. He said they need a shock treatment to unite them in fighting Communism.

The John Birch Society has been accused of endangering democracy by using the Communists' own tactics in its work.

**"WHEN ARE** Americans going to quit trying to destroy Americans who are trying to help America?" Rowland asked.

Marvin Zindler, a club member, introduced Rowland as a

man who had sold his country club membership and his boat and was selling a ranch and other property.

His object: To raise money to fight Communism.

Zindler said Rowland also hired private detectives to guard him against his enemies, adding that he understood Rowland always carried a shotgun in his car.

**ROWLAND LATER** said he does not carry a shotgun, but he does keep a .38 caliber pistol in his car. He said he has a right to carry the gun because he is an auxiliary deputy sheriff.

Asked if his enemies were Communists, he said no.

"Just a lunatic fringe," he said. "I don't know why they are after me, but it probably has nothing to do with the John Birch Society."

In a question period after his talk, Rowland was asked if he agreed with writings by Robert Welch, the society founder, that Former Presidents Eisenhower, Truman and Roosevelt were Communists or traitors.

**"I AM CERTAIN** that none of

them has ever been a Communist," Rowland replied. "Traitors? Not at all."

He added, though, that some traitors had been found in government. He named Alger Hiss as one.

Rowland, who tape-recorded the session, disputed charges that the society was secret or a hate group.

He said the society has found that many Negroes and Jews want to join.

**"WE ARE SO SECRET** that we want you to know everything we know," he told the group. "We are so secret and so selective that we invite all of you to join up."

Rowland was asked about a statement by Atty Gen Robert Kennedy that he was having the FBI check on the society.

"I had a member of my chapter do that (run a check) on the society and also on me," Rowland replied. "Then I told him, 'Son, it takes two to tango, so I'm going to have you checked.'"

"I haven't seen him since."

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-8-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-55

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 10 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

# Birch Society Is Denounced

By Helen T. Hall

The Atlanta Constitution

A SUBSTANTIAL public service was rendered the nation by the disclosure, contained in the San Francisco Chronicle and the Los Angeles Times, by exposure of the dangers of the secret, self-organized John Birch Society, which sought to cloak its leaders with anti-communism.

The organizer of this secret society, Robert Welch, a New Englander, reportedly had said in letters and in a book, so extreme his supporters have sought to withdraw all copies from circulation, that Dr. William Eisenhower, the late Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, and Allen Dulles, then and now head of the U. S. Central Intelligence Agency, were members of the Communist underground.

THE organization also denounced the U. S. Supreme Court, including Chief Justice Warren, and the U. S. Congress, as dupes of or participants in the Communist conspiracy.

Others of like prominence and undisputed loyalty were equally denounced.

The more extreme followers of the late Sen. Joe McCarthy have joined in. They apparently are supplying the secretly organized society with new recruits.

It is believed to be the McCarthy followers who had the preposterous book withdrawn.

They hope, according to the best information, to take over the existing secret cells and use them "more intelligently."

THE two California newspapers, the San Francisco Chronicle and the San Francisco Examiner, and the other the nationally known Los Angeles Times, correctly exposed the John Birch Society, and all like it, to be as dangerous as anti-communism.

Former Vice President Nixon has publicly joined in condemning the John Birch Society.

But activity of this blue print to disaster in America.

This Birch group, in a number of communities, already has carried out efforts. Its members have infiltrated a few local PTA's, civic clubs, church boards of deacons or vestries, and other community organizations.

THE BEAUMONT ENTERPRISE  
4-5-61

Beaumont, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-56

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 7 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



HERE and there across the country, Rotary, Kiwanis and Lions Clubs have been astounded by some articulate, aggressive persons who took over the microphone at the conclusion of meetings and launched into a somewhat wild, extreme denunciation of local leaders as Communists or fellow travelers.

PTA groups have been thrown into disorder and confusion by similar tactics. Vestries and other church governing groups, women's guilds and chapters, have begun to be surprised by persons engaged in character assassination of the minister or church leaders.

This is according to the society's secret plan, which is to make Americans fear one another and afraid to talk.

Postcards have begun to appear in the mail damning democracy and praising fascism.

THIS group, though not numerically large, seeks to give the impression of many by making a lot of noise. Like all Fascist or semi-Fascist groups, they seek to impose the silence of fear and doubt.

They are trained in the art of flooding a person or organization with mail or telephone calls.

The late Huey Long once said that fascism would come to this country, but it would appear in another guise. It would come wrapped in the flag claiming to be a savior of democracy.

The attorney general of California, who is conducting an in-

vestigation of the fanatic groups of the right, who, of course, are as dangerous as communism, gave six tests which will enable Americans to determine whether an organization advocates extremist doctrine.

1. DOES the organization attack churches and schools with blanket accusations?
2. Does it attack other traditional American institutions with wild, unsupported charges?
3. Does it label everyone with whom it disagrees politically as un-American or subversive?
4. Does it try to rewrite modern history by blaming American statesmen for wars, communism, depression and other world ills?
5. Does it resort to crude pressure tactics such as anonymous phone calls and letter-writing?
6. Do the spokesmen of the group appear more interested in the size of their money collections than in the principles they purport to espouse?

"APPLY these six tests," he said, "and you will avoid entangling memberships with such groups as the American Nazi Party, the Communists, the Ku Klux Klan, the John Birch Society, the Cinema Education Guild, the Muslims and others of that type."

## Letters to The Editor

Democracy Best Safeguard  
Editor, Enterprise:

In the John Birch Society's diligent effort to impeach Earl Warren I believe its leaders are cynically aware of the fact that the Supreme Court in upholding the civil liberties of members of

certain minority groups and some who have "taken" the Fifth Amendment would just as surely safeguard the rights of you and me should such be necessary.

This very guarantee, of course, poses a real threat to government by a power elite.

My purpose in writing is merely to add my protest against totalitarianism in any form to that of others, believing that a truly democratic form of government, in offering the most benefits to the greatest number of citizens while safeguarding the rights of each individual, can be the most effective deterrent against communism or any other "ism".

MRS. CHARLES R. STEELE,  
2317 Tilley,  
Orange, Tex.

# What Blakley And Tower Say Of Birch Group

## EXCLUSIVE

By GENE WILBURN  
Press Staff Writer

Both candidates in Texas' special U. S. Senate runoff election today flatly declared that they were not and had never been members of the ultra-conservative and controversial John Birch Society.

Each of the hopefuls—interim Sen. William Blakley of Dallas and Republican John G. Tower of Wichita Falls, said they received support from John Birch elements in Tuesday's elimination election, where they topped a field of 71 candidates.

In exclusive interviews from their respective homes with The Press, the runoff candidates readily said they were not members but approached discussion of the controversial society with caution.

### Identical Questions

In answer to identical questions posed by The Press, here is the manner in which each of the candidates discussed the John Birch Society:

Q. Are you a member of the John Birch Society?

BLAKLEY: "No. No, I am not."

TOWER: "No, I'm not a member."

Q. Have you ever been a member of the John Birch Society?

BLAKLEY: "No I have not."

TOWER: "No, No, I have never been a member."

Q. What are your feelings about the John Birch Society?

BLAKLEY: "I do not know too much about this organization."

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
4-6-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-57

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 7 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



"From what I do know, I think the idea for which it stands, the principles upon which it is based — that is the fight against Communism — are good.

"A lot of the people connected with the organization are mighty fine people.

"But there may be some objection to the manner in which they go about getting things done.

TOWER: "I have formed no conclusive opinion as yet about the John Birch Society, because I have been too involved in my own election campaigns to delve into a group's background.

"I know some of the John Birch Society members are supporters of mine and worked to aid my election. I know there are many fine people in the organization.

"But I would like to reserve judgment of the Society until I know more about it.

"I have had time to fully explore the organization's activities and methods.

### **'Society Took No Stand,' Says Leader**

Akard Reall, volunteer co-ordinator for the John Birch Society in the Houston area, told The Press prior to Tuesday's special election:

"The Society is and has taken no stand — as a group — in the election. However, many of our members are endorsing one candidate or another.

Both runoff candidates are conservatives.

# Houston Member Of Birch Society Says Public 'Misinformed'

By JOHN TACKETT  
Press Staff Writer

Another Houston member of the controversial John Birch Society, and a sympathizer with the ultra-conservative group, today spoke out against what they called "misinformation" carried in newspapers about the organization.

J. C. Norris, a 37-year-old engineer who lives at 9829 Cedardale, and J. P. Chudleigh, also an engineer, 39, of 3827 Alberton, said the society is neither secret nor subversive. Mr. Norris said:

"The primary purpose of John Birch Society members is to educate themselves by reading congressional publications.

"When you attend a John Birch meeting, the first thing you do is pledge allegiance to the flag of the United States."

Mr. Norris said he joined the organization in January after attending two chapter meetings, talking with members and reading the "Blue Book," the society's "Bible."

He said it is not necessarily true that all members agree with opinions made public by the organization's founder, Robert Welch.

## Regarding the Charge

He said Mr. Welch made the written accusation that former President Eisenhower was a "conscious agent of the Communist Party" before he founded the John Birch Society, and that

he himself did not "name" Mr. Eisenhower.

"As a matter of fact, I voted for him," he added.

Mr. Norris and Mr. Chudleigh said they believed some organized center of opposition to the society was making itself felt through newspapers and magazines.

They said the basic injustice done the organization is due to a half-truth presentation of its works and motives. Said Mr. Norris:

"There is nothing secret about it . . . anyone who wants to can get all this information."

Literature to which he referred is the Blue Book, monthly bulletins issued from Mr. Welch, along with a magazine, American Opinion.

"The big problem is that the people don't know what's going on," he said.

## Cites Education Program

An example Mr. Norris gave of this belief is a recent proposal by the State Education Department to begin a guidance and counseling program.

He said this would be a program which would go into the family history of every grade school student, complete individual psychoanalysis.

"Most of the people don't know about this," he said. "I'm against it for three reasons—It's compulsory, it's an invasion of privacy and it is federally supported."



J. P. CHUDLEIGH

J. C. NORRIS

Charge misinformation on John Birch.

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
4-6-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-58

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 7 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



# John Birch Society Rejects Basic Values of American Philosophy

The John Birch Society, which has become a focus of national controversy, stands indicted not by its objectives, which are widely shared, but by the expressed philosophy of its founder and leader, to which members must adhere at least tacitly, and by the methods used in the pursuit of its objectives.

What is disturbing about the organization is not that it exists, which it has every right to do. Extremist, and even subversive, organizations have arisen, flourished for a time and then died throughout the nation's history, and this one undoubtedly will have successors in the future. The good sense of the American people invariably has prevailed and consigned them to the oblivion they deserve.

What is most disturbing is that, at a time when freedom faces its greatest challenge, a substantial number of people, including some who should be among the most enlightened and best informed, should be willing to repudiate the basic principles and values which support the American philosophy. It is not that the John Birch Society is a dangerous group but that it is a potentially dangerous one because it rejects freedom and, either unwittingly or by design, serves the interests of an ideology which would destroy the very things that they really want to protect and preserve.

**MANY OF THOSE** who support the society are confused. Whether because of fear, frustration, emotional insecurity, lack of knowledge, unwillingness to think or deception is unimportant. This confusion is manifested in their indiscriminate use of such terms as "democracy," "republicanism," "Socialism" and "Communism," apparently without any clear conception of what those terms mean in today's context. Socialism is equated with Communism, but it would appear that to many "Socialism" is anything that government does. By logical extension, it could include all civilization, and the only ideal situation would be one in which each person lives alone on an island apart from all others.

Democracy, which by definition means self-government by the people, and without which there can be no truly representative government, is rejected in favor of authoritarianism. It matters little whether authoritarianism is of the left or the right. Both are hostile to and destructive of freedom. Basically, the reason that theoretical Communism is rejected by the American people is that it cannot tolerate or permit individual freedom. It is this value, rooted in our Hebraic-Christian tradition, that is the basis of Western European and American civilization and differentiates it from all others. To be meaningful and to survive, freedom must

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-7-61

Houston, Texas

FRANK H. KING, Vice President  
and Executive Editor

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-59-

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 7 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

be shared by all, restrained only by the rights of others.

**INDIVIDUAL** freedom cannot exist without the right of dissent, and it is a right which must be extended to all. It follows that members of the John Birch Society have a right to disapprove of and to oppose, by lawful means and use of the democratic procedures that have been provided for the people to exercise control over their government, anything they wish to oppose or get changed. They have the same rights as other citizens in a free society to assemble, to organize, to petition and to exercise free speech. They have the right to advocate and to work for anything they wish. They have a right to demand the impeachment or removal from office of any public official they believe has acted illegally or unconstitutionally in the performance of his duties.

But, as members of a free society, they also have an obligation to act with responsibility, with prudence and with full respect for the rights and views of others. The rules of a free society demand that they support their positions and their activities with facts rather than suspicion, unsupported belief or blind emotionalism.

There is no place in a free society for smear techniques, reckless and irresponsible accusations, misrepresentation or concealment through secret infiltration or use of misleading "fronts." These are, in fact, intolerable, because they are destructive of freedom.

**THE SUCCESS** which the John Birch Society has had in attracting followers is a manifestation of a deeper ill that has profound implications of a most serious nature. That is a deep distrust and lack of confidence in free government and in democratic processes. Whether this is the product of prolonged indoctrination, instinctive reaction to governmental controls or oversimplified political sloganeering can be a subject for speculation. But the society and other organizations like it, far from curing the ailment, aggravate, promote and foster it.

Most of the rank and file members of the John Birch Society undoubtedly are good people who believe the things the organizer of the society has told them and who have been disturbed thereby. But when a substantial number of people become badly frightened, frustrated and disturbed, there are always those who are quick to sense the possibilities for exploitation and to make the most of it.

They will use the fears of these people as a foundation on which to build power for themselves, and their offerings will be tendered in wrapping designed to mislead, confuse and entrap.

# THE HOUSTON POST

W. P. HOBBY  
Chairman of the Board  
W. HOWARD BALDWIN  
Vice President and General Manager  
JACK HARRIS  
Vice President and General Manager  
Of KPRC-TV and KPRC  
S. E. BUTTRILL  
Vice President, Production and  
Distribution  
ROBERT H. LAMPEE  
Vice President, Advertising  
CHARLES H. DRAPER  
Secretary-Treasurer  
JESSICA HOBBY CATTO  
Assistant Secretary  
JACK MCGREW  
Director and KPRC-TV and KPRC  
Station Manager  
M. B. WOMACK  
Controller  
CLIFFORD D. SCHERER  
Assistant Treasurer

OVETA CULP HOBBY  
President and Editor  
FRANK H. KING  
Vice President and Executive Editor  
W. D. BEDELL  
Assistant Executive Editor  
WILLIAM P. HOBBY JR.  
Director and Managing Editor  
ROBERT V. JOHNSON  
Associate Editor  
ED KILMAN  
Editor of the Editorial Page  
BRIAN SPINKS  
Associate Editor of the Editorial Page  
EDWARD S. WELTY  
News Executive  
FELTON WEST  
City Editor  
MELON N. JOHNSON  
Director and Administration Assistant



# SAR Invites John Birch Founder To Speak Here

Robert Welch of Belmont, Mass., the founder of the John Birch Society, has been invited to speak at the Music Hall in Houston the night of April 18 by the Paul Carrington Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution.

After it was announced that Welch had been invited, Akard Beall, a volunteer coordinator for the John Birch Society in Houston, said he felt sure that Welch would accept the invitation.

Welch was invited Thursday in a telegram sent by Frank E. Tritico, acting secretary of the Paul Carrington Chapter, and authorized by the executive committee of the local patriotic organization.

**THE INVITATION** to Welch does not constitute an endorsement by the local chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution, and the offer is being made in the interests of the general public, Tritico said.

The message sent to Welch said:

"The executive committee of the Paul Carrington Chapter Number 5, Texas Society, Sons of the American Revolution, has reserved the Houston Music Hall for Tuesday evening, April 18.

"We believe in freedom of speech and freedom of assembly.

**"WE BELIEVE** that you have not had an opportunity to present your side of the current controversy concerning the John Birch Society.

"We are hereby extending an invitation to you to appear here that evening. This invitation is

in the public interest, and with the understanding that the John Birch Society will take care of all further arrangements."

Beall was asked if he thought Welch would appear here.

"I am not able to speak for Mr Welch about his schedule," said Beall.

"But I'd certainly like to see him appear here.

**"AND I'M** sure that he will."

Beall said Welch visited Houston a little more than a year ago, in January, 1960.

The John Birch Society is a semi-secret organization which members say was formed about two years ago by Welch for the purpose of fighting Communism.

**IT HAS** come into public controversy within the last few weeks, partly because of statements made by Congressional leaders.

U. S. Rep J. T. Rutherford of Odessa denounced the society on the floor of the House of Representatives.

Robert Welsh of Belmont,

Representatives, and other congressmen have said the society ought to be investigated. On the other hand, at least two members of Congress have said they are members of the John Birch movement.

**THE HOUSTON POST**

4-7-61

Houston, Texas

**RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)**

**HOUSTON DIVISION**

62-1521-60

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 7 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

**IN WASHINGTON**

## Humphrey Attacks Goldwater's Stand on John Birch Society

Washington (UPI) — Sen. Hubert H. Humphrey (D., Minn.) took sharp issue Thursday with a G.O.P. leader's claim that the anti-Communist John Birch Society was made up of "impressive" people whose investigation would embarrass Congress.

The Senate Democratic whip, replying to comment by Sen. Barry Goldwater (R., Ariz.), said that "some of the 'best people' praised Hitler and Mussolini, too."

Humphrey said the two Fascist leaders "rose to power raising the cry of anti-Communism, but they were anti-people, anti-freedom, anti-Democracy."

### 'Sole Purpose'

Goldwater previously said the "sole purpose" of the John Birch Society, whose call for impeachment of Chief Justice Earl Warren has brought demands for a congressional investigation, was to "fight communism."

He said it should not be dubbed ultra-conservative for that reason and added: "I know liberal Democrats as well as conservative Republicans who belong."

Humphrey, a long-time liberal, brushed off Goldwater's statement that John Birch members he had met were people of "high quality."

"What the free world needs are leaders who are



HUMPHREY      GOLDWATER

not only anti-Communists, but pro-freedom and pro-justice," Humphrey said.

### Show Good Sense

"Tyranny and bigotry in any form is evil. I'd suggest that these 'best people' demonstrate their good sense by getting out."

Humphrey added: "The extreme right and extreme left always join hands in their crusades and attempt to destroy the middle. The main difference between Fascists and Communists is the color of their shirts—one is black and the other is red."

Assistant Senate G.O.P.

Leader Thomas C. Kuchel had called for a congressional investigation of the John Birch Society. But other leaders indicated none was likely.

### Embarrass Many

Goldwater observed: "If they push this to an investigation, there will be a lot of embarrassed people on this hill."

He said any legislator attacking the John Birch Society without knowing something about it might find he was talking about some of his more prominent constituents.

"The best investigation of the John Birch Society," said Humphrey, "is public exposure."

"When the American public sees the irresponsible and ridiculous statements that the leader of this society has made about great patriots such as President Eisenhower, Chief Justice Warren and others, the organization will be properly regarded as a comic opera with tragic consequences."

**THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE**

**4-6-61**

**Houston, Texas**

**RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)**

**HOUSTON DIVISION**

62-1521-61

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 7 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



# Orange Brother of John Birch Has Sympathy for Society Aim

By BOB AXELSON

Sympathy with the aims and objectives of the John Birch Society came today from an Orangite, a brother of the man for whom the society was named.

However, Douglas F. Birch of 4431 N. Glennhurst St. added this note, "I have never received any of the literature of the society proper and am not a member. However, I am naturally familiar with the movement and know the reported aims. The criticism I read in the paper is not what I understand about the society at all."

Birch, 31, came here last June from the Du Pont Belle Works at Charleston, W. Va. He is a production supervisor at the local Sabine Works, married and has four children. The local man is the youngest of six living Birch children and a chemical engineering graduate of Georgia Tech.

The John Birch Society in recent months — especially in the past week — has become a highly controversial organization. Both its supporters and detractors are numerous.

Its founder and leader is Robert Welch of Belmont, Mass. Welch, 61, retired from a candy firm as vice president in charge of sales four years ago to devote his life to

fighting communism.

The John Birch Society was founded Dec. 9, 1958 at Indianapolis, after Welch delivered a two-day speech to 11 men he had invited to hear it. That speech is today the Blue Book of the society, the official statement of its aims and methods.

It is supplemented by monthly bulletins to members and a magazine to subscribers called "American Opinion." The magazine was founded by Welch before the society and he continues to function as editor.

However, John Birch had nothing to do with the group which bears his name. He was reared near Macon, Ga., and was graduated from Mercer University there. After two years at the Bible Baptist Seminary at Fort Worth, he went directly to China as a missionary for the World Fundamental Baptist Missionary Fellowship. He went to Shanghai and from there into the interior. The year—1940.

As his brother put it in an interview, "I was the youngest and John the oldest. There were six brothers and one sister in our family. The last time I saw my brother, I was only 10. I was 12 when he was killed in North China at the age of 27."

The Orangite commented, "I thought the world of him and thought him the best brother because he was fairer. But then he was older and more responsible."

With the advent of Pearl Harbor, Birch fled from the Japs and went to Shagiao in Kiangsi Province. He made his way eventually to Chungking where he joined the American Volunteer Group of Flying Tigers under Gen. Claire Chennault. For three weeks he was an assistant chaplain and then inducted on July 4, 1942, as a second lieutenant in the China Air Task Force of the American Army which later became the 14th Air Force.

THE ORANGE LEADER  
4-5-61

Orange, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOFfile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-62

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 7 - 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

He served as an intelligence officer, interpreter and in liaison work. Later transferred to the OSS, Capt. Birch headed a unit on Aug. 15, 1945, to settle a known pocket of disturbance on the Shantung Peninsula.

Birch was subsequently killed by Chinese Communists on the Lunghai Railroad en route to Hsuehchow, China, on Aug. 25, 1945, 10 days after V-J Day. He was then 27.

For several years, circumstances surrounding his death were shrouded in mystery and even the captain's parents had

trouble learning the details.

As Birch commented, "My parents made three separate trips to the Pentagon in Washington and I went with them once. No one seemed to know or would tell us."

It was later determined that Capt. Birch was shot in the leg with death attributed to multiple bayonet wounds. At this time, America and Russia were allies. The Chinese Communists were supposed to be in the same category.

Welch in an article on "The Life to John Birch" attributed it to deliberate misrepresentation and continued blocking of the truth. During this period, the War Department persisted in its official report that Capt. Birch had been killed by a stray bullet without any mention of the Chinese Communists.

It found that it "had lost" or misplaced the addresses of officers who might be able to tell Mr. and Mrs. Birch the truth.

Welch in going through old reports on Senate hearings in 1951 and 1952 ran across the Birch account and contacted the officer's parents in Macon on three different occasions.

As the Orangite put it, "Welch needed a human interest story as a carrier to personify his program. My parents agreed to developing awareness of the Communist danger."

Welch subsequently memorialized Birch as "probably the first American casualty in the third world war between Communists and the ever-shrinking free world which is still being waged against us."

From this beginning, the society has developed into small local chapters, usually of 10 to 20 dedicated patriots with a leader ap-

pointed by Welch or one of his officers. There are now chapters in 34 states and members in all 50 states.

The philosophy is somewhat all-embracing and goes far afield. Birch, here, on being questioned about the fascist aspect of the movement counters by observing that "the smear technique is always followed whenever an anti-Communist group reaches any size to be effective."

It seems to be a case of where do you draw the line. The Orangite in summing up his understanding of the society listed these points among several:

1. It is strongly patriotic and pro-American. It supports anything which keeps America strong.
2. Members are encouraged to read and learn about communism in special reading rooms.
3. Opposition to foreign aid, the United Nations and the North Atlantic Treaty Alliance comes on the grounds that it weakens this country.

This could be all boiled down to "less government, more responsibility and a better world." There is no question but what the John Birch Society is becoming a force on the American political scene.

It could be classified as it is, an authoritarian society. Welch does not say the United States should have a similarly authoritarian form of government. But he is far from completely sold on the form we now have. In a January, 1961, article in "American Opinion" the political concept of democracy, he regards as a "weapon of demagoguery and a perennial fraud."

One of the problems between the society and many who might otherwise share Welch's conservative political and economic views is his chronic belief that everything he personally considers wrong is a Communist plot.

It is his contention that America today is living in a fool's paradise much as the people of China lived

20 years ago. The danger, he contends is from the Communist influence right in our midst and treason in government.

The idea that the nation must mobilize its resources to combat the external danger of Soviet military might and missile supremacy in Welch's view is a part of the Communist plot.

His point: "In other words under the guise of fighting communism, we are being stamped into the biggest jump ever towards socialism and perhaps the final jump then into the Communist camp." Conservatism of itself does not necessarily have to be extremism. As the Los Angeles Times said editorially in March, "Subversion, whether of the left or right, is still subversion."

The issue between the society and those who condemn it is the tendency of its activities to suppress if not the right, at least the respectability of dissent.

The John Birch Society has come a long way from North China in 1945 when a Georgia missionary—educated in Texas—died at the hands of American allies. You can not help but wonder what the reaction would be of Capt. John Birch—if he were living today.



## EX-McCARTHY AIDE

# Roy M. Cohn 'Blesses' Birch Society's Ideas

Roy M. Cohn, the onetime chief counsel of the McCarthy committee, bestowed his blessing here Monday night on the John Birch Society. Cohn dismissed charges that the John Birch Society may be-

"I think they are a group of well-intentioned people who have gotten a little angrier about Communism than most of the crowd," Cohn said, "and they're shouting a little bit louder about it."

THE 34-YEAR-OLD attorney, now a business executive, gave his opinion of the society after arriving in Houston on a business deal.

"After all," he said, "some of these people have a right to be impatient. The Communists continue to gain around the world. We continue to be weak and ineffective in dealing with them."

Cohn added, however, that he could not agree with writings by Robert Welch, the society's founder, that former President Eisenhower and some of his top aides were Communist agents.

Cohn said he could not recall ever having met Welch, a retired Massachusetts candy executive.

In the society's Blue Book, Welch praises Cohn's former boss, the late Sen Joseph McCarthy, as a martyr in the fight against Communism.

COHN RESIGNED as McCarthy's chief lieutenant in July, 1954, after the Army-McCarthy hearings. McCarthy later was censured by the Senate for his conduct.

Cohn said he believes the Communist menace is much greater now than it was during his days with McCarthy.

"Since world-wide Commun-

ism is so strong today," he said, "the internal menace is that much stronger."

two anti-Communist groups — the American Jewish League Against Communism and the Joint Committee Against Communism

ASKED IF HE IS a member of the John Birch Society, Cohn chuckled and resurrected some familiar phrases from the McCarthy hearings.

"I am not now, never have been, and never will be," he said.

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-11-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-63

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 11 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

b6  
b7C

June 8, 1961

J. Edgar Hoover  
Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington, D.C.

Dear Mr. Hoover;

I Had the pleasure Monday of visiting  
the Houston branch of the F.B.I.

I enjoyed, very much, talking with a  
Mr. Calam. He seems to be a very nice, friendly  
person.

Mr Calam gave me some literature on  
Communist activities written by you and put out  
by the F.B.I. He also told me to write you  
for additional copies since his were limited.

If at all possible, I would like to have  
fifty copies of the following;

Communism: The Bitter Enemy of Religion  
The Communist Menace: Red Goals and Christian Ideals  
Communist Party, USA  
The Communist are After Our Minds  
Communist Illusion and Democratic Reality  
Excepts from the Law Enforcement Bulletin (on same)  
Struggle on A New Plane  
America-Freedom's Champion  
Breaking the Communist Spell  
God and Country or Communism? and any other material  
on this subject which is available in quantities.

I too, believe that our chance of helping  
our country is in knowledge of our enemy.

I have enjoyed your book "Masters of Deceit"  
very much. I wish every American had a copy.

Thank you so much, Mr. Hoover, and may God  
bless you.

Sincerely

b6  
b7C

62-1581-64  
SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED

b6  
b7C



June 16, 1961

b6  
b7C

Dear [redacted]

Your letter dated June 8, 1961, has been received, and I want to thank you for your thoughtful message and for your generous evaluation of my book, "Masters of Deceit." I am also glad to know that you enjoyed visiting our Houston Office.

In response to your request, I regret to inform you that the increasing demand for our publications, together with our budgetary limitations, precludes my forwarding reprints in the volume you requested. I am, however, sending you, under separate cover, ten copies each of various items currently available for distribution, and I hope that they will be of some aid to you.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

John Edgar Hoover  
Director

② - Houston - Enclosures (2)

ATTENTION SAC: For your future guidance, requests for bulk mailings of publications should be referred to the Bureau by your office, furnishing the background of the individual making the request and including the channels of dissemination contemplated. We have been receiving more requests for reprint material than our budgetary limitations will allow, and we also do not wish to place our publications in the hands of fanatical right-wing groups or those who are currently prone to advocate vigilante action in combating communism. Currently, requests from persons affiliated with the John Birch Society, the Cardinal Mindszenty Foundation, Dr. Fred C. Schwarz and his Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, and other similar groups are not being granted.

100-9540



**Federal Bureau of Investigation**

**Freedom of Information / Privacy Acts**

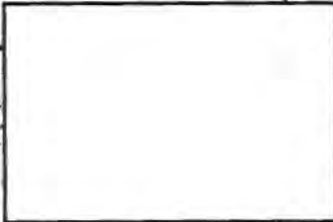
**Release**

**Subject: FILE 62 1521 (F0)**



67-0-6893-  
31-10-61  
N. K. L.  
April 12, 1961

b6  
b7C



Your letter of March 31 has been received, and I do appreciate the concern which prompted your communication.

I was interested in having your comments and observations relative to the organization you discussed. I would like to point out in this connection that the FBI, as strictly an investigative agency of the Federal Government, neither makes evaluations nor draws conclusions as to the character or integrity of any organization, publication or individual. In light of this I can assure you that I have not nor has any representative of this Bureau made any statements regarding your group. For your ready reference, I am enclosing a copy of my introduction to the April, 1961, issue of the FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin which you may like to read.

With respect to your desire for my suggestions on the establishing of an anticommunist society, I have through long-standing policy declined to express opinions on or inject the FBI into the activities of private groups such as you have in mind. I am sorry I cannot be of assistance to you in this matter but am certain you will understand my position.

Sincerely yours,

*B. J. L.*  
Enclosure

① - Houston - Enclosure

62-1521-65

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 12 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

Knight In Shining Armor



Taxing —

"This Is True Liberty, When Freedom Men Speak Freely"  
—GORDON

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
4-12-61 62-1521-66  
Houston, Texas  
RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(NOfile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 14 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	





# POLITICAL FAIRY TALE

THE CORPUS CHRISTICALLER  
4-17-61

Corpus Christi, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 18 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

# Welch Hits At 'Rich' Commies

Hunger Theory Lie,  
John Birch Leader  
Tells 3,000 Here

The leader of the John Birch Society said here Tuesday night that Americans will find more Communists among the wealthy and the educated than among the beatniks and the hungry.

"I can find you a lot more Harvard accents in Communist

Excerpts of the Robert Welch address Tuesday night in the Music Hall will be broadcast by KPRC-TV (Channel 2) on its news programs at 7:25 AM and 8:25 AM Wednesday. Similar excerpts were broadcast Tuesday night on the Channel 2 news at 10:30 PM and again on the Midnight With Marietta program. Ray Miller, a news editor for the station, said a KPRC camera was in operation at the back of the Music Hall after other cameras were removed from the front of the auditorium at Welch's request before he began to speak.

circles in America today than you can find me in overalls," Robert Welch said.

WELCH STOKED to a full and friendly house of about 3,000 persons in the Music Hall.

The 61-year-old retired candy maker was applauded heavily as he tore into what he called "the

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-19-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-68

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



hungry belly explanation of Communism."

He called it "one of the biggest lies in all history."

He said that Communism has never been an uprising of the workers as the Communists have contended.

"Communism has always been imposed from the top down, by the very rich, the highly educated, and the politically powerful on the suffering masses," Welch said.

"A STALIN, WHO actually arose from the peasantry, is as rare in the ruling Communist circles of the world as is a conscience."

To Americans who believe that the rich and the educated can never be Communists, Welch said he had a one-word reply:

"Nuts."

To more applause, Welch added:

"When you look for the Communist Party in America today, you don't find it in the group of poor, struggling beanbiks who are officially presented as the Communist Party."

Welch said this was just one example of Communist deception in a grand strategy that he labeled "the principle of reversal."

**HE MADE THIS** the theme of his talk, which was sponsored by the Paul Carrington Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution.

W. Hume Everett, the chapter president, headed the brief opening ceremonies before Welch's hour-and-30-minute speech.

"We believe that Mr. Welch has not had his side of the controversy heard," Everett said. "We do not endorse him, but we bring him to you in the interest of good government and freedom."

Welch arrived in Houston by commercial airplane from Dallas Tuesday morning, then spent the afternoon napping and meeting informally with Birch Society leaders here.

**HE IS TO LEAVE** Wednesday morning for Shreveport, where he will speak Wednesday night.

Welch declined to hold any press conferences during his stop here, pleading fatigue and lack of time.

In his speech, Welch almost wholly ignored widespread criticism of himself and the society.

**HE DID TOUCH** briefly on his letter or book, "The Politician," in which he wrote that he believed Former President Eisenhower was a Communist agent.

Welch said publication of his view about Mr. Eisenhower was the result of a friend's breach of confidence and what he called unethical journalism.

▲ "The letter was originally pro-

voked by what seemed to me to be the double-crossing by the administration of conservative Republican candidates for both the House and the Senate in the congressional elections in the fall of 1954," he said.

**WELCH SAID HE** noted at the end of the letter that his friends might view the "double-crossing" as simple political opportunism. Welch said he wrote that he had no quarrel with that view.

"This is something the newspapers haven't told you," he said.

Welch said the Communists, by their "principle in reverse" turning their weakest points into sources of their greatest strength.

He said their twisted slogans have resulted in "conquest by catch phrase."

An example, he said, was the line that defeated the late Sen Robert A. Taft for the presidential nomination in 1952:

"I LIKE TAFT, but he can't win."

On the strength-from-weakness theme, Welch contended that the nation's Protestant ministers—which should be a bulwark against Communism—are actually more heavily infiltrated with Communists than any other U. S. group of that size.

Repeating a charge made in earlier speeches, Welch said that 7,000 of the nation's 200,000 Protestant ministers are either Communists or Communist sympathizers.

Then he tempered this charge by adding:

"Nobody is accusing the other vast body of ministers of anything except the gullibility and apathy that allows such a condition to exist."

**HE SAID THE** Communists plan to take over the U. S. by internal subversion, not by war.

"No earthly power could drag the Soviets into a real honest war with the United States today," he said.

But the Communists, he maintained, have excelled in infiltration and subversion, and by luring the U. S. to spend itself to death on defense and foreign aid.

Welch said he believed, "the Communists have been heavily influencing all major decisions of the U. S. government since 1941."

**HE SAID HE** believes that 98 per cent of government workers are loyal, patriotic Americans:

But so successful are the Communists' double-think devices, he said, that government employees never suspect "the very betrayals which they themselves are helping to implement."

"The vital question in any group or any government," he said, "is not how many Communists there are, but where they are."

Betrayal in key places, he contended, has resulted in a situation in which the U. S. government for years "has been supporting the Communist advance while pretending to oppose it."

"The Communists," he said, "have forced a situation on the world today where truly he who is not with me is against me."

However, on the charge by some critics that he accuses all who oppose him of being Communists, Welch pleaded not guilty.

"It has become dangerous for me," he said, "even to imply that Franklin Roosevelt was a New Dealer."

# Extra Policemen Will Be at Hall

Houston policemen will take extraordinary measures to keep the peace when Robert Welch, the founder of the John Birch Society, speaks tonight at the Music Hall. The enforcement division have been instructed to eat supper before 7:15 p.m., so they will be free to answer "any unusual request for assistance," McGill said.

A sergeant and 12 patrolmen have been assigned to direct traffic at the Music Hall, then "just stand around" with their eyes open. McGill said the department has not been asked to furnish police guards for Welch.

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
4-18-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(MOELLE: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-70

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



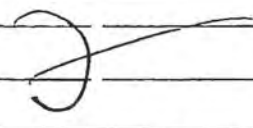
File - Serial Charge Out  
FD-5 (Rev. 10-1-60)

File \_\_\_\_\_ Class. \_\_\_\_\_ Case No. \_\_\_\_\_ Last Serial \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

☐ Pending ☐ Closed

Serial No. \_\_\_\_\_ Description of Serial \_\_\_\_\_ Date Charged \_\_\_\_\_

69 Skipped in  
Serializing  
1th



Employee

RECHARGE

Date \_\_\_\_\_

To \_\_\_\_\_ From \_\_\_\_\_

Date file charged \_\_\_\_\_

Employee

Location

# FOUNDER OF GROUP GIVES FIRST INTERVIEW

## Welch Calls Houston Stronghold of Birch Society

BY SAUL FRIEDMAN

Chronicle Staff  
1961 By The Houston Chronicle

Houston is a stronghold of the John Birch Society, its founder and head, Robert Welch, told The Chronicle.

This strength is enhanced because "you do not have the left wing opposition in Houston that we have in places like Los Angeles, where we

also are quite strong," Welch said.

The society's goal, basically, according to Welch: "To keep America from becoming a democracy, the worst form of government, and to keep it a constitutional republic, the best form."

Welch will speak at 8 tonight at the Music Hall before more than 3000 persons.

He flew to Houston at 10:38 p.m. Tuesday, where he was met by Akard Beall, M. Lyle Cashion and several persons who refused to identify themselves.

He scheduled several top-level conferences during the day.

Cashion, representing the Sons of the American Revolution in Houston, said he

understood Welch was to make five brief stops on his Tuesday itinerary before his address tonight.

### Only Interview

But before Welch came to Houston, he attempted to a tape-recorded interview with this reporter Monday at the home of a John Birch Society member in Dallas.

It is the only previous inter-

view granted by Welch since the John Birch Society came out of the shadows into the public sunlight to become the center of a raging nationwide controversy.

Welch, of Belmont, Mass., is near the climax of his first nationwide speaking tour to explain the principles of the organization he started about two years ago.

On this tour, Welch has stirred red-hot coals of protest as high up as Congress and has been given equally fiery support by leading Americans.

He would not give any exact figures, but said, "I have no quarrel" with published reports that Houston has some 100 chapters of the John Birch Society.

Society members work within churches, precincts, school organizations, specifically the Parent-Teachers Assn., to promote "Americanist ideas," he said.

### Attack Warren

On the national scene, society members are engaged in an all-out effort to impeach Earl Warren, chief justice of the United States

Supreme Court. Welch said some of the court's recent decisions have been pro-Communist.

On the present administration, Welch said: "Kennedy is not as much a captive of the Communists as the previous administration."

There is a "fairly heavy"

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
4-18-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-71

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



concentration of Communists within our diplomatic corps. Welch said, and more Communists, or, as he calls them, "Comsymps," (Communist sympathizers) in our federal government than ever before.

"Americans have been brainwashed into thinking this is a democracy. It is a constitutional republic," he said.

He equates democracy with what he calls "mobocracy."

Here are some of Welch's views, as expressed in the recorded interview:

Q. What I wanted to talk to you about, Mr. Welch, was Houston and the John Birch Society. I'm sure you've gotten some of the facts now that you're going down there to speak and you know some of the people and you've talked with them.

Welch: I know some of the people because I've known them right along, but I haven't got any facts with regard to the particular current situation at all.

Q. Well, Houston is the seat of a growing conservative movement in this country.

Welch: I think that's true.

Q. Do you know the membership in Houston, approximately?

Welch: Yes, but we wouldn't tell you, Mr. Friedman. We have only two things we don't tell you. We'll tell you anything else you want to know. There's nothing secret about the John Birch Society and nothing semi-secret, but like so many other organizations, we do not tell how many members we have and we don't tell who they are. Without naming any names, you can think of a half a dozen other good organizations that do the same thing. I know some of them that if we have something to distribute that they

like and they're willing to send to their members, they won't send us the list of members. They won't even send us the envelopes. We send the material to them and they put the envelopes through their stencils and mail them out. It's perfectly normal not to give out the names of the members or the numbers, but after that we'll give you anything you want to know. Everything about the John Birch Society is wide open. I'm actually answering more than your question because I know you're going to want this anyway. All our beliefs and purposes and methods are all described in our materials, like the Blue Book, the bulletins, our tape recordings, our movies and they are here for anybody that wants to spend anywhere from 10 cents for a bulletin to \$2 for a Blue Book and after this if I hear that there's anything secret about it, it's just nonsense and manufactured.

Q. Well, usually the strength of an organization in a particular area is not secret.

Welch: The membership, while not particularly secret, we don't pass it out.

Q. You don't pass it out?

Welch: No, we have made it a rule from the beginning not to tell our numbers. I think it's a sound rule and we've stuck to it. I would say that in Houston, the only things we are comparing, we are comparatively strong in Houston, we have a lot of good members in Houston.

## How Many Here?

Q. A series about the John Birch Society said there were approximately 100 groups in Houston. Can you discuss how many groups there are?

Welch: The writer probably knew more about it than I did.

Q. That's what I am asking you.

Welch: I don't know how many groups.

Q. Do you know approximately how many?

Welch: Well.

Q. For example we have heard.

Welch: Let's say that I have no reason to quarrel. I have no reason to quarrel with it. If I say anything else I'm getting into giving out the one kind of information we don't give: Our numbers of members or groups. It's the same thing or practically the same thing.

Q. We've heard 93 or 94 groups.

Welch: Actually now, since you bring that up, you know more about it than I do then. I don't know. I can't possibly keep up that close. I have some general idea and I think the best thing for me to say is just what I said.

Q. Would this be too far from your general idea

then? If I can pin you down on that?

Welch: No, it wouldn't be too far if you want to put it just that way.

Q. Is the control over local chapters loose?

Welch: It's not so loose. It's fairly firm but it is requests and suggestions. We tell our people just about every three months, never do anything for the John Birch Society that's against your own conscience and we repeat often, even if it's against your judgement, don't do it but we don't emphasize that as much as don't do it if it's against your conscience. Then we say perfectly frankly, it's repeating what we said before, that if you disagree, if your conscience tells you over and over what to do with the majority of the things we ask, obviously you're not happy in the society and don't belong in it. That's up to you.

## Their Goals

Q. If members worked within parent-teachers organizations, or if they did work within churches or industrial organizations, what generally would be their goals?

Welch: To try to keep those organizations exerting their influence on what we call the Americanist side of all the sociological questions that arise. Just as you have so many left wingers get into these groups and do everything they could to have the organizations exert their influence on the left wing side.

Q. Do you think that true generally, of school boards, churches...?

Welch: No, you're getting too general. I think that that isn't true of the churches as a majority at all, it isn't true of the school boards as a majority at all. I think it is largely true of the P.T.A.s as a whole because the P.T.A. locally consists of good people but the control of the P.T.A. is far more than the local members realize, is from the top and I think that the top, from the national headquarters right down through the state headquarters, has been quite strongly left slanted.

Now we come back to the churches. The main trouble in my opinion is not that the few individual churches percentage-wise that have bad actors there make much difference. The real impact has been with these people climbing into the organizations, the church organizations, and getting themselves in position to have church organizations support the entry of Red China, the admission of Red China, or support the theme which they have supported, that capitalism is just as bad as socialism or even communism. You remember the Amsterdam conference in 1948 when they came out with that resolution stating just that and it's been played up plenty and the real trouble there is not in the churches of these three percent, but in the sum total of impact of what they can do to control the statements and the pressures and the influence of the various councils.

### Not at All

*Q. Well, are the John Birch Societies working within these churches?*

Welch: The John Birch Society is not working in them at all. We have most of our members belong to churches.

*Q. Not in churches, I mean working within these church organizations?*

Welch: Well, the church organizations are composed of ministers. The church organizations I'm talking about are the Council of Churches, and things like that.

*Q. But there are lay organizations?*

Welch: Well, most of them fall to pieces. They don't mean anything any more. I don't know of any lay organizations that amount to anything, very few. If they are some of our very best people were working in them when they had them they could do anything, but I don't know any now.

### Small But Strong

*Q. Well, if the members of the society are not working in churches, or on boards of education.*

Welch: I didn't say they weren't. But I said that if some of them go into boards of education as individual good citizens and they may have been helped to get on by people who were members of the John Birch Society also working as individual good citizens. I gave you a case where I knew it happened. I know another case I don't mind giving you. I know a case in a small

town where the town fathers, decided to have United Nations Day to glorify the United Nations and we had one chapter there small but strong and they knew better. They didn't like it and they got busy with their friends and neighbors and all of them and they talked enough, and before the day ever came, the town fathers didn't want the storm they were stirring up and what the trouble was, they didn't understand they'd been sold a bill of goods. Before the day ever came they got together and called off United Nations Day and made it a United States Day for the same day. We were very proud of the little part our people played in doing it.

### Not in Politics

*Q. Do you know anything of the activities of the groups in Houston?*

Welch: Oh, they've mostly been doing what we request them to do and ask them to do as far as direct members of the John Birch Society. However, they will do many things as good American citizens as they get active as members of the John Birch Society. For instance, we take no direct part in politics. Never. But we hope that our members themselves will individually take a very active part in politics and that we will do a far better job in politics through the information and understanding that we can give them. Our job is to give them a knowledge and the understanding and to say they can use their efforts to better advantage for the Americans' cause in politics but we do not take part.

*Q. Well, isn't that kind of splitting a hair a little bit?*

Welch: No. No. It's not.

*Q. The John Birch Society doesn't take part in politics but it urges its members to take part . . .*

Welch: It urges its members to be good citizens, which certainly includes taking part in politics, but let me show you how it's not splitting hairs at all and I'll put it even worse and it still won't be splitting hairs. I'll give you an illustration: I, myself, have been personally for Goldwater for years before the John Birch Society was founded and despite the fact that the society takes no part in politics I, personally, just like any of our members, have the right to have my own personal views, so in the campaign, the primary campaign in 1960, I was for Goldwater and I said so and I'm not naive enough to think that did not influence some of our members probably. But despite that, it was purely influence of an intangible kind because so far as I could guess, in the primary campaigns, the Republican primary of 1960, about two thirds of our members were for Goldwater and about one third were for Nixon for the nomination and we sent them all the lists of the delegates and everything else just the same and told them to do whatever their conscience told them. So you see it's not splitting hairs. If the John Birch Society were in politics, we had to be for whatever everyone was for . . . we were not. Our members were split about two to one. Now after the primary was over, the convention was over, neither I, personally, then nor the society took any part whatsoever in that campaign.



Q. But you recommended no particular candidate?

Welch: We recommended no candidate, no connection, no combination of votes, no nothing, not at all. You can get our votes and see. You've seen the bulletins. No, we can't afford to be directly in politics. Contrary to much that's said, we ask our members to follow their own conscience and their own judgment even.

### Concerted Action

Q. Then why the bulletin?

Welch: Because most of our members most of the time—I said most, not all—will pretty well agree with the policies and methods we are following and the things we are doing and, therefore, we can work more effectively in concerted action. If we take 100 members and there's 10 different things that they might be doing to help the cause and we say let's do these two this month and five of them say "I don't like that" or "I don't want to do it" and we say to them, "All right, don't you do it," but the other 95 will do those two things all together this month. You see how much more effective it is. That's the whole purpose

there, the effectiveness of concerted action.

Q. Which brings me to what is the action you do? Supposing a bulletin comes out asking co-operation in a particular campaign to do something, what is actually done?

Welch: Well, a great many things. One of our most important activities was to try to prevent the summit conference (scheduled in 1959). The summit conference, if I recall correctly, was first announced for late June or early July, 1959. We were quite small and young then. We went to work on that and as soon as it was announced our members wrote letters to everybody they could think of, they talked about it, they did everything they could and we got out petitions and we put on the back of those petitions 10 good reasons why the summit conference was harmful to the best American interests.

### Used a Front

Q. Were these petitions in the name of the John Birch Society?

Welch: These petitions were by "The Committee Against Summit Entanglements" and we put out these petitions and on one side were the sound reasons against it and on the other side was room for 20 signatures and we had about 70,000 of those petitions put out which if they'll come back in would have accounted for about 1,400,000 signatures. We were getting a lot of help from other organizations and plenty went out when they announced the postponement of the summit conference. I don't know if we had anything to do with

it or not. We couldn't begin to claim or know. We were working on it hard and a lot of other groups were helping us. That was in July 1959. Let me tell you about this because it illustrates what we do. So they announced then the Khrushchev visit instead. So here we are getting up a committee against summit entanglements with a lot of good Americans on it and I just almost had monkeyed and jockeyed myself into a position where I had to give some leadership. They were counting on it. So we got to work and rewrote—rewrote isn't the word—we got to work and wrote out the reasons against the Khrushchev visit and decided to put full page ads in the papers all over the country. And we worked it out very carefully. We had to get the approval of the copy, we had to get people to put their names on this. This was an unincorporated committee. I was using a good advertising agency whose credit was good for anything in the country and my credit was good with them whether it should have been or not. All I had to do was get a little optimistic and put in a quarter of a million dollars worth of advertising and if we didn't get the money for it later, every shingle soul on there was responsible. I was always very proud of the fact that they had that confidence in me both ideologically in what I was saying and also that I wouldn't do something wild the other way. So we started to put those ads in—in fact, we gave your paper one of them. They carried one of those ads.

Q. What is a full-page? About \$1500?

Welch: About. That's about what I remember. We had some of them were over \$6000.

### Newspaper Ads.

Q. What papers did you put them in?

Welch: We put it in a lot of them. We put it in about 50 big ones and about 50 little ones and it got in at least twice that many little ones where people put them in themselves. Local groups put them in. And we had quite a few who put the ads in free. And Mr. Eisenhower did not go back to return the visit because of all the feelings that had been shown and they called off the summit conference again in November, postponed it this time until the next April or May, and we think we had something to do with that. We think Adenauer and De Gaulle had a lot to do with it, too, but on a different level. We think that all the pressure we've shown in all these ads did some good because when Mr. Khrushchev got back to Moscow in his first speech reporting he said he'd been in America with mixed emotions because of a lot of leading citizens putting full page advertisements in our papers protesting his visit. So that is the illustration of the kind of thing we do and as well as the most effective.



Q. How about on the local level, say in Houston?

Welch: We don't do anything on the local level yet for the society as a whole. We are a little bit careful about what our chapters do on their own. We like to have them check because some of them can get over-ambitious and go off on some bum slants. Now I'll tell you this: Our members frequently go into local politics very effectively and there's no doubt they get encouraged to do so through their John Birch membership, but the John Birch Society, neither it nor the chapters has anything to do with it. I'll give you an illustration of what I was talking about: One of our chapters in Detroit, Mich., out in the suburbs, decided that they were never going to get the incredible mess in their schools straightened out unless they got a good man on the school committee. So they got one of their own members to agree to run and they went out and began to get their neighbors and they raised the money and

supported him and they elected him and none of that was done as members of the John Birch Society because three fourths of the people weren't even members of the society that were working for this fellow and yet they undoubtedly got the idea or the spark from having been meeting together, neighbors as members of the society, if you follow me. We don't mind that, we're glad to have it, but if they were going to do it as members of the society and the society is going to take any part in local affairs, then we would want them to check with us first just to be sure they don't get off on some horribly wrong track, which they could. And because the organization is too large to keep up with the local situation, we have discouraged local activities by the society as of yet and so forth.

### No Slander

Q. Do you know of anything particular that has been done in the Houston area?

Welch: I don't know. I'm sorry to say I don't. We are national. There's a lot of areas, there's a lot of things to keep up with, but I can't tell you anything that the society has done locally in Houston, as a society.

Q. You're sure they have been active in local politics?

Welch: I'm not sure. I'm not sure they haven't, either. Mr. Friedman, I just don't know. I don't know at all.

Q. In the writing of letters to newspapers or petitioning for things or getting into politics—precinct politics, state politics—do they employ what anti-John Birch Society people called character assassination?

Welch: Never. We . . . you can't even find a single trace of it in anything we do. We don't want it. Now if we accuse Alger Hiss of being a perjurer, that's not character assassination. That's there.

Q. But if you talk about Joe Blow who is for integration, you say he's a Communist?

Welch: We don't do it, Mr. Friedman. That's one of the things they'll charge us with. They'll always accuse us of.

of course, and it is not true in the slightest degree. We just don't. Our people, as you know, are not riff-raff. Our members are pretty leading citizens. They're good people and they're not wild characters.

### Use Fair Means

Q. Well, you talk about using front groups. This, of course, is something that was started by the Communists.

Welch: Well, it wasn't. But the name has been given to it, and the thought is in the people's minds. Let me explain about it. Let me explain first that we do not believe in using foul means to achieve good ends. In fact, we lay it down in the Blue Book over and over that we must not. That's one thing we cannot do. We cannot have a civilization that's good if you believe that it's all right to use bad means to achieve good ends because then the people who want the good ends are setting themselves up as judges above all others of what is moral and it can't be done and we oppose it. Now when you come to fronts, remember what a front is. There is nothing on earth wrong with a front unless it has immoral purposes. A front is nothing in the world but a committee. A front is a means of getting people who disagree with each other on many other things to work together on one thing upon which they



agree. Now you come to our Committee Against Summit Entanglements. We were just talking about it. Probably in all that work there was only at that time 10 per cent of John Birch members although we set the pace and led it. We had people working with us on that, that disagreed with us on almost everything else in the world. I know some of them. I think the very first check I got for the Committee Against Summit Entanglements was from Eugene Lyons, an extreme anti-Communist. Who had just been fighting with me like everything over my feeling toward Pasternak (Russian author Boris Pasternak). In fact, it got rather bitter and yet we were so opposed to Khrushchev coming and I

think that the first check they got from Eugene Lyons. A front merely brings together for an effort for one particular operation people who agree on that purpose who may not agree with themselves or each other on other things at all and it's being used all the time in America in all kinds of arrangements and there's actually nothing wrong with it unless the front is designed for the purpose of doing something immoral.

### Zeal Upheld

Q. Hasn't the history, though, of super patriotism as the John Birch Society has been accused of being, been a history of ultimate wrongdoing?

Welch: Well, I don't know 'cause I don't know what super patriotism is.

Q. Well, whenever there a zealot...

Welch: If by zealot you mean merely a sincerity in termination and dedication save our country, I see nothing wrong. We are faced, Friendman, with a very dangerous and advanced enemy and we need dedication, sincerity, effort, determination and if you call that bigotry or super patriotism, seems to me to be a smear sort from the other side. Think the thing that both the left wing and our opponents is we show so many signs of increasing effectiveness and we do it solely because of the dedication of our members.

### Definitions

Q. What is your definition of communism?

Welch: Well, communism is a capital "C" as against

the little "c" is an international conspiracy of gangsters seeking to rule the world.

Q. And with the small "c"?

Welch: With a small "c" it's the equivalent of socialism. Just another term, another word for one form of collectivism. There would be people who would find some differences, I don't see there's any particular point in a difference. Communism with a little "c" has a system of sociology without the police state methods that make it big "C" communism.

Q. How about its relation to liberalism?

Welch: Well, liberalism is entirely too vague and varied a term with too many shapes in it. You know what originally liberalism was; it was the opposite of what it is today. I didn't go into that last night (in a Dallas speech), but it's one of those reversals but liberalism today and we use a capital "L" for it to designate people who are a part of this whole liberal drive and establishment has tremendous variations within its boundaries.

### Disagree

Q. But there are people who are liberals, those who are in favor of integration, those in favor of the Kennedy medical plan, those who favor doing away with some of the restrictive clauses of the Taft-Hartley labor law. These liberals I'm talking about and I'm just wondering how you equate those with the Socialists or Communists.

Welch: I don't necessarily equate them. We might disagree with them. In fact, we do disagree with them. That

doesn't mean that we equate them necessarily with Communists or Socialists. Some of them are; some aren't. Most of them aren't Communists. Only a very small percentage are, we're certain. A good many of them are what I would call Socialists but a good many aren't. You see, we are conservatives in sociology and we disagree with many of the purposes you're talking about. But if you could get the Communists out of the picture and be able to decide these things by education and popular vote, general processes in a republican form of government, that would be fine with us. We point out, you'll find it in the "Life of John Birch" in the back, that we don't know. Maybe the Communists could be right as to what would make a better world. We don't think so. We think all history is against them and all analysis and all judgment is against them but we don't set ourselves up as the absolute, omniscient arbiters of human destiny at all so we can say, well, just for the sake of the argument, they could be right. But our one basic fundamental quarrel with them is that they on the other hand claim to be so sure they are right that they are willing to use any means, including murder and treason and terror, to enforce on the world their kind of socialist economy. You read the "Life of John Birch" in the back, I point out that that's... when you get all the way down to the bedrock, that's our final difference with the Communists. They're right; they insist they're right so completely, so unequivocally, so unquestionably that they're justified in using any means to enforce their righteousness on us. We don't at all. We try to stop the Communists from doing that and get back to a world where you



can argue things out. When you get back to arguing things out, most of our members as of now are pretty conservative in their attitude. They think that self-reliance, individual responsibility will create a better world by far than socialist planning.

### Most Are Loyal

Q. But while you're enlarging your definition of communism, it has been charged that the John Birch Society looks for these Communists everywhere.

Welch: I covered that last night. I pointed out there's a man who goes around calling everybody he sees a Communist. would be wrong 95 per cent of the time even in Russia and I pointed out very emphatically last night and it will be in the speech that for all of my criticism of Communist influences in our government I'm quite certain that more than 98 per cent of all of our federal employees are loyal Americans. The charge is utterly absurd, Mr. Friedman. It isn't justified by anything we have said or done. It's the typical old charge that they leveled against McCarthy and they level against everybody else. It simply isn't true. We can't go around all the time saying "we know this guy isn't a Communist, we know this man isn't a Communist." That's nonsense. The only people we're talking about are those that we may not necessarily think are Communists but that we think are helping the Communists, or "comsymps," as we call them now and naturally they're the ones we're talking about in this particular part of our activity. But, as I say, I think at least more than 98 per cent of all of our federal employees of our government, where I think the infiltration is heavy and has done a lot

of damage, it's still over 98 per cent of perfectly loyal Americans and I pointed that out in my speech last night.

### The President

Q. What about Kennedy himself? What classification would you make?

Welch: Well, I was asked that in a place and I tried to stay out of that argument, but I was asked it in, I guess, Santa Barbara and I said that I did not think that Mr. Kennedy was as much a captive of the Communists as the previous administration had been, but I still don't like the continuing appeasement and that's all I think I should say on that.

Q. Let's turn back to the local picture in a typical city. Can I get your agreement that Houston is a fairly typical city?

Welch: For the John Birch Society, or in general?

Q. For the John Birch Society.

Welch: Well, all right I mean I don't mind. I don't think it is quite, for two reasons: Frankly, we're a little stronger in Houston than we would be in most typical cities and, second, you do not have the left-wing opposition in Houston that you have in places like Los Angeles, where we are also quite strong. And where you have a very vigorous opposition it brings a different situation.

Q. What is the biggest single aim of the John Birch Society today?

Welch: To really make people sit up and take notice what the Communists are doing and I think that that is the reason—for this all-out attack on us. I think the spark that set it off was probably our move to impeach Earl Warren which we began in January as a long-range move. One of our

purposes in that was to try to educate as many of the American people as we could reach as to the differences between a republic and a democracy and to the fact that ours is supposed to be a republic. We hope we can keep it one instead of a democracy and that's part of the educational pattern. Again we tied that to a specific drive to impeach Warren because we think that his decisions, the court decisions under his leadership, have gone a long ways in an effort to break this country down from a constitutional republic into a democracy which our founding fathers thought of as probably the worst of all forms of government and they thought of a constitutional republic as probably the best of all forms of government. I largely agree with them. I think they were correct in both cases but there's been a drive on the part of the extreme left to do two things: To convert this country from a republic to a democracy and to get the American people believe that they're supposed to have a democracy, which goodness knows, they never were. You take the Constitution of the United States, the word "democracy" doesn't even occur in it once. The word "republic" is there over and over. It's founded as a constitutional republic and was so strong on the subject that it guarantees right in the Constitution a republican form of government to every state that's a part of the Union. You look into the thinking of the founding fathers of the Constitution as you find it in the Federalist Papers, for instance, to the best of my knowledge, in all the Federalist Papers, you will find the word "democracy" used twice, both times very

disparagingly to indicate what we didn't want and as a government how horrible it would be. (Here he referred to an article he wrote on the subject for a Birch-backed magazine, "American Opinion.") That's a four-page article in the January "American Opinion."

### Not a Democracy

Q. Can you get me a program that you would have in mind to return the United States to a constitutional republic or insure that it remains a constitutional republic?

Welch: Waken our people up to the two facts: To the fact that we are not a democracy, never were supposed to be, that we are a constitutional republic and then, too, a desire to keep it that way. If we get enough people to realize it... because they've been brainwashed and they figure they're supposed to be a democracy. We never were, as I said. And therefore, being brainwashed, they're thinking it's all right for us to become one at the same time. Our job there again is largely educational. We got to wake 'em up to the differences.

Q. Denudding the states of their rights, is this part of what you say is the drift toward a complete democracy?

Welch: Very much so. It's a drift toward a democracy which is one centralized totalitarian government which is either mob rule or dictatorship to overcome mob rule. A complete democracy, or in a sizable scale, it can work in a little town hall size of a village. But when you get into any size, a complete democracy becomes either mobocracy or some kind of a personal tyrannical dictatorship to offset the mobocracy and to use it.

*Jan 1961*



## Protect Minorities

Q. Who is to rule in this republic?

Welch: In any republic your people rule through their elected representatives subject to certain safeguards and restrictions and provisions which cannot be repealed just by a whim or a majority overnight. In any sensible republic, whether the constitution is written or not, there are means to change anything in time but the real thing is that they cannot be changed just on a sudden majority whim. There are protections for minorities, for traditions and customs and rights and it takes time to change and procedures to change that are not just a matter of a majority vote; whereas in a democracy, a majority vote can vote everything away from the other 49 per cent tomorrow and the next day you could get 2 per cent the other way and that 51 per cent could take it all back. That's why a democracy is the worst of all forms of government and a constitutional republic is the best of all forms of government. And don't quote me on half of that statement without quoting the other half. That's what our founding fathers seemed to think and they knew a hell of a lot about history and government and we agree with them.



ROBERT WELCH  
John Birch Founder



Chronicle Photo

JOHN BIRCH FOUNDER ARRIVES IN "STRONGHOLD"  
Robert Welch, Right. With M. Lyle Cashlon

## Welch Shushes Society Cell Chief in Front of Newsmen

"Put your co-ordinator from Beaumont, Mr Welch. We've got 50 members and . . ."

"You shouldn't be telling the numbers. You're standing in the middle of . . ."

Robert Welch, mild-voiced and pleasant of demeanor—beaming after a triumphant Houston reception—interrupted the Beaumont co-ordinator for the John Birch Society with a warning gesture toward three nearby newsmen.

A reporter from the Dallas Times Herald, who followed Welch to Houston to seek an interview about the John Birch Society, stepped forward as the Beaumont co-ordinator hesitated.

**WELCH TURNED** to him and raised his voice a little—not much. "Listen, what do you want. I don't want you standing around eavesdropping."

The reporter said he just wanted to set up an interview and would be willing to go any place, any time. Welch said he was sorry but he just couldn't do it.

At least 75 people, perhaps more, had climbed onto the stage to congratulate Welch on his speech at the Music Hall, and to shake his hand. The crowd milled about him for a while, then settled into a fast-moving line.

Welch had been interrupted by applause at least 30 times during his 90-minute speech.

The crowd had started to build up an hour and a half before the speech was scheduled to start at 8 P.M.

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-19-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOfile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-72

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



IN THE BIG lobby, John Birch Society members were selling copies of their Blue Book and "The Life of John Birch."

Mrs Akard Beall said she had sold 50 Blue Books by the time the speech started, for \$2 apiece. Nearer the main entrance, persons manning another desk had sold 72 Blue Books and 60 copies of "The Life of John Birch."

"I've been selling them by the hundreds from my garage," Mrs Beall said. At least 30 cases of the books were stacked in a van parked outside the Music Hall. Those lying inside by the tables had been addressed to Akard Beall, a Houston co-ordinator for the Birch Society.

One of the books was opened to a page that said at the top, "fourth printing."

Several hundred people were milling in the lobby before the speech started.

INSIDE THE auditorium, Dan Rather, a KHOU-TV newsmen, had prepared to have a camera trained on Welch as he spoke.

Someone came out and told him to move the camera. Rather refused, saying he would not go unless Welch ordered him to leave. Later, Rather's cameraman as well as other photographers were told that they could have a few minutes before the speech started to take pictures, but there would be no television or news pictures made during the speech.

Welch posed patiently while

newsmen — there were at least 25 reporters and photographers at the meeting — made their pictures and two or three climbed up on the stage for a better angle to or to get identification of people in the back-ground.

WELCH WAS introduced by W. Hume Everett, head of the Paul Carrington chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution.

There were about 38 chairs on the stage, filled mostly by members of the SAR. After Everett finished speaking, he invited all those on the stage except Welch to go down in the auditorium so they could hear better.

For a few minutes, Welch sat alone in the midst of 17 empty chairs. He appeared relaxed and confident, having received a standing ovation when he walked onto the stage.

The crowd was with Welch in

spirit before he got to Houston and obviously even more so as he prepared to leave.

If anybody had been inclined to underestimate the extent of the partisan feeling for Welch in Houston before Tuesday, the quick-to-applaud crowd of about 3,000 would have quickly dispelled the notion Tuesday night.

Welch spoke in glowing terms of the late Sens Joseph McCarthy and Robert Taft. He was applauded three times while talking about McCarthy and three more while mentioning Taft.

ONCE HE tripped up on the words while reading from his cards and was applauded in friendly fashion for that.

There was no heckling, in fact no disturbance of any kind, in the auditorium.

# Communists Wiping Out Our Civilization, Says Birch Founder

By GENE WILBURN  
Press Staff Writer

Robert Welch, founder of the controversial John Birch Society, brought his fight against Communism to Houston last night.

Addressing a sympathetic audience of 3000 in the Music Hall, Mr. Welch charged:

"Our whole civilization is at stake. It is being wiped out by the Communists."

The husky-voiced Mr. Welch maintained Communists had made such inroads in the United States that:

"Stalin, by 1946, considered himself in virtual control of our government.

"Theirs is a conquest by catchphrase."

To the naked eye, Robert Welch is an unimpressive, paunchy, slope-shouldered 61-year-old, wealthy, retired candy manufacturer with balding, snow-white hair, from Belmont, Mass.

## Same Story

What Mr. Welch told his Houston audience was not new.

He had said the same things (an aide told The Press: "Mr. Welch's speech is almost exactly the same") to audiences in Los Angeles, Phoenix and Dallas, within the last 10 days.

Missing, however, was the question-and-answer sessions (barred to newsmen) which Mr. Welch had employed in the early phases of his current tour.

## Tells of 'Con-Syms'

During the course of his address before members and guests of the Paul Carrington Chapter 5 of the Texas Society of the Sons of the American Revolution and a goodly portion of Houston's estimated 3000 John Birch Society members, Mr. Welch:

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
4-19-61

Houston, Texas

RE : THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-73

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



1. Espoused a thorough knowledge and study of Communism, Communists, "Com-syns" (Communist sympathizers) and their methods, plans, fears and results.

2. Liberally sprinkled his dialogue with references to the perils of Socialism.

3. Admitted before a Press reporter and Dan Rather, news director of KHOU-TV, that he has "sold the radio and television rights to his speeches to a 'commercial sponsor' in California."

4. Refused to give newsmen copies of the text of his speech—"to insure correct quotations"—because it "has been copyrighted."

The first two of these items brought 37 speech-interrupting outbursts of applause that ranged from mild politeness (at reference to the late Ohio GOP Sen. Robert A. Taft) to wild enthusiasm ("foreign aid—a whole, big lie").

It was extremely difficult at times to follow Mr. Welch's address closely.

#### Complex Thoughts

A former University of North Carolina, Harvard and Naval Academy student, Mr. Welch liberally used sentences of extreme length, containing many complex thoughts.

But his main theme, the need to uncover, fight and curb Communism was driven home to a predominantly feminine audience.

#### The 'Lie' Charge

Among the points made by Mr. Welch:

A statement referring to President Eisenhower as the leading Communist in America (contained in a letter called "The Politician") involved a "serious breach of confidence on the part of a friend, some very unethical journalism, and a brazen violation of my property rights in my letter."

Mr. Welch said:

"The letter was originally provoked by what seemed to me to be the double-crossing by the administration of conservative Republican candidates for both the House and the Senate in the Congressional elections in the fall of 1954."

"In it I expressed some harsh opinions of some men high up in the administration, including the then President himself."

"But in the letter, I specifically requested friends receiving it to correct any errors they found. Also—and this is something the papers have never told you—I stated at the end of the letter that I had no quarrel with those who attributed the actions in it simply to political opportunism."

"That's how the thing came to be dubbed 'The Politician.'"

On communism, he said:

"I am deeply concerned with the loss of our independence to communism . . . the possibility of a world-wide police state controlled by the Reds."

On independence:

"The process (communism) has gone so far that not only is the federal government, but also many state governments under Communist control . . . We will soon become another group of provinces in a Communist empire if this is not halted."

Foreign aid:

"The whole foreign aid program is an example (of how) for years we have been taken down the road to communism."

"Foreign aid is a tremendous help to communism. Our pouring of billions of dollars into foreign countries makes things easier for Communists and socialism."

On the military:

"The Soviets would never attempt to conquer their most serious enemy (U. S. A.) by force when they are doing so well by subversion."

"An all-out shooting war between the United States and Russia would be a signal for a simultaneous uprising of all enslaved peoples of the world."

#### Kremlin Fear

"It is the only dogma the Kremlin really fears."

"No earthly power could drag the Soviets into a war with the

United States and this is why they beat their breasts so loudly.

"We should keep our powder dry—and keep plenty of it."

Mr. Welch termed the U. S. political conventions "the Achilles heel."

He charged U. S. fleet patrols of the Korean Strait prevented "Chiang Kai-Shek and his 800,000 Nationalist Chinese army from invading the mainland during the Korean war."

Mr. Welch added:

"The Communists have now reached a point where they can count on just as much control in United Nations as they need."

The John Birch Society leader repeated his charge against Protestant clergymen being among U. S. Communists.

He said:

"I would say some 7000 could be called Com-syns. This is about 2 per cent (of the Protestant clergy)."

"Nobody is accusing the other 97 per cent of anything . . . except gullibility which allows Communism to exist."

"Protestant ministers do not become Communists—but Communists do become Protestant ministers."

On government:

"Communists have gotten agents into the highest echelons of government."

"Communists have been making our major decisions since 1941."

# Reds in Top U.S. Echelons - Welch

BY SAUL FRIEDMAN

Chronicle Staff

The John Birch Society's founder, Robert Welch, told a listening crowd here Tuesday night that there are "a lot more Harvard accents than overalls in American Communist circles."

Welch charged that Communist strength in the federal government and the nation's Protestant churches is at an all-time high.

"Communist strength is not coming from poor, struggling peasants, but from very top educational, social, political and economic circles," he said.

Kennedy, he said, is a Communist. He said that many of the students and teachers at Harvard are former students and teachers at Harvard.

Welch said, "Proportionately, the largest number of Communists is in our Protestant churches."

In contrast to the heavy applause which interrupted his speech, Dr. Welch, who roared, drew light applause.

Welch's copyrighted, 59-minute speech was heard by more than 3000 persons who paid \$1 each to join the Music Hall. Many stood and some spilled over into heavily-placed chairs in the galleries.

The meeting was sponsored by Paul Carrington Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution, which said its invitation did not necessarily constitute an endorsement but wanted to provide Welch with a platform.

Welch said that about 3 percent of about 200,000 Protestant ministers in the nation are Communists or "communists," his term for Communist sympathizers.

He said he could not name

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
4-19-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(No file: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-74

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



the source of these figures, "but I know them to be trustworthy."

"Nobody is accusing the other 97 per cent of anything except gullibility and apathy," he said.

But, he contended, "Communists can control an organization by having just 3 per cent of the membership."

"Protestant ministers do not become Communists, but Communists do become Protestant ministers," he said.

Noting "there is neither time nor need for documentation tonight," Welch recalled events as far back as 1940 for the predominately youthful audience.

He charged that "Communists have had influence in all major decisions in government since 1941."

He said the United States was brought into World War II by President Roosevelt because the Communist conspiracy wanted this country to join them as "wartime allies."

He said Roosevelt wanted to bring this country into the war "as soon as he could after he got elected to a third term."

He added, "Of course, Pearl Harbor was one of the steps that got us into the war."

He said the Communist conspiracy, afraid of the possible election of the late Sen. Robert A. Taft as President, planned for the nomination and election of President Eisenhower in 1952.

#### Loud Applause

To loud applause, Welch said, "If Taft were nominated, he would have unquestionably won; but the Communists began the talk that said, 'I like Taft but he can't win.'"

"The Communists knew that political conventions of the type that nominates presidential candidates are not set up by law but by custom and are our Achilles' heel," Welch said.

The Communist conspiracy and propaganda machine went to work on the late Sen. Joe McCarthy because "they didn't like his methods," Welch asserted.

"So the Communists devised the slogan 'I like what McCarthy is trying to do, but I can't stand his methods.'"

#### U.N. Termed Farce

"Basically, there was nothing wrong with McCarthy's methods from the point of view of the patriotic American," said Welch.

Welch slashed the United Nations as a "farce" and said the Communists "can count on just as complete control of the U.N. as they need."

He sliced at the nation's foreign aid program as a "tremendous help to the advance of communism. It was planned by the Communists, and our funds have been used in Poland, China and Yugoslavia for the Communist cause."

The United States foreign aid program is "as if we were delivering the funds directly to the Kremlin," he said.

He discounted the Soviet Union's military power, scoffing: "The Soviets have never been able to conquer Finland by military force."

#### Socialist Steps Taken

"What leads anybody to think they conquer by military force when they do it by internal subversion?" Welch asked.

"We have been stampeded into taking more and more

measures that are leading us into becoming a Socialist state with the threat of an outside war as an excuse," he said.

Calling for an awakening from "ignorance and apathy," Welch appealed for "action and courage and decisions" to stop the spread of communism.

Given a minute-long standing ovation before his speech, Welch was introduced by M. Lyle Cashion, former president of Paul Carrington chapter and a member of the John Birch Society.

#### Presides at Meeting

S.A.R. chapter President W. Hume Everett presided at the meeting. On the platform was the executive committee of the chapter.

Everett told the audience that members of the S.A.R. chapter "do not necessarily endorse him, but we bring him to you in the interest of freedom and good government."

Everett opened the meeting by reciting the first amendment in the Bill of Rights, which includes the guarantee for freedom of the press.

Then Cashion told photographers to refrain from taking pictures of Welch during his speech. Welch said his speech was copyrighted and told newsmen it was not to be used in full. No copies of the full speech were available.

The invocation was given by Rev. T. Robert Ingram, rector of St. Thomas Episcopal church.

# Welch Receives Challenge Here

BY LOU BOYD

Chronicle Staff

A gaunt man with glasses and a dark, frazzled beard challenged John Birch Society founder Robert Welch to "substantiate" his statements at the Music Hall Tuesday night.

The brown-suited citizen with the beatnik physiognomy—he later identified himself as Dr. Jesse Weil, and said he was a nuclear physicist engaged in research at Rice University—climbed to the stage when Welch ended his address.

"Very interesting, Mr. Welch, but can you substantiate anything you've said?" he asked.

Welch had talked about Americanism and communism for 25 minutes.

Weil then retreated to the Music Hall lobby and stood chatting with his wife, while 3000 anti-Communists eyed the pair suspiciously and filed out into the night.

A knot of inquirers gathered around Weil. Moments later a smartly-dressed man with a frown on his face pointed a finger at Weil's nose and said, "You come out to my place and I'll give you some substantiation you won't even forget, buster."

Weil took his name and address, but walked away

when the man demanded his own address. Weil said later he resided at 5009 Jackson.

Otherwise immense approval was expressed over Welch's speech.

There were no pickets to

demonstrate against Welch, no trouble-makers, no apparent fanatics, and no evident disasters—except Weil.

The eight newspaper reporters, seven newspaper photographers and 12 policemen, who went expecting possible trouble, drifted in and out of the barren lobby and languished on leather benches during the long talk.

Only at the outset, when ticket-seekers and ticket-holders began to gather at 7 p.m.,

and at the end, at 10:10 p.m., did the lobby fill up.

Weil stood in unpruffled opposition at the front of the lobby and said, "He (Welch) was interpreting history after the fact for his own uses."

Did Weil know any Communists or Communist sympathizers? Was he a Communist or did he sympathize with Communist aims?

"Why are you asking?" said Weil. "It's none of your damned business."

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
4-19-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-75

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	





SAYLOR HOUSTON POST

# SETTING UP BUSINESS ACROSS THE STREET

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-20-61 62-1521-76  
Houston, Texas  
RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

## BROTHER AGAINST BROTHER

# Episcopalian Leaders Assail Welch Tactics

Two leaders of the Episcopal Church, who are in Houston attending a national conference of cathedral deans, said Wednesday that the John Birch Society not only uses irresponsible methods in its fight against Communism but also does violence to Christian faith and the American way of life.

The Very Rev Francis B. Sayre Jr, dean of the Episcopal Church's National Cathedral in Washington, DC, said the society seemed to him "a rather vehement form of self-righteousness."

DEAN SAYRE, who was recently appointed to President Kennedy's Equal Employment Opportunity Commission, said, "It violates the injunctions of the Bible while pretending to stress Christian faith."

Sayre, one of the first churchmen to oppose publicly the methods used during the McCarthy investigations, said judgment and vengeance belong only to the Lord. "Yet here are men making judgments and seeking vengeance," he said.

The Very Rev William S. Lea, dean of Saint John's Cathedral in Denver, said the society "plays into the hands of the Communists by setting brother against brother."

"This is just what the Communists want," he said.

"WHEN YOU destroy mutual trust, you destroy the basis of democracy," Dean Lea said.

Both churchmen criticized the charge by Robert Welch, founder

of the John Birch Society, that 7,000 of the 200,000 Protestant ministers in the United States were either Communists or sympathizers with Communist purposes. Welch made the charge at his speech in Houston Tuesday night.

Sayre said the claim was completely irresponsible and was not backed up with any evidence.

Lea, in referring to the charge by Welch, said "He has the responsibility to publish a list of the people involved or turn their names over to the proper authorities."

SAYRE SAID this was undermining the American system of due process of law.

"No man can be condemned without being confronted by his accusers with a bill of particulars and having a chance to answer the charges," Lea said.

Lea said he thought the Birch Society should leave the routing of Communists to professional groups such as the FBI.

Sayre explained that the purpose of the deans' conference, which closes Thursday, was to study church strategy on local and national issues and to discuss common problems. The conference was not open to the public.

LEA SAID THE Birch Society was just one of many issues that the deans would discuss.

"About a third of the deans attending have expressed concern about the society," he said. There are 31 cathedral deans from various parts of the United



CALL WELCH CHARGES IRRESPONSIBLE  
Dean William S. Lea, Left, and Dean Francis Sayre Jr

States attending the conference.

Lea said he had not heard of any John Birch Society being organized in Denver.

Both men expressed admiration for the Right Rev John E. Hines, bishop of the Episcopal Diocese of Texas, for "his handling of critical issues of the church."

SAYRE AND LEA said they were concerned with many of the problems that the John Birch Society seeks to solve but felt they should be solved with Christian love, patience and principle.

"We are concerned with these issues as Christians but we are not judging our fellow citizens just as we would not like to have them judge us," Sayre said.

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-20-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH  
SOCIETY; INFORMATION  
CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-77

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 20 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC (62-1521)

DATE: 4/20/61

FROM : SA [redacted]

b6  
b7C

SUBJECT: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING [redacted]

94-197-574

On 4/20/61 [redacted]

[redacted] telephone [redacted] telephonically contacted the FBI office to report that about 7:30 p.m. on 4/18 April 18, 1961 BILL MACK, played a tape recording on his program, "Expressions" radio station KXYZ, of an interview with one EDGAR C. JONES, Jr., whom [redacted] took to be a colored male. [redacted] reported JONES spoke in disparaging terms of the John Birch Society and claimed he was the head of the National League for Universal Americanists, which is organizing the youth of America in college campuses and elsewhere and is bitterly opposed to the John Birch Society. [redacted] claims JONES said his group was ready to fight the John Birch Society and would meet them with force and use every means to crush them. [redacted] said there was no specific allegation of force or threat to any one individual other than being directed generally to ROBERT H. WELCH, the founder of the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY, but felt the allegations of fighting and using force were ~~in~~ improper and seemed particularly incensed that such statements were made by a Negro. He related he is a member of the John Birch Society and proud of it and felt if he made such threatening statements over the radio he would be investigated himself.

b6  
b7C  
b7D

BIRCH [redacted] related his political views in favor of the aims of the John Birch Society and revealed he has a person he did not name who was formerly a Mexican Secret Policeman, in U.S.A.F. intelligence work, whom [redacted] on behalf of the John Birch Society. He stated he and the John Birch Society were behind the FBI and its work, but realized the FBI could not publish any information concerning Communists and that the John Birch Society through its sources could find out much of the same information and could publish the same for the purpose of defeating Communism and furthering the cause of America. [redacted] said he and the John Birch Society, individually and collectively welcomed an investigation by the FBI, as they were all just good Christian Americans. [redacted] mentioned he was a [redacted] a former FBI agent [redacted]

SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED

[redacted] relates he is a [redacted] at civic groups on the topic of communism and current political problems.

[redacted] informed his purpose was [redacted] information a matter of record, particularly concerning [redacted] the John Birch Society, are planning to investigate him and perhaps take some action or sanctions against him.  
1 - 62-1364.

62-1521-78

## Music Hall Sold Out For Birch Society's Welch

The Music Hall, which seats about 3,000 people, reportedly has been sold out for the speech of Robert Welch, founder of the John Birch Society, here Tuesday night.

Confirmation that Welch's appearance was a sellout came from M. Lyle Cashion and Frank E. Tritico of the Sons of the American Revolution and from Mr and Mrs Akard Beall and Mrs Ben Duggan of the John Birch Society.

"WE SHOULD have hired the Coliseum," said Cashion, who is a member of the executive committee of the Paul Carrington Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution.

"My husband threatened to give my ticket to someone else and let me stand in the wings," said Mrs Beall, whose husband is a co-ordinator of the John Birch Society here.

"We don't have enough tickets for all the John Birch people who want them," she said.

Cashion said he had received more requests for seats from SAR members over Texas than he could fulfill, and that he would have to return some checks which had come in by mail.

HE SAID HE WAS convinced that twice as many seats could have been sold.

The tickets have been sold for \$1 each. The money will be used to defray the expenses of the program, he said.

Welch, who became a contro-

versial national figure this year after the John Birch Society was discussed on the floor of the U. S. House of Representatives, is expected to talk on the subject: "Through All The Days To Be."

The program will begin at 8 PM Tuesday, Beall said that probably three times as many tickets could have been sold if the Music Hall had been larger. HE SAID WELCH probably would not be able to remain in Houston any longer than overnight Tuesday.

Welch is expected to fly here Tuesday. He spoke in Dallas Sunday night. His Monday schedule was not released. Spokesmen for the John Birch Society have said that there will not be time for a press conference here Tuesday.

Ticket sales have been handled through the SAR committee which invited Welch to speak here, and through local John Birch members.

THE HOUSTON POST

4-17-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION.

62-1521-78a

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 18 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



## 2 Professors Blast Welch at Forum Here

BY WALTER MANSELL  
Chronicle Staff

Two University of Houston professors have accused Robert Welch, founder of the John Birch Society, of perversion of facts and history, of seeking to undermine the United States government and of holding totalitarian aims.

Dr. Lewis Kestenberg, 1813 Broadway, and Dr. Cliff McCleskey, 1720 Southmore, addressed about 100 persons at a Democratic Forum meeting Monday night at the East End Y.M.C.A., 7503 La Porte Freeway.

Dr. Kestenberg's principal talk was tape-recorded by members of the John Birch Society in attendance.

Dr. Kestenberg, saying he was puzzled by the recording, voiced no objection.

**Requests Speech Tape**

He added, "Not many in my profession would dare to make this talk."

Members of the audience said they wanted the Birch Society members in return to permit one of their meetings to be recorded.

The rant and file of the society, Kestenberg said, are either semiliterates or persons who like to take the role of intellectuals.

The leaders of the organization know better than what they say, he asserted. "Welch is a superb writer

skilled in the use of language," Kestenberg said, "but his coined words like 'Americanist' and 'comsymp' mean nothing."

Kestenberg said he does not believe Welch can arouse a mass movement because "he is an ineffective public speaker."

**"Political Rightists"**

"The Birch Society is anti-Communist," Kestenberg said, "but its adherents are political rightists who want to go back to the 'never-never times' of our history."

Welch, he charged, does not hide his totalitarian ideas.

"A member can be removed without reason," Kestenberg said. "Chapters are run by leaders appointed by headquarters. Each chapter owes allegiance only to the home chapter. Use of front organizations is urged."

But Kestenberg does not believe the John Birch Society will prove a real danger.

"We have had extremists before—the Know Nothing Party of the 1850s and the Klu Klux Klan of the 1920s. Both were powerful but both lost that power," he said.

**Raps Welch Letter**

Kestenberg rapped Welch's famous letter in which he attacks former President Eisenhower and John Foster Dulles as Communist agents.

He quoted Welch as saying, "I would rather have a government of 300,000 thieves than 8 million honest, honorable public servants."

"He is seeing seeds of dis-

trust of the federal government," Kestenberg said. "People involved in the society trust no one."

McCleskey referred to the society's stand for a republic, but not a democracy.

"The United States is and has been both," he said. "The United States Constitution starts with 'We, the people! All 50 state constitutions apply to democracies.'"

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
4-25-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-79

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 26 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

## MEETING AS FORUM OPPOSED

# Birch Society Group in Legion To Seek Warren Impeachment

BY LOU BOYD

Chronicle Staff

American Legionnaires said Tuesday they do not want John Birch Society members to use legion meetings as a

forum to push for the impeachment of Chief Justice Earl Warren of the United States Supreme Court.

Legion leadership in Houston said numerous Birch Society members on committees in the Legion have sought veterans' support of the society's aims, including the proposed impeachment of Warren.

But they said Legion officials decided at an executive meeting on a state level recently that the Legion in the Texas area will neither endorse nor condemn the ends and means of "outside organizations."

However, an unsigned news

release announcing Legion convention activities in the Houston area also disclosed that "the Birch Society element promises to present a resolution seeking the impeachment of United States Chief Justice Earl Warren."

The impeachment resolution will be offered at the annual spring convention of the Legion's 22d district, which will meet Saturday and Sunday at 3000 Braxton, headquarters of Legion Post No. 82, according to the news release.

The vice-commander and public relations chairman of Post No. 82, John W. Bentley, said the release was sent

out by W. H. Carson, who works with Bentley on the public relations committee.

Carson said the news of the impeachment resolution was submitted by Pat Welch, editor and publisher of the Houston Legionnaire, an association publication.

### Oppose Move

Bentley said he opposed any mingling of Birch Society activities with Legion affairs.

Carson said he disliked "radical techniques."

Donald I. Peters, a Houston attorney and past commander of the Legion's Texas department, said: "I can tell you any such resolution will lose—if I have to filibuster all week."

Peters said he was personally opposed to many Warren decisions but he felt strongly that the Legion must not identify itself with the "external associations of its individual members."

Leon Schofield, chairman of the Central Council of Legion Posts in the Houston

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE

4-26-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-80

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 27 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



area, said: "Our Legion voice will be louder, if we confine ourselves to veterans' matters."

He said many members in the Legion are not yet sure where they stand on such issues and he said he was unconvinced it was the Legion's business to tell them where to stand.

Ben C. Arning, commander of the Legion's District 22, said he thought the whole thing was settled three weeks ago at the executive meeting in Austin — "settled against outside association's dictating the Legion's point of view."

#### Another Resolution

Another resolution to be offered at the weekend convention will call for a new alignment of authority in the Legion's chain of command.

The present setup provides one Legion district for each congressional district in the state.

The change will provide one Legion district for each county, thus reducing Harris

County's representation in the department (state) executive committee to one instead of two district commanders.

The change also will affect Dallas County.

On May 6 and 7, the Legion's District 8 will hold its spring convention at the Channelview Post.

# Prof Says Birch Society Essentially Totalitarian

The controversial John Birch Society was described Monday as a basically totalitarian organization whose members want to "go back to a time of never-never in American history."

The description was made by Dr. Louis Kestenberg, a University of Houston professor who spoke before a meeting of the Democratic Forum at the East End YMCA.

"THE JOHN BIRCH Society perpetrates all the evils and sins that are attributed to its enemy, the Communist Party," said Dr. Kestenberg.

He said a Birch Society member can be removed without explanation, its chapters are run by a "leader" appointed by "headquarters," it is a "monolithic body" run by a single person dealing in absolutes and unconcerned with meanings, it uses any instrument available—in-

cluding fronts—to gain its ends, and participates in letter-writing and radio campaigns.

DR. KESTENBERG said the Birch Society's head, Robert Welch,—"a superb writer"—is a "very capable man with the language, but would be unable to arouse a mass movement because 'he is an ineffective public speaker.'"

He characterized Birch Society members as suffering from persecution complexes.

"They always pretend they're victims of censorship, and denounce censorship while writing about censorship," he said.

Dr. Kestenberg said the atmosphere of the organization was one of fatalism, that all "is practically lost."

THE MEETING WAS attended by several John Birch Society members, who received permission to tape record the discussion.

During the question-and-answer period, one Birch Society member rose to explain his organization's aims:

"We are trying to alert the American people to a danger that exists," he said, "... We are trying to restudy the source of our freedom under which we've attained the highest standard of living in the world."

ANOTHER UNIVERSITY of Houston professor, Dr. Cliff McCleskey, told the audience that there was "basic nonsense" in much of the society's literature.

"You cannot get the truth from the publications of the Birch Society that I have seen," he said.

He described the writings as a "calculated, deliberate attempt to rewrite history."

The Democratic Forum is sponsored by the education and research committee of the Harris County Democrats.

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-25-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-81

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 25 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



# Legion May Pass Over Warren Ouster Move

If a resolution for the impeachment of the U. S. Supreme Court chief justice comes before the convention of the 22nd District of the American Legion here, it will probably be ruled out of order.

Ben C. Arning of 1822 Norcrest St., commander of the 22nd District, said in his opinion such a resolution would be out of order.

**THE RESOLUTION**, aimed at Chief Justice Earl Warren, voices one of the goals of the John Birch Society.

The District 22 convention will be held Saturday and Sunday at Legion Post 52, at 3006 Brazos St.

Pat Welch, editor and publisher of the Legion publication, The Legionnaire, said that the resolution was approved by one of the Legion posts in District 22 and will go to the resolutions committee.

Welch said he did not want to disclose the name of the post. The resolution may die in committee, he said.

**ARNING SAID** there is resentment among some of the Legion members who believe the John Birch Society is moving behind the scenes to advance its aims with the help of Legionnaires.

"And there are some who approve," he added.

Arning said he is neither for nor against the John Birch Society, but is awaking word from the national organization's Americanism Commission on what the Legion policy will be toward the John Birch Society.

Three weeks ago the question of Legion policy toward the John Birch Society was brought up at an executive meeting of state Legion officials, and was referred to the national Americanism commission.

**WELCH SAID** Friday that he had no evidence that the anti-Warren resolution was introduced originally by a Birch Society member.

Such an action would not necessarily mean that the Birch Society is using the Legion for a front, Welch said, adding:

"A number of their projects are identical to Legion projects. For instance, they are for the

Connally Amendment on the World Court and opposed to deleting the loyalty oath from the Education Act."

Donald Peters, former state Legion commander, said he will oppose the resolution if it reaches the floor, which he does not expect it to do.

**PAUL WAGENSELLER**, commander of Post 52, will call the convention to order at 1:30 PM Saturday. Several committee chairmen will present reports on the afternoon program. There will be a dance at 9 PM.

At 10 AM Sunday, Raymond S. H. Hoo, consul general of Nationalist China, will speak. Arning will preside at an afternoon session starting at 1:30 PM, when a new district adjutant will be elected and installed and several committees, including the one on resolutions will report.

Mrs. Stella Legnon, 22nd District Auxiliary commander, will preside at an afternoon session which also begins at 1:30 PM Sunday. Mrs. Agnes Nost, president of Auxiliary Unit 52, will deliver the welcome address.

THE HOUSTON POST  
4-29-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-82  
SEARCHED.....INDEXED.....  
SERIAL 200 OF FILED 16

b6  
b7C

# Manion Calls for U.S. War on Communism

Clarence E. Manion told 145 new American citizens here Monday night that the United States "all out stands between the Communist conquest of the world and the last remnants of human freedom"—must declare war on Communism everywhere.

"Don't tell me of the shrinking gutless Americans—come of them in high places—I say to them talk not to me of peace at a time like this. We must read the Declaration of American Independence at a time like this. I am fed to the teeth with evocations," he said.

"IF WE HAD my guts at all we would blockade Cuba and would protect our American rights," said Manion.

He said, "if we go down now, liberty is dead for God knows how many years."

"We must shore up the frayed edges of American patriotism. For too long we have ascribed American patriotism for the good of the UN and the OAS (Organization of American States)," he said.

He received two standing ovations from a nearly capacity audience.

THE PRESIDENT, dean of the Notre Dame Law School spoke at a naturalization ceremony in the Music Hall.

Urging the new Americans to view their citizenship as "a passport to personal responsibility," Manion told them:

"American citizenship is not a license to lean upon Ameri-

can government for support, guidance and maintenance."

Earlier Monday at a press conference, the 34-year-old lawyer and founder of the Manion Forum radio program offered these opinions:

1) The U. S. should send troops, if necessary, to chase Castro and Communism from Cuba.

2) THERE IS NO point in sending U. S. troops into Laos because "it's past saving."

3) The John Birch Society, of which Manion is a council member, seems to him to use "moral and legal means which are extremely proper."

4) He is not interested in an appointment to the Supreme Court. Many Birch Society members favor him for the court in the event they succeed in their campaign to impeach Chief Justice Earl Warren.

Manion told reporters the Cuban invasion fiasco was a result of "our ineptitude in handling Communism for a long, long time."

He was asked if he would favor using U. S. military forces to drive out Premier Fidel Castro.

"I CERTAINLY would," he replied, "I think we've delayed too long in letting everybody know we intend to defend this country."

"We flunked the Hungarian test in 1955. Are we going to flunk the Cuban test now?"

Manion added, however, that he did not believe force would



CLARENCE E. MANION.  
Thinks Laos is lost

THE HOUSTON POST  
5-2-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

b6  
b7C

62-1521-83

SEARCHED.....	INDEXED.....
SERIALIZED.....	FILED.....
MAY 2 1961	

*[Handwritten signature]*



be necessary in Cuba if the U. S. bluntly told the Cuban people that Castro and Communism must go.

"So far, we have not done this," he said.

Turning to Laos, Manton said he believed it was already lost to the Communists.

"IT WOULD BE useless to try to recapture it with U. S. soldiers," he said. "I think we have more important fish to fry near home, in Cuba and Latin America."

Manton said the support of him by some Birch Society members for a Supreme Court post was "just an academic accolade."

"I'm pleased by the compliment," he said, "but it's impossible. I'm sure I would never be nominated. My political future is behind me, and my past is before me."

As a member of the council of the Birch Society, Manton is

one of the top advisers to its founder, Robert Welch.

THE NATURALIZATION ceremony was presided over by Federal District Judge Joe Ingraham. It was sponsored by the Houston Bar Association as part of its observance of Law Day.

A pledge of allegiance to the flag was led by Donald L. Peters, post state commander of the American Legion. The Waltrip Senior High School Band and Chorus sang "The Star-Spangled Banner."

Monday afternoon, Manton spoke to a group of students at Rice University on the significance of Law Day.

Manton told the students that the United States represents the forces of right against the forces of might—Communism—in the present world struggle.

HE SAID "We had little chance to prevail 'unless the Americans could reclaim their understanding of what law is.'"

"Americanism," he said, "is the only hope for victory over Communism."

Not all countries, he continued, need adopt our form of government. Any government that represents the temper of the nation is claimed to the times and "represents the substance of what we call Americanism" is "acceptable," he said.

He said the substance of Americanism is based on belief in God, equality under the law and government by law.

The American people, Manton said, should learn to govern

themselves as a necessary prerequisite to a limited government under the Constitution."

"IF YOU CAN govern yourself, you can afford to be without the policeman day and night," he said, and "government can afford to confine itself to the limitations placed on it by the United States Constitution."

After the talk Manton was challenged by a group of students to explain why the United States could represent "right" on the basis of intervention in Cuba, and current efforts to overthrow the government of the Dominican Republic and support of Nicaragua.

"If the invasion of Cuba was a demonstration of might," he said, "it is a poor demonstration."

"If there is a momentary hesitation about going to Cuba, there should not be a moment's hesitation about going to Cuba."

"If you are not right, you'd better not go at all. It is better to have a right to continue to exist."

He said the United States should accept support from France and Trujillo on the same basis as we accept support from the United States on the basis of a greater right.

Mr. Frances over tried to subvert the government of the United States, he said.

## Obscure Heroes

The controversial John Birch Society, the Nazi movement and the Union cause in the Civil War all have had, surprisingly, one thing in common. All three have sought to rally their forces by citing a more or less synthetic hero, really a minor figure deliberately singled out for publicity. The Birch Society commemorates John Birch, an army captain who was killed by the Chinese Communists, and is therefore reckoned as the first victim of the cold war with China.

The Nazi parallel was Horst Wessel, a ne'er-do-well with shady associates who was killed in the 1930s, leaving behind him an unpublished song. The Horst Wessel song was taken up by the Nazis and sung at all their gatherings. Few of the rank and file knew anything about him but that did not prevent them from glorifying his name.

The closest Civil War parallel was John Brown, a hater of slavery whose family had much insanity in it and who himself gave the appearance of being unbalanced. He murdered a number of slave-holding Missourians during the Kansas struggle in 1856, when both slavery and anti-slavery immigrants sought to secure Kansas for their cause.

In 1859 he invaded Virginia to start a slave insurrection, and captured the federal arsenal. The arsenal was taken; Brown was executed. In the eyes of many, his tragic death halved his previous bloody career. During the war thousands of Northern soldiers sang, as they marched, "John Brown's body lies a-mouldering in the grave."

Without organized publicity Birch and Wessel would have remained in oblivion. Brown differed from both in owing his fame largely to his own efforts. He and Wessel were both glorified far beyond their deserts. So far material is lacking for a final judgment on John Birch.

## CORPUS CHRISTI TIMES

Published every weekday afternoon at Lower Broadway and Twine Street, Corpus Christi, Texas by the Callier Times Publishing Co. Sunday edition: The Corpus Christi Callier-Times.

Clayton C. Craig ..... Publisher  
Robert M. Jackson ..... Editor  
Robert F. Vickers ..... Business Manager

THE CORPUS CHRISTI TIMES  
4-28-61

Corpus Christi, Texas  
ROBERT M. JACKSON, Editor  
RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

b6  
b7C

62-1521-84

SEARCHED.....	INDEXED.....
SERIALIZED.....	FILED.....
61	

WVK



# Channelview School Trustees Squelch Library Book Critics

The Channelview School Board has sternly reprimanded critics of its library books as "publicity seekers . . . who have done damage to our students."

In a meeting Monday night, the board turned a deaf ear to attempted lectures on literature by John Birch Society member Mrs. Fay Seale and two other persons.

The trustees told them their opinions were not wanted. The board voted to "dis-  
pense with all discussion

about our school library" until Supt. H. C. Schochler and his faculty complete an investigation on library books.

Channelview doesn't need the advice of Houston about school library books.

That's what some Houstonians were told Monday night at a Channelview school board meeting that ended in uproar.

Mrs. Seale, 35, of 801 Norvell, Channelview, had tried to renew her demands that the junior high school

library be checked for questionable books.

But board secretary Jess Evans interrupted:

"We've had enough unfavorable publicity on this, and it's done damage to our students."

Then Mrs. Seale introduced John H. Deavours, 1422 Lombardy, Houston, who identified himself as a Baptist layman and an insurance man.

Deavours said he was a

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
5-16-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HOFfile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-85

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAY 18 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

supporter of Mrs. Seale and added that he had information from FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover about questionable books in school libraries.

He didn't get very far.

#### Cuts Him Off

Mrs. F. P. Dillon, 706 Pemberton Dr., Channelview, cut him off, saying:

"By what right does he come to our community? I reserve the right to censor my child's reading, but I don't want anyone else saying what my child can read."

William A. Andel, 301 Sheldon Rd., Channelview, said:

"I have two children and I don't need him telling me how to raise them."

Deavours said he had some literature in which the members might be interested. He was told: "Just leave it on the table and we'll look it over."

Walter J. White, 1835 Enid, Houston, who identified himself as a member of the countersubversive commission of the American Legion, was drowned out by the uproar.

An unidentified man, reportedly from Houston, tried to bring in a tape recorder. He was told to leave.

Board President C. L. Robertson also branded Mrs. Seale and her followers "publicity seekers." Board member Ellis Burnham said the attack on the school library was "utter sensationalism."

Evans made a motion to end the discussion until later when our personnel finish going through the books and we get a report from them.

Mrs. Seale, a member of the John Birch Society, recently demanded that the

school board remove two books from the library. She charged that they were immoral. One includes writings from Plato that she found objectionable; the other was about the lives of religious leaders.



DIRECTOR, FBI

May 17, 1961

LEGAT, LONDON (62-new)

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
MISCELLANEOUS - INFO CONCERNING

For the information of the Bureau, it is pointed out that [redacted] a confidential source [redacted] contacted the Legat on May 11, 1961, and advised that at approximately 6:00 a.m. on May 11, 1961, two very intoxicated American citizens [redacted] Communist activity on the part of an American citizen, [redacted] who resides in [redacted]

[redacted] stated the two complainants were so intoxicated [redacted] because they were Americans and appeared to have a legitimate complaint, even though drunk, [redacted] talked to them and suggested they return to their hotel.

Another [redacted] two complainants later on in the day when they were in a more sober condition. The two complainants were identified as:

Name:  
Date of Birth:  
Residence:  
  
U. S. Passport #:

Name:  
Date of Birth:  
Residence:

[Redacted box for identification details]

[redacted] they were members of the John Birch Society, that [redacted] joined thirty days ago and that [redacted] has been a member since the organization's inception.

RUC

3 Bureau  
1 London

ACM:col  
(4)

*[Handwritten signature]*

62-1521-86

SEARCHED 92	INDEXED
SERIALIZED 19	FILED
MAY 26 1961	

[Redacted box]

b6  
b7C

LON 62-new

Apparently both [redacted] are travelling on an organized tour with [redacted] and others and during the night of May 10-11, 1961, consumed large quantities of alcohol with [redacted] and made various amorous advances to her which were refused. [redacted] was obviously able to outdrink both [redacted] and it appears that their complaint [redacted] at 6:00 a.m. was more in spite than anything else. However, both individuals insisted she is a Communist but can give no evidence to support their allegation.

b6  
b7C  
b7D

[redacted]  
were so Communist-ridden that they would not dare approach the Embassy and stated that this Communism in Government was responsible for the Cuban situation and under no circumstances did they feel that they could take their problem to the American Embassy.

[redacted] advised that the individuals arrived [redacted] on May 9, 1961, on an organized tour under the auspices of the American Express Company and are scheduled [redacted] on May 12, 1961. The tour is to continue until the end of May and they will return to the United States on approximately May 29.

There is no record of [redacted] or the complainants in the indices of this office and this matter is being brought to the Bureau's attention for information.



# Subversive Dangers Hot Topic

By HAROLD SCARLETT

A Houston conservative leader showed up at a Democratic Forum meeting Monday night and dueled with liberal speakers over how best to fight Communism.

The weapons were tongues at 10 paces.

Cliff McCleskey, an assistant professor at the University of Houston, started the set-to by contending that many anti-Communists hereabouts are too "ignorant and ill-informed" for their jobs.

The political science teacher insisted that the major danger from Communism is overseas not inside the United States.

IN A QUESTION period later, William N. (Bill) Hollis rose to challenge McCleskey. Hollis is the assistant state director of Freedom-in-Action, a conservative political education group.

Hollis asked what about Harry Dexter White as under secretary of the treasury and Alger Hiss who was "the Number 1 adviser" to President Roosevelt.

"Now that illustrates the importance of my point about lack of knowledge," McCleskey retorted.

"Harry Dexter White was not undersecretary of the Treasury. And Alger Hiss was not a Num-

ber 1 adviser to the President."

Hollis accused McCleskey of begging the question on White's post and asked: "What's the difference?"

"If you don't know the difference, Mr Hollis," McCleskey replied, "you're not qualified to talk about this."

"Assistant secretaries are a dime a dozen in Washington. There are only 10 undersecretaries. There are hundreds of assistant secretaries."

THE MEETING, sponsored by the liberal Harris County Democrats, took place at the Northwest YMCA at 1234 West 34th Avenue.

McCleskey was on a panel of three speakers who discussed ways of fighting Communist other than through organizations such as the John Birch Society and the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade.

The other speakers were James Gough, an associate law professor at the University of Houston, and the Rev Lewis A. McAdow of Bethany Christian Church, who was recently elected president of the Association of Churches of Greater Houston.

The meeting, despite some brisk exchanges, was generally good-natured.

Hollis explained amid laughter that he had showed up because he was "interested in extremist political organizations."

AFTER QUESTIONS by several others, Hollis returned to the issue of White and Hiss and asked McCleskey if he approved of Communists in high government posts.

"I'm flatly insulted by that question, Mr Hollis," McCleskey replied. "I haven't implied any such thing."

Pressed by Hollis for a direct answer, McCleskey replied that he certainly did not want Communists in the government.

Hollis also got into an exchange with another member of the audience, Woodrow Seals, the Harris County Democratic chairman.

Seals noted that the Monday night meeting was open to the public, with questions permitted.

"But a conservative political organization which has a representative here recently held a three-day meeting in which there was no discussion," Seals said. "You couldn't even get in without an invitation."

"NOW WHY is that?" Seals

THE HOUSTON POST

5-23-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-87

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAY 26 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

9

asked blandly.

Hollis replied that Freedom in Action had open as well as closed meetings.

"You hold meetings of the Democratic executive committee and you don't invite me," Hollis countered. "I've seen you have lunch with Mrs. Frankie Randolph and I wasn't invited."

The talks and questions at the meeting skipped from the Ala-

bama race riots to Supreme Court decisions to the United Nations.

Hough maintained that Communist-hunting vigilantes can "lead to lynch mobs." He said

such tactics should be fought "by exposure, by libel suits and in the marketplace of ideas."

Rev. McAdow said modern transportation and communication had thrown the world's people suddenly together.

"THIS ONRUSH of recent

years has created an early response of fear," he said, which

has resulted in criticism of such

international bodies as the United Nations and the World Council of Churches.

He said the global forces which caused those organizations would never be stopped by critical people.

McCleskey, in asserting that the real Communist threat lies overseas, said:

"We could put every Commu-

nist or Communist sympathizer in this country in jail or concentration camps or hang them, and it wouldn't in the least hurt Mr. Khrushchev's plan to bury us.

"It might even help him."



# Amateurs and Vigilantes Can't Fight Communism, Forum Told

BY WALTER MANSELL  
Chronicle Staff

Communism is a crime, and amateurs and vigilantes cannot combat it. Dr. James Gough, University of Houston assistant law professor, told the Democratic Forum Monday night.

Dr. Gough spoke on communism at the forum, sponsored by the education committee of the liberal Harris County Democrats at the Northwest Y.M.C.A., 1234 W. 34th.

The proceedings were enlivened by questions from members of the conservative John Birch Society and Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, organizations dedicated to fight subversion, and Freedom in Action.

## Other Speakers

Other speakers were Rev. Lewis McAdow, 4610 Banning, pastor of Bethany Christian Church and president of the Assn. of Churches of Greater Houston, and Dr.

H. C. McCleskey, 1720 Southmore, U. of H. assistant professor.

The pastor emphasized, at the start of his talk, that he was at the meeting neither as a liberal nor as a conservative, but to speak on communism.

Dr. McAdow urged that communism be taught in high schools and colleges "on an objective basis by reputable professors who use original sources and who allow freedom of discussion, as contrasted to self-styled lecturers who use material out of context."

Dr. McAdow accused Robert Welch, founder of the John Birch Society, of moral cowardice in failing to back up his charge that 7000 clergymen in this country are Communists or Communist dupes.

Dr. McAdow said not more than 25 clergymen, mostly elderly and retired, may have been dupes of the Communists.

Gough, 3025 Glen Haven, defined true liberals "as oriented to the rights of the individual and to the rule of law, unlike Communists or those on the far right."

## Blunders Admitted

He admitted some liberals have hurt the cause of liberalism with blunders, citing the "misreading" of the true meaning of communism by Franklin D. Roosevelt and Henry A. Wallace.

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
5-23-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-88

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAY 26 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

"Those who distrust fellow Americans as disloyal or subversive have far more in common with communism or the totalitarianism of the right wing than do liberals," he said.

He defended the right of Congress to appoint panels such as the House un-American activities committee although he doubted if this is a function of state legislatures.

#### Sharp Questioning

McCleskey came under sharp questioning about a statement that international communism, not internal sources, is the real threat to this country.

McCleskey charged that international communism's military power and economic pressure are the real dangers to this country.

"If we hunt witches, we divert attention from the real problem," he said.

Later he was asked by William N. Hollis, 9023 Nona, assistant state director of Freedom in Action, whether he considered Communists being in positions of importance in the government a real danger.

#### White, Hiss Cases

Hollis cited Harry Dexter White, onetime assistant secretary to the treasury, and Alger Hiss, whom he termed "the No. 1 adviser to the President."

"I don't mean there should not be a security check," McCleskey said. "I would point out that Hiss was convicted and was put away. They may have had some limited impact. But the major threat is international communism."



# 'Behave Alarmingly Alike'---Bishop Hines Tactics of John Birch Society Compared to Those of Reds

By MARE DAUPLAISE  
Press Staff Writer

The Right Reverend John E. Hines of the Episcopal Diocese of Texas today compared the operations of the John Birchers to that of the Communists.

In an editorial in the diocese's official publication, the Texas Churchman, Bishop Hines said Birchers "behave alarmingly like the Communists say 'subversives' ought to behave to be successful against a free society."

## In Particular

In particular, the bishop referred to these actions as typical of the society.

1. Methods of harassment such as telephone calls in the small hours of the night.
2. Insistence upon a type of unquestioning obedience to orders from above.

The Texas Churchman, distributed in 57 counties, was received today by an estimated 25,000 Episcopalians.

The bishop's editorial opened with what he called an indirect quote of "a sentence from someone of acute insight."

The sentence said:

"God save me from my friends, I can protect myself from my enemies."

He said "shrinking areas of individual freedom" are under attack not only by Communists and fascists but by "the sound and fury of zealot groups."



BISHOP HINES

Those groups, said the bishop, are trying to do these things:

1. Lament inquiry.
2. Forbid differences of opinion.
3. Decide for others what is "healthy and wise" for them to read and hear.

Then, said the bishop:

"It is likely that every free society has to pass through such a period in its history for real maturity."

"Such a free society is equipped

to deal with its avowed enemies, inasmuch as its real enemies are not able to stand for over within the bright immunities of free inquiry and untrammeled testimony to the truth.

"And—under normal conditions—a free society could also deal with its immature and badly misguided 'friends.'"

"But, the combination, the strange alliance (totally disclaimed by the overly zealous to be sure) works a hardship from which a free society has a right to be delivered."

Bishop Hines said the behavior of which he disapproves could be expected of "the avowed enemies of the great freedoms."

But, he said, the "rank and file of fair-minded, dedicated churchmen" cannot be blamed for "dismay and sorrow" about Communist-type behavior among their colleagues.

These fellow-churchmen, said the bishop, "under the guise of fighting the totalitarians foolishly adopt their methods, and are corrupted by their unethical rationalizations."

## Quotes Nietzsche

The bishop finished his editorial with a quote from the philosopher Nietzsche, of whom he said that Christians would not give complete approval but could find some of his insights had "integrity."

His quote from Nietzsche:

"Beware, lest in fighting a monster you become one yourself."

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
5-31-61

Houston, Texas  
RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUN 2 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

## HYSTERICAL EXTREMISM

# Bishop Hines Warns Of 'Radical Right'

Rt. Rev. John E. Hines, Bishop of the Episcopal Diocese of Texas, warned his diocese Wednesday that excesses of the "radical right" are shrinking the living room of genuine conservatives and tending to make them "liberals."

Bishop Hines said in an editorial in the Texas Churchman, official publication of the diocese, that the "radical right" long to be called conservative but has fouled up

the conservative's mission by arrogating to its hysterical extremism the conservative's label."

He said the John Birch Society, "a gross offender, behaves alarmingly like the Communists may subversives ought to be successful against a free society."

Bishop Hines said "harassment such as telephone calls in the small hours of the night, unquestioning obedience to orders from above and planting seeds of distrust without respect for ethical considerations" are actions expected of the enemies of freedom.

Bishop Hines said, "Shrinking areas of individual freedoms are under increased burden of attack from zealous groups whose inordinate fears betray them into attempts to limit inquiry, forbid divergence of opinion within ranks and decide what is healthy and wise for others to read and hear."

"Every free society has to pass through such a period to reach real maturity and is equipped to deal with its avowed enemies," Bishop Hines said.

He began the editorial by saying, "God save me from my friends; I can protect myself from my enemies."

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
5-31-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-90

SEARCHED.....	INDEXED.....
SERIALIZED.....	FILED.....
JUN 2 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



## Bishop Hines Deplores Birch Society Methods

The Right Rev John E. Hines, bishop of the Episcopal Diocese of Texas, advised the John Birch Society and other anti-Communist groups, Wednesday, to heed a warning from Nietzsche:

"Beware, lest in fighting a monster you become one yourself."

Bishop Hines deplored the methods of the Birch Society in a front-page editorial in the Texas Churchman, a diocesan newspaper that goes to about 24,000 Episcopalians in Texas.

THE BISHOP accused John Birch of behaving "alarmingly" like the Communist Party's "subversives" ought to behave to be successful against a free society.

He said the society's tactics would be juvenile if they were not so harmful to freedom. He charged the society with:

1) "Methods of harassment, such as telephone calls in the small hours of the night."

2) "A type of unquestioning obedience to orders to 'burn'."

3) "The attempt to create distrust and division within respect for ethical considerations."

Bishop Hines said in his editorial that "extremist groups" are attacking individual freedom, but he mentioned only the Birch Society by name.

THE HOUSTON POST  
6-1-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-91

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUN 12 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

# Gen. Walker Draws Rebuke From Army For His Statements

WASHINGTON, June 12. — (AP) — The Army today rebuked Maj. Gen. Edwin A. Walker, former 24th Infantry Division commander in Germany, for "derogatory public statements" about prominent Americans.

Army Secretary Elvis J. Stahr Jr. also cancelled Walker's orders to become commander of the 8th Corp at Austin, Texas. He assigned Maj. Gen. Thomas E. Yancey to the post.

Yancey now commands the 2nd Infantry Brigade at Ft. Devens, Mass., and will go to Austin this month.

Walker had been accused by an American publication in Europe, Overseas Weekly, of preaching precepts of the controversial John Birch Society to his troops and of telling a group of Americans in Germany that former President Truman, former Secretary of State Dean Acheson and Mrs. Eleanor Roosevelt were "definitely pink."

He also was accused by Overseas Weekly of labeling large parts of the American press, radio and television as pro-Communist.

Gen. Bruce C. Clark, U. S. Army commander in Europe, gave Walker an "official admonition," an action short of a reprimand.

Prompted by White House

Prompted by the White House, an investigation of Walker's actions was ordered by the Army after the Overseas Weekly charges. President Kennedy presumably read the report on the Army's investigation before today's announcement. Defense Secretary Robert S. McNamara approved the action.

Walker's future was left in doubt. The Army said he "will remain assigned to Headquarters U. S. Army Europe, pending eventual reassignment within the United States."

The Army said, however, that its investigation showed Walker's "pro-blue" program was not attributed to any program of the John Birch Society. It said the "pro-blue" program was a troop education plan of Walker's.



MAJ. GEN. EDWIN A. WALKER

Rebukes, orders cancelled.

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
6-12-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)  
HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-92

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUN 15 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

# COMING TO

# HOUSTON

FRIDAY and SATURDAY,

JUNE 16-17

## CHRISTIAN CRUSADE

with America's

## CRUSADING EVANGELIST

*Dr. Hargis*  
**Billy James HARGIS**

Meet the man whose writings stirred the Air Force Manual Controversy! Hear Dr. Billy James Hargis, the renowned anti-communist leader, as he brings you documented, authentic facts about communist infiltration in our churches... our schools... our government. Hear the TRUTH about America's most deadly enemies... hear startling facts about the Supreme Court... the United Nations... Foreign Aid... Espionage... and many other vital subjects.

## CHRISTIAN CRUSADE

is America's largest and fastest-growing anti-communist organization. Founded and directed by Evangelist Billy James Hargis, its headquarters are in Tulsa, Oklahoma. You are urged to join Christian Crusade's fight to awaken the millions of complacent Americans to the dangers of Communism!



AMERICA'S  
DYNAMIC  
LEADER  
IN THE FIGHT  
AGAINST  
GODLESS  
COMMUNISM

*CRUSADING FOR GOD AND COUNTRY*

### TWO GREAT MEETINGS

### WALTRIP HIGH SCHOOL AUDITORIUM

34th Street HOUSTON

Friday and Saturday, June 16-17, 7:30 p.m.

Sponsored by: 6th & 22nd Congressional Districts  
American Legion Counter Subversive Committee

to **ADMISSION FREE! PUBLIC INVITED!**

*F.B.I. This MAN is A Member of the John Birch Society - AND should Be Investigated!*

### Christian Crusade RADIO

62-1521-73  
XEG 1050 k.c.  
Monterrey, Mexico

9:00 ☒ RECORDED ☒ INDEXED  
SERIALIZED ☒ FILED ☒  
JUN 15 1961  
KCTA 1050 AM  
Corpus Christi, TEXAS

8:30 a.m. Mon. thru Sat.  
4:00 p.m. Mon. thru Sat.  
12:00 noon Sun.



## 'LEAVE WORK TO FBI'

# Prominent John Birch Member Here Resigns

By HAROLD SCARLETT

Mrs W. L. Goldston, a prominent Houston member of the John Birch Society, disclosed Friday that she has quit the militant right-wing group.

"I do not believe in taking the law into my own hands," she told Robert Welch, the society leader, in a letter of resignation.

MRS GOLDSTON rebelled at a request by Welch that members help him build up a file on leading American liberals, Socialists and Communist sympathizers.

"I see no value to such a list and have no access to documented evidence on any person," she wrote Welch. "I believe in leaving such work to

authorized lawful organizations such as the FBI."

Mrs Goldston, the widow of a well-known oilman, said a number of her friends were leaving the Birch Society for the same reason.

"I imagine most of the chapter I belong to will resign," she said. "It has about 20 or 25 members."

MRS GOLDSTON, a member for about two years, is one of 11 Texans on the society's committee of endorsers. The committee includes some well-known people across the country who agreed to let Welch use their names in promoting the controversial society.

At the society headquarters in Belmont, Mass, an aide to Welch had no comment on the resignation.



MRS W. L. GOLDSTON  
'It Is a Shame'

Thomas Hill, director of field activities, said Mrs Goldston's letter had not reached there yet. It was mailed Thursday. Asked if the society has had

THE HOUSTON POST

7-15-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HO file: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-94

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUL 17 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	

other resignations from across the country for the same reason, Hill replied:

"No, we have not."

IN HIS JULY bulletin to members, Welch asked their help in getting "the background, connections and activities of all the leading liberals (including, of course, those consympa and dupes)."

Consympa is a word coined by Welch for Communist sympathizers.

Welch estimated in the bulletin that there are "not more than 300,000 to 500,000 Communists" in the U. S., with "not more than a million allies, dupes and sympathizers."

Mrs. Goldston said she first read of the file project in a news story and did not believe it until her bulletin arrived later.

IN HER RESIGNATION letter, she said she had been proud to be a society member up until recently and had tried to help Houston papers "learn the truth about the society and stop printing false reports on it."

Her letter concluded:

"I feel there are so many vital

issues on which the John Birch Society could have great influence that it is a shame to waste time and talent on things which will accomplish no purpose."

Questioned about her letter, Mrs. Goldston added this point:

"Before, we've dealt with issues — not people. This was a new departure. I think other people have just as much right to be liberals as I have to be a conservative."

MRS. GOLDSTON is the widow of Walter L. Goldston, who died in 1957 and left an estate of \$8.4 Million. Mrs. Goldston now manages the estate.

She said she had been an ordinary member of the society, paying the regular women's dues of \$12 a year. She said she had not taken a \$1,000 life membership, but had once made a small donation to the society.

Mrs. Goldston said there appeared to be a sizable revolt among society members here against Welch's file project.

She asked Akard Beall, a society co-ordinator here, told her daughter that a number of members had complained to him about it.

Beall could not be found for comment.

# Leader Retracts Threat Birchers Won't Talk On Loss of Members

By JOSEPH FACILETT  
Press Staff Writer

A chapter leader in the John Birch Society in Houston, who told a Press reporter yesterday he would "punch him in the nose" if he quoted his comments about loss of membership in the Right-Wing organization, has reconsidered.

The Press was—and still is—trying to track down a circulating report that the ultra-Conservative group is losing members because they are being asked to "finger" friends and associates as Communists or Communist sympathizers.

## Retracts Threat

When the chapter leader was first contacted by The Press, he said:

"My chapter has lost a few members."

He later said that statement could not be used. When he was told it would be, he threatened. But later he called, apologized and elaborated.

"I didn't mean what I said. I was just upset. This is just the very thing we are trying to fight—extremism. Instead of punching you in the nose, I'd like to buy you a drink."

"I can only speak for one small part of the organization. My chapter has lost four members—but they were the kind we didn't need, anyway."

"And it has gained six new members, so we don't really have a loss."

For an overall picture of membership in the society, the man asked The Press to contact a second man. This second man said he didn't even know the

man who gave his name and was not a spokesman for the society.

## Refuses Statement

The second man in turn gave the name of a third man, Akard S. Beall, a Houston-Baytown homebuilder. Mr. Beall has spoken frequently for the society in Houston.

Contacted in Baytown, he said he had no statement whatsoever on the rumor that members were leaving. Asked who would have a statement, he responded:

"None of your business."  
Then he hung up the phone.



AKARD S. BEALL

"None of your business"

THE HOUSTON PRESS

12/6/61

Houston, Texas

RE: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(Hofile: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-96

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED

b6  
b7c





TO: SAC, HOUSTON

1/11/62

FROM: SA [REDACTED]

SUBJECT: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING

On 1/11/62 [REDACTED] and

[REDACTED] appeared at the Houston Office on 1/11/62 and furnished the following information:

Both advised that they are [REDACTED]

b6  
b7C

They advised that they are under the supervision of [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] They advised that just recently [REDACTED] resigned and [REDACTED] was appointed as a replacement.

Both [REDACTED] advised that several representatives in the State of Texas legislature have introduced a bill to abolish the Harris County School District. They advised that on Saturday, January 13, 1962 at 2:00 there is going to be a meeting at the Criminal Courts Building, Houston, Texas. They stated that the purpose of this meeting is to justify ~~the~~ maintaining aforementioned office. Both advised they have received information to the effect that several members of the John Birch Society will be present at the meeting and are alleged to be behind the abolishment of the Harris County Superintendant's Office.

b6  
b7C

62-1521-97

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JAN 11 1962	

[REDACTED] [Signature]

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC, Houston [redacted]

DATE: 10/12/62

FROM : SA [redacted]

☐ CI

☐ SI

SUBJECT:

☒ PCI

☐ PSI

PCI

Dates of Contact

10/8/62

Titles and File #s on which contacted

UNSUB; Theft of Paintings, etc.,

87-6678

7/17/62, Chicago, Ill; [redacted]

VICTIM - ITSP

Purpose and results of contact:

☐ NEGATIVE

☒ POSITIVE

Infnt advised that he had no information on the above, but would be alert for any info that might come to his attention.

Infnt advised that he was recently told by a [redacted] who resides on [redacted] the following;

[redacted] indicated to her that he is a member of the JOHN BIRCH society. He stated that his organization has a contact at the [redacted] by the name of [redacted] who lets them know when ships dealing with Communist countries are [redacted] so that they can get the pickets out. [redacted] indicated that he is one of the [redacted] for such picketing.

☐ Informant certified that he has furnished all information obtained by him since last contact.

Rating

Very Good

Coverage

XXXXXXXX AR - GLIF

Personal Data

1 - 87-6678  
1 - 62-1521

SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED

b6  
b7C



United States Department of Justice  
Federal Bureau of Investigation  
215 S. S. Post Office  
Little Rock, Arkansas  
October 30, 1962

[REDACTED]  
On October 24, 1962, [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] advised that he had received the following information from a confidential source:

[REDACTED] has contacted members of the John Birch Society and [REDACTED] Arkansas, and has attempted [REDACTED] claims to be a member of the John Birch Society in Texas and also a member of other unspecified right-wing organizations.

On October 19, 1962, [REDACTED]

ported that [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] is not presently working at [REDACTED] but has been instructed by his company to remain in [REDACTED] until they can get him properly cleared.

This document contains neither recommendations nor conclusions of the FBI. It is the property of the FBI and is loaned to your agency; it and its contents are not to be distributed outside your agency.

CCO

INDEX

62-1521-99  
SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED

b6  
b7C



Re: [redacted]

b2  
b7D  
b6  
b7C

[redacted] advised on September 18, 1962, that on the [redacted] the regular monthly meeting of the Pine Bluff Chapter of the John Birch Society was held at the [redacted]

[redacted] There was a guest visitor at this meeting. This guest was identified as [redacted]

[redacted] seemed to be well versed in regard to the John Birch Society. [redacted] advised that the John Birch Society Chapter in Pine Bluff continues to be led by members of the Association of Arkansas Klans of the Ku Klux Klan, a characterization of which is contained in the appendix hereto.

A P P E N D I X

ASSOCIATION OF ARKANSAS KLANS  
OF THE KU KLUX KLAN (AAK)

A source advised on April 22, 1959, as follows:

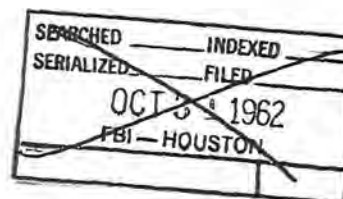
AAK was formed on April 21, 1959, at Pine Bluff, Arkansas, for the purpose of promoting white supremacy and segregation of the races but violence was disavowed. Leaders of AAK were previously members of the Original Knights of the Ku Klux Klan (OKKKK). GEORGE F. EDWARDES, Grand Dragon of OKKKK for the State of Arkansas, was carried over as the Grand Dragon of the new organization, AAK. A source advised that on August 11, 1960, GEORGE F. EDWARDES disavowed violence. Another source advised that on January 21, 1962, the new Grand Dragon, BILL WILLIAMS, disavowed violence. GEORGE F. EDWARDES is the Legal Counselor of the AAK. Another source stated the ritual used by OKKKK is taken from the "Kloran" of the Association of South Carolina Klans of the Ku Klux Klan (ASCK).

Regarding the ASCK, the following is noted:

A source advised on September 24, 1956, that the ASCK was organized in the fall of 1955 and is patterned after the Association of Carolina Klans (ACK). The source stated the ASCK is a new organization and not a re-birth of the ACK, although all high-ranking officials of the ASCK had been members of the ACK. The announced purposes of this organization are to promote white supremacy and to combat integration of races; however, the use of violence is disavowed.

A source advised on September 2, 1950, that the ACK was composed of groups formerly members of the Association of Georgia Klans (AGK), and although the ACK severed all connections with the AGK on November 14, 1949, the ideals, purposes and policies of the two organizations remained identical. The ACK became defunct after conviction and imprisonment of its highest official and other members in 1952.

The AGK has been designated by the Attorney General of the United States pursuant to Executive Order 10450.





Director, FBI

10/30/62

SAC, Little Rock (100-3396)

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

62-1521  
100-7340-2 p. 5  
100-90-999  
62-05-108  
80-557-23 p. 2  
80-337-24 p. 2

Enclosed herewith to the Bureau are the original and four copies of letterhead memorandum captioned [redacted]

Enclosed to Houston is one copy of this letterhead memorandum for information inasmuch as [redacted] address is listed as [redacted]. A copy of this letterhead memorandum has been furnished to U. S. Attorney, Little Rock; however, no copy is being furnished to INTC, Little Rock, since they are the source of the information.

The confidential source referred to by HUTCHINSON in the attached letterhead memorandum is [redacted]

For the information of the Bureau, the Arkansas Minutemen Association referred to in the attached letterhead memorandum is not an organization as such; however, it is another name utilized by the Pine Bluff, Arkansas, Klavern of the Association of Arkansas Klans of the Ku Klux Klan.

#### INFORMANTS

Identity of Informant

File Where Located

[redacted]

[redacted]

The sources utilized in the characterization of the Association of Arkansas Klans are as follows:

[redacted]

[redacted]

- 2 - Bureau (Enc. 5) (REGISTERED MAIL)
  - 1 - Houston (Enc. 1) (REGISTERED MAIL)
  - 1 - Little Rock
- RFMcF/ds  
(4)

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED

[redacted]

b6  
b7C

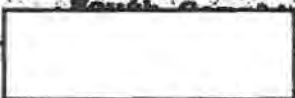
62-1521-100



LR 100-3386

b2

b7D



## Birch Society Sets Houston Hq.

The John Birch Society will incorporate in Texas and open offices here that will be headquarters for the entire South, "probably within the next two weeks," The Press learned today.

Phillip Blair Jones, Houston area coordinator, said C. O. Mann of Odessa, coordinator for this six-state region, will file incorporation papers in Austin within a few days.

### SOUTHERN REGION

Texas will become one of several states, including Massachusetts and California, in which the right-wing society is incorporated. Top society officers, headed by founder Robert Welch, will be named as incorporators.

The organized region will include all the Southern states, Oklahoma and New Mexico and will be the second region to be so centralized. Formerly, the South, like the rest of the country except the West Coast, operated under direct supervision of the Birch home office in Belmont, Mass.

### CLAIM FAST GROWTH

Local Birch leaders are searching for suitable offices in Houston for the regional headquarters. Mr. Jones said he hopes to be moving in within two weeks.

"We have had a fantastic spurt of growth, not only here but across the country," said Mr. Jones.

THE HOUSTON PRESS  
2/11/64  
Houston, Texas

42-1521-101

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 12 1964	
FBI-HOUSTON	

# Bircher Links Americans, Red Gains

BY PAUL HOUSTON

Chronicle Reporter

"Every inch of Communist conquest since 1933 is the direct responsibility of the American people," a constitutional lawyer and leader in the John Birch Society said here Tuesday night.

He is Clarence Manion, former dean of the Notre Dame college of law, who addressed 800 persons at the Americanism Forum in the Rice Hotel.



MANION

"Communism represents the negation of all the moral principles of international law for the past few centuries," he said. "When President Roosevelt recognized the Soviet government in 1933, it was a moment pregnant with evil."

## "Immoral Concept"

The result, he said, has been "a demoralization of the American people toward an immoral concept of peace."

"We have become a perverted people, impervious to the fact we are a part of the crime of blackmail, murder, slavery and sabotage the Communists have delivered to the world."

"When you associate with immoral people, you must compromise your moral principles," he said.

"We should withdraw recognition of Russia immediately. There is no legitimate Communist government."

Manion termed the world political conflict today "a battle between Americanism and communism."

He listed "the four great affirmations" of Americanism:

- God exists and we depend on him for life.
- Everyone has personal responsibility.
- There is constitutional government, which keeps the government limited in the interest of personal freedom, liberty and responsibility.
- Everyone has a right to own personal property and dispense with it as he pleases.

He said communism "aims to destroy all four principles."

Manion is a member of the executive council of the right wing John Birch Society. For eight years he has directed the "Manion Forum," a weekly radio and television program featuring interviews with conservative business and political figures.

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
3/25/64  
Houston, Texas  
HOfile: 62-1521\*

62-1521-102

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 31 1964	
FBI-HOUSTON	



## Birch Group To Operate In Houston

Chronicle Austin Bureau

Austin—The John Birch Society, Inc., has qualified "to conduct affairs" in Texas, with headquarters in Houston.

Secretary of State Crawford Martin's office Tuesday approved the right-wing political education organization's application for a certificate of authority to operate in Texas as a nonprofit group.

The certificate was mailed to Charles O. Mann of Odessa, who is listed as registered agent for the society. The business address is Suite G, 7603 Hillcroft Blvd., Houston.

62-1521-103

SEARCHED <i>a</i>	INDEXED <i>a</i>
SERIALIZED <i>a</i>	FILED <i>a</i>
MAR 2 1964	
FBI—HOUSTON	

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
3/25/64  
Houston, Texas  
HOfile: 62-1521\*



UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE  
FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

In Reply, Please Refer to  
File No.

SAN ANTONIO, TEXAS

March 30, 1964

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

"The Austin Statesman", Austin, Texas,  
March 27, 1964, contained the following article:

"BIRCH CHARTER GIVEN;  
TO OPEN OFFICE HERE

"The John Birch Society Friday held  
a Texas charter as a non-profit corporation,  
and will open state headquarters in Austin.

"Secretary of State Crawford Martin  
announced approval of the charter on  
application of Charles O. Mann of Odessa,  
who filed the statutory trust deposit of  
\$50 as registered agent of the new  
corporation.

"The corporate purpose was stated  
'to promote civil interest in national  
and international affairs by an educational  
program.'

"National headquarters of the  
John Birch Society are located in Belmont,  
Mass., home of its president and founder,  
the candy manufacturer Robert Welch.

"Membership activities of the society  
among Texans so far apparently have been

62-1521-104

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 2 1964	
FBI - HOUSTON	

## JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

carried on by representatives of the national headquarters. There was no indication in the filing of the charter papers of the extent of recruitment plans the Texas unit of the national body may undertake."

The following appeared in the "Austin American Statesman", Austin, Texas, on March 28, 1964:

### "BIRCH SOCIETY IS CHARTERED

"For what it's worth, the report comes in that the John Birch Society is now an officially chartered Texas non-profit educational corporation.

"A charter was granted by the state. The new corporation will set up shop in Houston to carry on its declared purpose of 'promoting civil interest in national and international affairs by an educational program.'"



F B I

Date: 3/30/64

Transmit the following in \_\_\_\_\_  
(Type in plain text or code)Via AIRTEL AIR MAIL  
(Priority or Method of Mailing)

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI  
FROM: SAC, SAN ANTONIO (100-9455) (P)  
SUBJECT: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

Enclosed for the Bureau are eight copies of letterhead memorandum setting forth information concerning the above captioned which appeared in Austin, Texas, newspapers on March 27, 1964, and March 28, 1964. Two copies each of the letterhead memorandum are being disseminated to the Secret Service, San Antonio, one to OSI, one ONI, 1 112th INTC and two copies for each of the Texas offices.

3 - Bureau (Enc. 8) (RM)  
2 - Dallas (Enc. 2) (RM)  
2 - Houston (Enc. 2) (RM)  
2 - El Paso (Enc. 2) (RM)  
2 - San Antonio  
GWHC/mjb  
(11)

b6  
b7C

62-1521-105  
SEARCHED 788 INDEXED 788  
SERIALIZED 788 FILED 788

Approved: \_\_\_\_\_  
Special Agent in Charge

Sent \_\_\_\_\_

# Birchers Step Up Local Recruiting

## Society's Members Pushing Campaign to Elect Goldwater

BY SAUL FRIEDMAN

Chronicle Reporter

Hoping to ride the crest of the campaign for Sen. Barry Goldwater, the John Birch Society in the Houston area is stepping up its drive for new members.

At the same time, the right-wing society's members are stepping up participation in the Goldwater campaign.

This is the word from the society's full-time coordinator here, Philip Blair Jones.

### Plans 70 Radio Ads

The society has scheduled 70 spot announcements on radio this week and next, calling for people to drop in at its recently opened Southwest headquarters at 7603 Hillcroft near Sharpstown.

One of the paid spot announcements says, in part: "The recent Republican convention kicked around the labels of 'moderates,' 'extremists' and the John Birch Society. Although no one sought to define these labels, the 'moderately' Republican and the 'moderately' American orators usually tried to link up 'extremists' and the Birch Society."

"Just what is an extremist? For that matter, just what is the John Birch Society? . . . Do you want to take the word of some political orators? Or would you like to find out for yourself?"

Another of the announcements says, in part: ". . . the 'extremely' Americans (at the Republican convention) saluted the society as a dynamic force for progress in American ideals."

### Sending Statement

In addition to the radio announcements, the society here is sending out 10,000 copies of a statement of the "beliefs and principles of the John Birch Society" as it was inserted in the Congressional Record by John H. Rousselot of California, June 12, 1962, when he was a U.S. representative.

Rousselot, defeated in his attempt at a second term, has

See BIRCHERS, Page 2

been the society's district governor for the six Western states. As part of the campaign to step up activities of the Birch Society, Rousselot has become national director of public relations.

Press releases will be issued on his orders from the society's office in Belmont, Mass., San Marino, Cal., and eventually Chicago and Houston.

### Queries on Membership

The "open-door" policy of the society, the Republican convention and the nomination of Sen. Goldwater have resulted in a flurry of inquiries about membership, Jones said.

No instructions on the part members are to play in the election campaign have come from the national headquarters in Belmont, Jones said.

None is expected, said Jones, emphasizing that the society takes no position as to parties or candidates. Society founder Robert Welch long has been a Goldwater supporter.

"The overwhelming majority of our members will be supporting Goldwater," he said, "but they will be doing so as individuals."

Members are experienced at organization, letter-writing and phone-calling, Jones said, and they will be working for Goldwater.

Through the national headquarters, the society is distributing throughout the nation thousands of copies of a new book, "None Dare Call It Treason," by John Stormer, a Missouri Republican.

### Book Cites "Treason"

It purports to show that treason exists in government, labor unions, the communications media, education and the churches.

Jones said an anonymous donor bought 75,000 copies for the society with the provision that they be given to graduating high school students. Hundreds were distributed in Houston.

Adelphi Books Inc., an outlet here for right-wing and Birch Society literature, is selling Goldwater sweatshirts, Goldwater calendars, a new book, "A Choice Not An Echo," by Mrs. Phyllis Schlafly, an Illinois Republican.

The store has ordered 13,500 copies of "A Texan Looks at Lyndon," an anti-Johnson book by J. Evetts Haley, a Canyon rancher.

### Warren Ouster Pushed

During the campaign the society's members will be asked to continue the group's continuing campaigns to impeach Supreme Court Chief Justice Earl Warren; get the United States out of the United Nations, and pass the "liberty amendments" abolishing income tax and prohibiting the government from competing with business.

"No matter what happens in November," Jones said, "the society is going to be around in December."

HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
7/22/64

62-1521-106

SERIALIZED FILED

JUL 23 1964

b6  
b7c



UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON (62-1521)

DATE: 11/9/64

FROM : SA [REDACTED]

SUBJECT: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING

b6  
b7C  
The following information which has come to the attention of this office incidental to other matters is being recorded herein for future reference and indexing purposes.

On 2/3/64, SA [REDACTED] observed a large display sign on Highway 288 approximately three miles south of Angleton, Texas, between Angleton and Lake Jackson. This was the usual sign frequently displayed by the John Birch Society and was worded as follows:

"Save our Republic.  
Impeach Earl Warren.  
Join the John Birch Society Now.  
Information: CY 7-4418 or  
P. O. Box 204, Lake Jackson"

On 2/3/64, [REDACTED] (conceal identity), advised that [REDACTED]

of [REDACTED] It is noted that [REDACTED] who was previously interviewed by SA's [REDACTED] in connection with another matter.

On 10/16/64, [REDACTED] advised that it had come to his attention that various pieces of "right-wing literature" had recently been distributed in Houston, Texas, bearing return addresses of Box 372, Houston, and Box 1064, Bellaire, Texas.

On 10/16/64, [REDACTED] furnished the following information on a confidential basis concerning the above [REDACTED]

ED:yk  
(1)

SEARCHED

INDEXED

62-1521-107



HO 62-1521

[REDACTED]

By letter dated  
7/20/64, [REDACTED] requested that [REDACTED] name be deleted from  
any association [REDACTED]

b6  
b7C

[REDACTED]  
[REDACTED] stated his  
business was "educational" and his residence was [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] would also be used  
by [REDACTED] for the purpose  
of [REDACTED]

## FLORIDA DOCUMENT DISOWNED BY WELCH

# Secret Birch 'Call to Arms'

By **LOWELL BRANDLE**  
Post Special Correspondent

**SAINT PETERSBURG, Fla.** There has been intense reaction in Saint Petersburg to the news that a John Birch Society leader distributed a "call to arms" at a secret chapter meeting in October.

The document, now disowned by Birch President Robert Welch, urges "patriots" to arm themselves and their children and to form into secret cells. It even specified which sizes of guns are best for men, women, older children and younger children.

It is not known and cannot be checked whether a similar document has been distributed at other Birch meetings

around the nation.

**WELCH SAID** the Birchers have never produced such a document. The Saint Petersburg Times, which first broke the story on Oct. 29, merely

said the Birch chapter leader was distributing the document — which appears to have been produced originally last spring by the Minuteman organization.

## Charged

Less than a year after the assassination of President Kennedy by an armed fanatic, this call to "patriots" says in part:

"If you are ever going to buy a gun, buy it now.

"The time may come that almost any gun in any caliber will be worth its weight in gold. Still, your life may depend on it, so why not get the best you can possibly afford?

"**WE ESPECIALLY** recommend the following: Adult males — 30-06 Garands, 7.62 NATO FN's, 30-06 bolt action Springfields and Enfields, high caliber sporting rifles as desired, 12 gauge double barrel, pump or semi-automatic shotguns; adult females —

Winchester Model 100 in .308 caliber, Remington Model 742 in .30-06 caliber or .30 caliber military carbines; older children — sporting rifles in 6-mm, .243, .270, and .222 calibers; younger children — semi-automatic .22 rifles."

Patriots are told in the message to stock up with ammunition, 300 rounds per gun, plus 200 or more for practice. "To purchase extra ammunition"

See **BIRCH** on Page 4

*Houston Post*  
11/12/64

62-1521-108

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED (u)	FILED (u)
NOV 25 1964	
FBI - HOUSTON	

b6  
b7C

## BIRCH ARMS CALL

Continued From Page 1  
now is the best investment you can make."

The document says this is a moment of supreme danger to patriots. Massive racial violence is almost inevitable, it says, and the federal government is weakening the nation militarily. It says that some Army units are being supplied with the wrong ammunition so "domestic Communists will become extremely bold and aggressive . . . particularly if Lyndon Johnson and Hubert Humphrey are elected."

**FURTHER, IT SAYS,** "If Goldwater is defeated . . . we can expect Americans by the tens of thousands will flock to patriotic organizations. The biggest danger comes from the fact that the Communists expect this to happen, and their sympathizers in our federal government may move quickly to pick up known patriots before they can get fully organized."

It says every patriot must act promptly to prepare and suggests these measures: "Avoid long-term investments that tie you to one area. For example, you can leave a rented house faster than one you own or are making payments on."

"Rid yourselves of other entangling obligations. Try to find a job that does not carry too much responsibility . . ."

"Live frugally and save every nickel. A modest savings in cash hidden at some place away from your usual residence might mean the difference between life and death."

**"AVOID THE KIND** of talk that will get you pegged as a 'tear monger' or a 'racist.' Learn to blend in with your surroundings and remain anonymous."

"Co-operate with other patriots to form a secret Minutemen team . . . Seek the advice of experienced members of purchase of unregistered guns and survival equip-

ment at the right price, as well as sources of information on underground warfare."

The Saint Petersburg Times commented editorially:

"In this call to arms the Birchers have stepped entirely over the line which might be called the limit of 'constitutional extremism.'"

**"THIS IS ANARCHY.** This is preparation for resort to force and violence. It is, in short, outright subversion."

Saint Petersburg's Mayor Herman Goldner, a Republican, has been seeking some constitutional means to stem the flood of hate literature sweeping this city from local and national sources. He said of the document distributed at the Birch Society meeting:

"I don't think the democratic process lets us sit back and allow people to incite armed violence."

"I think it is time those of us who believe in liberty — not just those of us in government — do something about it. I think we must protect society from these people."

**"I HAVE NO** argument with anyone who belongs to anything — the John Birch Society, the Ku Klux Klan, even the Communist Party — unless they try to force their ideas on me. I think that's a crime, and I think society should be able to protect itself from these people."

The Rev Lamar Clement, executive secretary of the Saint Petersburg Council of Churches, said the call to arms reflected in the Birch-distributed document "is unalterably opposed to the principles of American democracy and is a serious threat to the freedom and security which we as a country have enjoyed under a Democratic system."

"Not only is it un-American; it is clearly contrary to God's teaching to love and care for one's neighbor, and at base is a denial of faith in God and His purposes for the world."



## Area Birch Leader Says No 'Guns' Leaflets Here

The top leader of the John Birch Society in the Houston area said Saturday that no "get guns" leaflets have been distributed to any society members here—nor will any be.

"That's diametrically opposed to the aims of the society," Philip Blair Jones, the Birch Society area coordinator, said. "That's what the Huntley-Brinkley suit is all about."

**THE BIRCH** Society has libel suits totaling \$8 million pending in Fort Worth against the NBC news team of Chet Huntley and David Brinkley. The suits were filed over a broadcast linking the right-

wing society to illegal arms purchases.

Asked if call-to-arms pamphlets might have been passed out at Houston chapter meetings without his knowledge, Jones replied:

"We don't allow non-society literature to be distributed at our meetings—for this purpose, just to prevent this sort of thing."

**JONES SAID** such pamphlets may have been distributed in Saint Petersburg, Fla, by someone who infiltrated the society just to embarrass it.

"This must have been either a saboteur," Jones said, "or some kind of nut."

# Police Not Blocked In Joining Groups

## Runyan Cites Regulation In Reply to Birch Query

By PETE STAMBAUGH

A policeman has the right to his own thinking in deciding what, if any, organization he might want to join, Chief of Police R. T. Runyan said yesterday.

Runyan was asked his policy on the John Birch Society in connection with news stories in the last week saying that policemen in Los Angeles and Philadelphia have joined the controversial anti-Communist organization.

Runyan would not elaborate on whether he would favor or disapprove of members of his force becoming members of the society, or whether he personally approves of the organization.

Runyan said, in a prepared statement:

"The police officer has a right to his own thinking. I have no objection to his joining any organization as long as it does not interfere with his duties with the police division and does not violate the intent of Rule No. 425 of the police division rules and regulations.

Runyan made the statement when asked: "If a police officer walked into your office and said he was a member of the John Birch Society, or if a policeman walked into your office asking permission to join the society, what would you do?"

The rule which Runyan referred to is:

"Members shall not be a member or representative of any political or partisan convention, nor shall there be any political association within the division. They shall not become a member of any organization, association, or society which in any way divides their loyalty to the City of Corpus Christi, the State of Texas, or the United States of America."

### Society Claims

The John Birch Society has claimed that policemen have been joining the society in increased numbers recently. The society claims that policeman "can better educate themselves to the threat of communism."

Recently, in Philadelphia, Mayor James H. J. Tate said some policemen there were organizing Birch Society cells. He said society membership limits "the capabilities of the police officers involved; they can't be useful in their assignments" one newspaper quoted him as saying.

In a city in California, the city manager said 10 to 20 policemen many of them Birch members, were harassing the police chief, trying to undermine his authority.

THE CORPUS CHRISTI CALLER  
11/18/64  
Corpus Christi, Texas

62-1527-109

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED

NOV 25 1964

FBI HOUSTON

b6  
b7c

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON

DATE: 3/5/65

FROM : SA [REDACTED]

SUBJECT: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
Misc. Info.

b6  
b7C

On 3/4/65, an anonymous caller telephonically advised the  
K & L Productions, 3400 Montrose, Suite 308, Houston, Texas,

[REDACTED] is printing material for the  
JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY. This material is allegedly for distribution  
in China. The caller advised up till now the K & L Productions  
has been a small "boiler room" type operation.  
This information is furnished in event later inquiries are  
received.

(1)  
WJS

62-1521-110  
SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED  
MAR 5 1965

b6  
b7C



Buy U.S. Savings Bonds Regularly on the Payroll Savings Plan



Just Like in Houston

## Birchers in Odessa Snub Commie, Too

Odessa, Texas (UPI)—Georgi, the card-carrying Russian Communist) Kuznetsov was still looking for a card-carrying John Birch Society leader today.

His Texas visit has been spectacularly unsuccessful in this respect.

"I wouldn't care to talk to him under any circumstances," said Charles O. (Buck) Mann, Odessa area coordinator for the Birch Society.

It was the same story last week in Houston.

"After five years of saying we should not co-exist with the Russians how could I have dinner with one?" Philip Blair Jones, the Birch leader in Houston, said.

Monday in Odessa Georgi had trouble finding anyone who would talk with him.

He is likely a hard-core communist," Mann said defensively.

"I just want to see what a Birch leader look like," the

thickly accented Russian newspaperman pleaded.

He got to meet a member of the communist-hating group in Houston, Mrs. Eloise Liles, last week. She said she was behind in her dues.

He also got a bunch of anti-communist literature. It said the communists controlled the U.S. Supreme Court and the United Nations.

"I only wish it were so," Georgi told newsmen.

The 37-year-old correspondent for "Trud" has been in America for four years but had not been allowed to travel to Texas until recently.

He was curious.

"After all I have met in America; Democrats, Republicans, labor leaders Hollywood actors," Georgi said.

He said he didn't come to Texas to bait Birch members.

"I just cannot see why a John Birch Society member would be afraid to talk to me."

CALLED RED PLAN



UPI Telephoto

Robert Welch, founder of the John Birch Society, says the civil rights movement is part of a Communist plan to drive a wedge between Americans and establish "a Negro Soviet republic in the southeastern United States." He made the charge in a speech in Los Angeles.

*John Birch Society*

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE  
3/9/65  
Houston, Texas

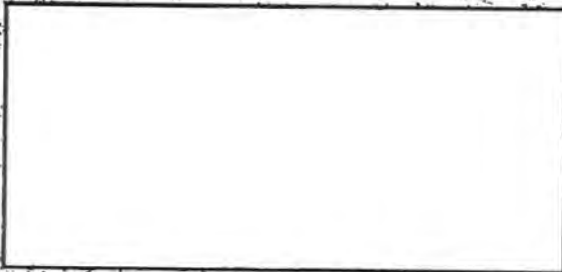
62-1521-111

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 10 1965	
FBI - HOUSTON	

68

March 25, 1965

b6  
b7C



Your letter of March 20th has been received,  
and I want to take this opportunity to thank you for making this  
information available to me. You may be assured that an  
appropriate record of the material furnished will be made in  
our files.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

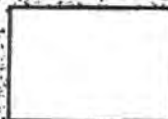
- ① - Houston - Enclosure
- 1 - New York - Enclosure

62-1521-113

SMB

or

b6  
b7C



*Jim the to sent down*  
18



## Chapters Reported in 5 High Schools

# Birchers Gain Strength in Houston Area

By GENE GOLTZ  
Post Reporter

The John Birch Society in the Houston area has been increasing steadily in membership since the November election, reports indicate.

This apparently is in line with national membership, which is said to be increasing somewhat as a whale eats plankton — in economic gulps and uncounted numbers.

**THE SOCIETY** zealously keeps its membership rolls secret and will not divulge the number of members in any given area.

However, Phillip Blair Jones, the staff co-ordinator for the Houston area, said:

"Our growth since November has been more substantial in Houston than in any other period in history."

Jones also revealed that the society now has teen-age chapters in five high schools in the Houston area. Four of the schools are in the Houston-Independent School District; one is in Spring Branch.

**THE HIGH SCHOOLS** where youth chapters are active are Bellairé, Jones, and Lee in the Houston District, and Spring Branch Memorial, Jones said.

It should be understood that these teen age chapters are not in any way sanctioned by the schools. Indeed, principals and spokesmen in all five schools said they did not know of any such chapters and that the schools do not condone any outside organizations, "either left or right wing."

Although the Birch Society does not open its membership rolls, various other groups which keep tabs on the right-wing organization for one reason or another, are engaged in a constant guessing game.

**ONE SUCH** group is the Anti-Defamation League of B'Nai B'rith. Ted Freedman, who heads its Houston Chapter, estimates that the Birch Society membership in Harris County has grown from 5,000 before the presidential election in November to 6,500.

The youthful Birchers number between 100 and 150, he estimates.

Teen-agers pay dues of \$1 a month, the same as by adult women members. Men pay \$24 a year, or \$2 a month. By reading monthly bulletins written by the society's founder, Robert Welch, and perusing the society's financial

statements, outsiders believe they can compute fairly accurately the total membership.

**THE GROWTH OF** the society after the defeat of Barry Goldwater, champion of the right wing, has surprised many observers who expected it to lie down and play dead.

The society adopted the slogan, "NOW will you join the John Birch Society?"

The Wall Street Journal said the society's reasoning was that conservatives who had counted on Sen. Goldwater to save the nation from Communism might now be disgusted enough with orthodox politics to enter a group that believes the U. S. already is 70 per cent Communist dominated, and fears a total Communist takeover by 1975, and that resorts to what its foes consider extremist tactics to reverse the trend.

**ROBERT D. LOVE**, a member of the Birch 25-man advisory council, was reported as saying the society has about 100,000 members. The national Anti-Defamation League sets the figure at about 75,000.

Welch, in a pamphlet en-

titled "Looking Ahead," asks, a 1966 recruiting drive that would make possible a budget of \$1 million a month and that would double the 1965 membership.

In the Houston area, Jones said he really has no idea of the number of members because all the lists are kept at national headquarters in Belmont, Mass.

**A NEW AREA** of expansion for the Birchers is the Parent-Teacher Associations. Mrs. Jennell Moorhead, president of the National Congress of Parents and Teachers, warned P-TA groups recently the Birch society is among "extremist" groups that she charged are trying to infiltrate local P-TAs.

Welch was quoted in a Birch Society bulletin as urging members to "join your local

THE HOUSTON POST  
4/4/65

b6  
b7c

62-1527-114

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 4 1965	
FBI-HOUSTON	

-1- Info-



P-TA . . . and go to work to take it over."

However, in the five Houston-area schools where youthful Birchers are organized, there is no evidence that any attempt has been made by the society to join or "take over" any P-TA chapters.

MRS JOE LESTER, president of the Jones High School P-TA, said, "I have not received any literature from the John Birch Society. I never heard anybody mention it. I don't know of any P-TA Birchers."

Other P-TA leaders in the Houston area agreed.

Meanwhile, Welch, in his March bulletin to all members, stressed the importance of growth and added a new project to the society's aims: Save the Panama Canal.

Welch, who will visit Hous-

ton on May 13 and speak at the Music Hall on "A Touch of Sanity," had this to say about the Panama Canal project "(It is) One that has been badly needed ever since Alger Hiss laid the plans for turning over our Panama Canal to some Communist-run international agency 20 years ago."

THE SOCIETY is still trying to impeach Chief Justice Earl Warren, get the U. S. out of the UN and abolish the income tax, among other projects.

The Birch Society is also ordered by Welch to form local committees to support the police force.

Freedman, of the Anti-Defamation League, said:

"Houston has been unusually free of the activities of

April 9, 1965

Chief  
United States Secret Service  
Department of the Treasury  
Washington, D. C. 20220

b6  
b7C

Re: 

Dear Sir:

The information furnished herewith concerns an individual who is believed to be covered by the agreement between the FBI and Secret Service concerning Presidential protection, and to fall within the category or categories checked.

1. ☒ Has attempted or threatened bodily harm to any government official or employee, including foreign government officials residing in or planning an imminent visit to the U. S., because of his official status.
2. ☐ Has attempted or threatened to redress a grievance against any public official by other than legal means.
3. ☐ Because of background is potentially dangerous; or has been identified as member or participant in communist movement; or has been under active investigation as member of other group or organization inimical to U. S.
4. ☐ U. S. citizens or residents who defect from the U. S. to countries in the Soviet or Chinese Communist blocs and return.
5. ☐ Subversives, ultrarightists, racists and fascists who meet one or more of the following criteria:
  - (a) ☐ Evidence of emotional instability (including unstable residence and employment record) or irrational or suicidal behavior;
  - (b) ☐ Expressions of strong or violent anti-U. S. sentiment;
  - (c) ☐ Prior acts (including arrests or convictions) or conduct or statements indicating a propensity for violence and antipathy toward good order and government.
6. ☐ Individuals involved in illegal bombing or illegal bomb-making.

Photograph ☐ has been furnished ☐ enclosed ☒ is not available  
☐ may be available through \_\_\_\_\_

2 - Bureau  
 1 - Secret Service, Houston  
 (2) - Houston  
     (1 - 62-1521)  
     (1 - 80-284)  
 JSW/mm  
 (5) ~~mm~~  
 1 - Special Agent in Charge (Enclosure(s))  
 U. S. Secret Service, Houston, Texas  
 (Encl. 1 memorandum)

Very truly yours,

*J. Edgar Hoover*  
 John Edgar Hoover  
 Director

Searched \_\_\_\_\_  
 Serialized     
 Indexed     
 Filed   

Enclosure(s)

(Upon removal of classified enclosures, if any, this transmittal form  
 becomes UNCLASSIFIED.)

62-1521-116

# Robert Welch Asks Conservative Votes

By JIM MALONEY  
Post Reporter

The chance of additional Republicans being elected to Congress next year "depends on the progress we make," the founder of the John Birch Society said here Thursday night.

"Our interest, though, is in getting conservatives elected," Robert Welch said.

**THE SITUATION** in South Viet Nam "is as phony as a \$9 bill," he said.

Welch said one of the leading heroes of the Communist Party in this country is Chief Justice Earl Warren.

"For such a man, a hero of the Communists, to head a commission to investigate the murder of a President of the United States is so absurd that it borders on insanity," the former candy manufacturer from Belmont, Mass. said.

Welch was addressing about 700 persons in the Music Hall. He was greeted by a standing ovation as he entered and as he began to speak on "A Touch of Sanity."

**HE CAME** on stage with Philip Blair Jones, Houston area co-ordinator for the society.

As signs of things Welch said "border on insanity," he cited this country's aid to Poland, which ends up in Communist China, he said.

Also, "bubble gum" that is given to Turkey, murders of this country's citizens in the Congo and the situation in South Viet Nam.

Welch said there are more illegal aliens in this country now than there are members in all of the armed forces because of permitted violations of the immigration laws.

**SINCE 1928**, Communists have been working in this country to create the unrest that has brought on many of the Civil Rights movements, he said.

"In 1960, the man who is now President ran for two offices and on issues that were diametrically opposed in the two campaigns. The press that ignored this and the public that swallowed it could only be in a world that has practically gone crazy," Welch said.

"If you don't think that you are living in a big insane asylum, it is because you have become so use to the manifestations of this insanity that you can't recognize it any more," he said.

**THE PURPOSE** of the society, "made up of the best body of men and women in the world," is to enlighten and educate the public in the hope of saving the country from Communism," Welch said.

"I believe we will win the battle," he said.



**JONES, LEFT, AND WELCH AT MUSIC HALL**  
Birch Founder Cited Signs of Insanity

THE HOUSTON POST  
5/14/65  
Houston, Texas

62-1521 - 118

SEARCHED <i>mg</i>	INDEXED <i>mg</i>
SERIALIZED <i>mg</i>	FILED <i>mg</i>
MAY 1 1965	
HOUSTON 1	

b6  
b7C



SAC, HOUSTON [redacted]

6/18/65

SA [redacted]

[redacted] (PROB)

On 5/11/65, [redacted] (PROB) furnished the following information:

Informant recently received in the mail in an envelop postmarked at [redacted] two sheets of paper from the "Minutemen" consisting of an order blank for materials and supplies and a form captioned "Members Monthly Report for April." Copies of the above forms are being filed with the copy of this memorandum designated for the "Minutemen" file.

Informant noted the monthly dues for membership in the Minutemen required payments of \$2.00. He stated he was also sending in an order for a booklet captioned "Silencer Bulletin" which was listed at \$2.00. Informant felt he should order some of the listed material in order to express his interest in this organization.

Informant stated he had also received in the mail from the John Birch Society, 7603 Hillcroft Boulevard, Suite G, an invitation to a speech to be delivered at the Music Hall on 5/13/65 by ROBERT WELCH, head of the John Birch Society. This speech was to be entitled "A Touch of Sanity."

Informant noted that in addition to the other material mentioned above, he had also received in the mail a copy of the April, 1965, issue of "Minutemen News" and a copy of "On Target" dated 4/1/65.

Informant reported he had received a telephone call on 5/9/65 from a [redacted] who gave the telephone

3-Houston

(1)

(1) -62-1802

(Minutemen)

(1) -62-1521

(John Birch Society)

ED:mb

(3)

62-1521-119

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUN 18 1965	
FBI - HOUSTON	

[redacted] Ear

[redacted]  
number [redacted] Informant had recently had a letter

[redacted] expressed extremely violent anti-Negro opinions which informant considered the strongest talk he had every heard from a woman.

b2  
b7D  
b6  
b7C  
On 5/10/65, [redacted] again called and told informant he was considered "safe."

[redacted] to be held at [redacted]. She stated this would be a "work shop meeting" to discuss plans for the appearances in Houston of [redacted] of the John Birch Society.

[redacted] asked informant who he knew in [redacted] and he mentioned to her the name of [redacted]. [redacted] indicated she knew [redacted].

[redacted] also mentioned that there would be a discussion at this meeting of a plan to have [redacted].

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

INCORPORATED

Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

Local Address:

7603 HILLCROFT BOULEVARD, SUITE G

HOUSTON, TEXAS 77036

Phone: GY 4-9691

April 24, 1965

Dear American,

The enclosed flyer speaks of a coming session at Music Hall that you might be interested in. Political and moral schizophrenia are dissipating our heritage. This will be the subject of Mr. Welch's timely and penetrating remarks. Tickets will be available at the Music Hall the evening of the address. Please consider this a personal invitation to the meeting.

Cordially,

*Philip Blair Jones*

PHILIP BLAIR JONES

Coordinator



THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

Local Address:  
7603 Hillcroft Blvd., Suite G  
Houston, Texas 77036  
GY 4-9691, Area Code 713

The John Birch Society was founded in December, 1958. Since that time it has become one of the most talked-about movements in our country. You, and tens of thousands of other Americans, have chosen to learn the truth about The John Birch Society. We think you will find, as others have, that the Society is surprisingly different from what you might have heard through other sources.

We hope you are sufficiently interested in the Society to obtain the Special Packet. It contains The Blue Book, The Life of John Birch and additional significant materials, including sample copies of the monthly bulletin of the Society and American Opinion magazine. The packet has a total retail value of seven dollars.

The Blue Book deserves special mention, for it provides a detailed discussion of the background, purposes, structure, and mechanics of the Society. It is, in fact, the full presentation of the Society as it was given by Mr. Welch at the founding meeting in December, 1958.

The Introductory Packet includes an assortment of pamphlets which pertains to the program of the Society. Also included is a copy of "The California Report" on The John Birch Society. The report of the California Senate Factfinding Subcommittee on Un-American Activities provides the reader with a great deal of information about the Society.

We consider The Blue Book minimum reading for anyone who really wishes to understand the nature and progress of the communist threat to our Republic, and to learn the purposes and program of the Society. You may obtain The Blue Book from this office.

The order blank below will help you with your order for The Blue Book or for the packets mentioned above.

Gentlemen:

Enclosed is my check (or money order) in the amount of \_\_\_\_\_  
Please send the items I have indicated.

62-1521-120

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
SEP 1 1965	
FBI-HOUSTON	

\_\_\_\_\_

b6  
b7C

\_\_\_\_\_ Special Packet (\$5.10, incl. Sales Tax)

\_\_\_\_\_ The Blue Book of The John Birch Society (\$2.04, incl. Sales Tax)

\_\_\_\_\_ Introductory Packet (\$1.02, incl. Sales Tax)

Send them to: \_\_\_\_\_

SAC, HOUSTON

8/30/65

SAC, SAN ANTONIO (100-9455) (C)

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING

On August 23, 1965, [redacted]

[redacted] telephone [redacted] who is  
in the [redacted] and who is employed at [redacted]

[redacted] telephone extension [redacted] and who requested his  
identity be protected, appeared at the San Antonio office of the  
FBI and furnished the following information:

[redacted]  
[redacted] who resides at [redacted] who resides at [redacted]

[redacted] who also works in the [redacted]

On the evening of 8/20/65, after [redacted] and the  
three other [redacted] left work and after [redacted] was  
delivered to his residence, [redacted] found several pamphlets that  
[redacted] had left in the car. Among the various pamphlets were items  
dealing with the John Birch Society.

One of the items, an Electrostat of which is  
enclosed for Houston, reflects local address as 7603 Hillcroft  
Boulevard, Houston, Texas.

For the information of Houston, pertinent informa-  
tion concerning this has been furnished 10th District, OSI.

This is for the information of Houston. No  
further action is being taken by San Antonio.

2-Houston (Enc. 1) (RM)  
1-San Antonio

BED/dnb  
(3)

62-1521-121

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
SEP 1 1965	
FBI-HOUSTON	



SAC, HOUSTON (157-700) (C)

3/23/66

SA [REDACTED]

b6

b7C

POSSIBLE KU KLUX KLAN  
MEETINGS AT 5739 CREEKBEND,  
HOUSTON, TEXAS  
RM (KLAN)

Re: San Antonio letter to Houston dated 3/2/66.

On 3/7/66, the 1965 Houston Crisis Cross Directory  
reflects that [REDACTED] resides at [REDACTED]

b6

b7C

b7D

On 3/7/66, [REDACTED]  
[REDACTED] advised that he feels the suspicions of [REDACTED]  
[REDACTED] were not completely sound and  
possibly she should not have bothered the FBI with the  
information she furnished concerning [REDACTED] who resides  
at [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] advised that practically every week-  
end the [REDACTED] have numerous house guests at their home  
and meetings during the week. He stated, however, that  
he does not feel that these are Ku Klux Klan meetings,  
in fact, he knows [REDACTED] to be an active Republican worker  
and possibly a member of the John Birch Society. He  
stated during past elections, [REDACTED] has come to his house  
soliciting his vote for various Republican candidates.

[REDACTED] restated that he feels these are  
political meetings possibly of the Republican Party or the  
John Birch Society and have nothing to do with the Ku  
Klux Klan.

Houston indices reflect the name of [REDACTED] is  
indexed to Houston File 62-1521, serial 107, which file

2-Houston -

(1 - 157-700)  
(1 - 62-1521)

WJS:mb

(2)

62-1521-122  
SEARCHED

SERIALIZED

b6

b7C



HO 137-700

b6  
b7C is entitled "JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY, INFORMATION CONCERNING."  
[redacted] name came to light during the investigation to  
determine the sender of P. O. Box 1064, Bellaire, Texas,  
and which was later identified with John Birch Society  
activities.

In view of the above, it is recommended this case  
be closed without further investigation.

SAC, DALLAS

3/25/66

SAC, ATLANTA (100-5857)(C)

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING

b6  
b7C  
b7D

On 3/25/66

[redacted] furnished SA [redacted]

[redacted] with two reports received from an ADL informant.  
One report concerns the activity of captioned group in Dallas,  
and one concerns Houston.

Enclosed herewith for Dallas is the ADL report  
concerning the John Birch Society in Dallas. Enclosed for  
Houston is the ADL report concerning John Birch Society  
activity in Houston.

2 - Dallas (Enc. 1) (RM)  
2 - Houston (Enc. 1) (RM)  
2 - Atlanta  
CEC/caw  
(6)

62-1521-124

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1966	
HOUSTON	

[redacted]

b6  
b7C



THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
HOUSTON, TEXAS

Dallas JBS headquarters maintained that the bulk of Birch strength and the richest source of financial support was in West Texas. If that is so, the office in Houston does not reflect the glowing, vital picture. The atmosphere is mausoleum-like in the tiny bookstore and office. The Coordinator's office is spotlessly clean; the desk highly polished, without a single paper to mar the finish. The desk drawers are equally empty. Along the walls are framed maps depicting the advancing stages of Communism. Behind the chair is a photograph of Robert Welch.

b6  
b7C

C  
O  
P  
Y  
The Coordinator, [redacted] divides his time between Birch functions and church affairs. As such, he is seldom in the office, preferring to work at home. He spent less than 10 minutes at the headquarters when I was there, which, according to the secretary, is usual. [redacted] was married a short time ago to [redacted] is more interested in intellectual banter than Birch dogma. Impeccable in manner, immaculate in dress, somewhat prissy and effeminate in conversation [redacted] is the antithesis of the hard-boiled, free-wheeling Birch fieldman.

The Bookstore has had little business since December. The weekly income from book sales is roughly \$15.00; not enough to meet expenses. However, an extensive mailing list to Birch members and sympathizers in a four-state area has brought more business to the bookstore than its counterpart in Dallas. These are 3 X 5 cards with mailing stickers pasted right on them and filed. Two cards, which we picked as samples, show the names of [redacted]

(The original of the cards are being sent to [redacted] There was no objectionable literature in either of the Birch bookstores.

The volunteer [redacted] joined the Society in 1960. She is presently [redacted] (Refer to previous on Chapter No. 408.) She is assisted by a number of other volunteer ladies. She, more than [redacted] operates the office and maintains the enthusiasm and drive of local members. She is a chatterbox with a loud laugh and a pronounced sense of humor, and is the live wire of the operation.

An attempt is being made to sponsor a Birch radio program in Houston also. The man who is lining up support and offering to finance the operation is [redacted] He is a businessman, and wants to maintain secrecy as to his Birch connections.

b6  
b7B

A man named [redacted] who is planning to run for [redacted] has contacted one of the Dallas Coordinators of the JBS and asked for "Birch support". This information was given to Mrs.

(Continued)

62-1521-12

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1966	
FBI - HOUSTON	



[redacted] who, in turn, called attorneys [redacted]  
[redacted] (phonetic spelling), both Birch members. She asked them  
to canvass their acquaintances in the legal profession for  
possible support of [redacted]

b6  
b7C

We were advised that the new Birch introduction film, produced by  
the Public Relations Department of the JBS, has proved to be a  
total dud. The film has proved unsatisfactory at meetings -- it  
is too long and boring. Audiences have sometimes walked out after  
the first two hours. [redacted] is now faced with the necessity  
of throwing it away and admitting the failure of the investment.

C  
O  
P  
Y

## Birch Society Membership Gains Claimed

The John Birch Society has doubled its membership in the past two years, to about 100,000, and Texas has more Birchers than any other state except California, two regional managers of public relations for the society said here today.

The two, Tom Davis of New York, Eastern regional manager, and Rex Westerfield of Dallas, the Southwestern regional manager, held a press conference in the Rice Hotel.

Davis will address a public meeting in the Crystal Ballroom of the Rice Hotel at 8 tonight to attack the Anti-Defamation League of the B'Nai B'rith as a "gestapo-type organization" seeking to "smear anyone who dares to oppose its philosophies and goals."

Davis said the society definitely is not anti-Semitic.

Neither Davis nor Westerfield would disclose the membership figures for Harris County or Texas.

Davis said the membership is about half and half Republican and Democratic with a slight edge of Republicans. He said its members were about 60 percent Protestants, 40 percent Catholics, with about 1000 Jewish members and a few Negroes.

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE

8/8/66

HOUSTON, TEXAS

62-1521-125

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED MB	FILED N
AUG 10 1966	
FBI - HOUSTON	

b6  
b7C

copy in  
80-424  
24/W



# Bircher Says Jewish Group Spreads Hate

A high John Birch Society official said in Houston Monday that the Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith aids the thing it purports to fight—anti-Semitism.

Thomas J. Davis, eastern regional manager of public relations for the society, spoke to about 150 persons at the Rice Hotel Monday night. He held a press conference Monday morning.

"The Anti-Defamation League is guilty of professionally promoting bigotry, hatred, and anti-Semitism for profit," Davis said in the Monday night speech.

HE SAID the John Birch Society will "lay open to public view the whole campaign" of the Anti-Defamation League, which "has declared war on the John Birch Society."

"The John Birch Society has in its membership, and welcomes, Catholics, Protestants, Jews, Negroes, Puerto Ricans and Indians," he said.

"We draw a sharp distinction between the Anti-Defamation League and its parent body, B'nai B'rith, which is a respectable organization throughout the country and all over the world," he said.

THE ANTI-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith was founded in 1913. Its charter cites its immediate objective as stopping defamation of Jews, and its long range objective as securing justice and fair treatment of all citizens alike.

He said that it was still very much a part of, and backed by, the B'nai B'rith.

Davis, speaking at a press conference earlier Monday, said he had no knowledge of "control" of the Harris County Republican Committee by John Birch Society members.

ROWLAND EVANS and Robert Novak, nationally syndicated newspaper columnists, reported last week that the society had recently gained control of the county's Republican organization.

"Nationally," Davis said, "the society is split about 50-50 in party affiliation, with perhaps a slight edge going to the Republican party."

Davis described the "average" society member as being in the upper-middle income bracket with at least two years of college. He said, however, that members span the entire spectrum in background, education, wealth, religion and race. Davis said that about 60 per cent of the members were Protestant and slightly less than 40 per cent were Catholic.

"THERE ARE about 1,000 Jewish members in the society," Davis said. He said the society now has about 100,000 members.

The society's Southwest regional office is in Dallas—not in Houston as reported by Evans and Novak. The Houston office, at 7603 Hillcroft, is a local administrative office, Davis said.

It has headquarters in New York City and 28 regional offices, one of which is in Houston.

Bernard Friedburg, director of the Houston office, said his group has "a continuing program against extremist movements in this country."

"The radical right is just as dangerous as the radical left in the U. S. today," he said.

THE ANTI-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith needs no defense," he said. "It has been praised by the last four Presidents for combatting bigotry, prejudice and discrimination, and by Federal Bureau of Investigation Director J. Edgar Hoover for 'effective anti-Communist work.'"

62-1521-126

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
AUG 10 1966	
FBI - HOUSTON	

b6  
b7C

THE HOUSTON POST  
8/9/66  
HOUSTON, TEXAS



[Redacted]  
August 24, 1966

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover, Director  
Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington 25, D. C.

Dear Mr. Hoover:

I would very much like to have your opinion of the organization and activities of the John Birch Society. After reading much of their literature, I am wondering whether I have actually gotten a true picture of the Society. It appears to me to be exactly what we need in the face of the present Communist threat.

My main question to you is whether, in your opinion, the Society is a competent organization as it represents itself to be. Very little good publicity has appeared in the press about the organization and this is what concerns me. It seems to have a reputation of being an organization of the radical and dangerous right wing.

I do hope that I am not out of order in asking you to give me some concrete evidence that it is an organization that is as educational and effective as it claims to be.

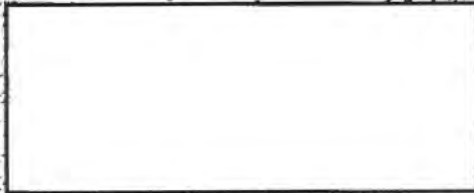
Thank you very much, and Godspeed in your work.

Very sincerely yours,  
[Redacted]

62-1521-127

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
SEP 1 1966	
FBI - HOUSTON	

August 31, 1966



b6  
b7C

Your letter of August 24th has been received, and I want to thank you for the kind sentiments you expressed regarding my work.

In response to your inquiry, it is not possible for me to furnish the data you requested. The FBI has not investigated the John Birch Society.

Further, this Bureau is strictly an investigative agency of the Federal Government and, as such, neither makes evaluations nor draws conclusions as to the character or integrity of any organization, publication, or individual.

Sincerely yours,

~~J. Edgar Hoover~~

① - Houston - Enclosure *Th*

62-1521-128

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
SEP 1 1966	
FBI - HOUSTON	

Cover Sheet for Informant Report or Material  
FD-306 (3-21-58)

Date received 9/24, 26/66	Received from (name or symbol number) [redacted] (PROB)	Received by 9/24/66 - SAS [redacted] 9/26/66 - SA [redacted]
------------------------------	--	---

Method of delivery (check appropriate blocks)

☒ in person ☐ by telephone ☐ by mail ☒ orally ☐ recording device ☐ written by informant

If orally furnished and reduced to writing by Agent:

Date  
Dictated 10/18/66 to [redacted]  
Transcribed 10/18/66  
Authenticated by Informant NA

Date of Report

9/24, 26/66  
Date(s) of activity

b2  
b7D  
b6  
b7C

Brief description of activity or material

Travel of [redacted]  
to Alabama 9/18-21/66. Meetings of  
"conservative" leaders, Houston.

File where original is located if not attached

Remarks:

INFORMATION HEREIN SHOULD BE PARAPHRASED IF USED  
IN COMMUNICATION BEING DISSEMINATED.

- 2 - Birmingham (105-722-UKA) (RM)
- 2 - Dallas (RM)
- (1 - 157-123-UKA)
- (1 - [redacted])
- 1 - Jackson (157-UKA) (RM)
- 1 - Little Rock (157-UKA) (RM)

18-Houston

- (1 - [redacted])
- (1 - 157-236-UKA)
- (1 - 157-630-KLAN #3. UKA)
- (1 - [redacted])
- (1 - [redacted])
- (1 - [redacted])
- (1 - [redacted])
- (1 - [redacted])
- (1 - [redacted])
- (1 - 62-1802-MINUTEMEN)
- (1 - 157-503-CITIZENS COUNCIL)
- (1 - 157-760-KLAN # 2. UKA)
- (1 - [redacted])

b2  
b7D

b6  
b7C

(1 - [redacted])  
(1 - 62-1521-JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY)

ED:mb  
(24)

62-1521-129

Block Stamp

SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED

OCT 19 1966  
FBI - HOUSTON



[redacted]  
b2  
b7D

Houston, Texas  
September 24, 1966

The following information was obtained during recent conversations with [redacted]  
[redacted]

On approximately September 16, 1966, [redacted] indicated he got a letter from [redacted] who asked [redacted] to come to Tuscaloosa, Alabama, and bring available records of the UKA in Texas.

b6  
b7C  
b7D

On September 17, 1966, [redacted] made a trip to Dallas, apparently in [redacted]. In Dallas, they talked with UKA members and distributed copies of the UKA newspaper, The Fiery Cross. [redacted] indicated the Dallas members were attempting to obtain land on which to hold a Klan rally sometime in the future. [redacted] indicated [redacted] was due in Arkansas on approximately October 23, 1966, and [redacted] would try to come to Texas after that.

On Sunday, [redacted] left Dallas in the afternoon and drove to [redacted] where they talked to [redacted]. After talking briefly with [redacted]  
[redacted]

[redacted] was heard to state [redacted] was out of town on [redacted] went to [redacted]  
[redacted]

On [redacted] saw [redacted] and discussed the Texas situation. [redacted] pointed out in order to organize a Realm properly the state is supposed to have ten chartered klaverns but Texas

b2  
b7D

[redacted]  
only had five chartered klaverns. [redacted] went over the few books which [redacted] and noted that Texas had [redacted]

There were two or three Klan members present from Mississippi, one being from [redacted]. There was some mention of the fact the UKA was apparently having trouble in Mississippi. The Mississippi Klansmen apparently held a conference with [redacted]

[redacted] arranged with [redacted] to attend a meeting on the evening of [redacted] of Klavern [redacted] took [redacted] to this meeting in order that they could see how a well organized klavern operated. [redacted] indicated this klavern was chartered in 1961. [redacted] stated there were about [redacted] people present at this meeting.

b2  
b7D  
b6  
b7C

[redacted] indicated they left [redacted] about midnight on Tuesday, [redacted] and arrived in Beaumont at about 9:00 a.m. on [redacted]. [redacted] remarked he went to bed immediately and told his wife not to wake him up for anything. [redacted] indicated he was behind in his work and needed some rest before trying to catch up.

According to [redacted] instructed him to try and work on the membership in Texas and get enough members to have ten regular chartered klaverns. There was no big meeting with leaders from other states. [redacted] mentioned [redacted] but he appeared to be confident and engaged in no detailed discussion.

It was learned that [redacted]  
[redacted]  
after a Klan meeting in Houston on [redacted]  
[redacted] of Houston also called [redacted]. These men

b2  
b7D

[redacted]  
[redacted] reported that [redacted] went to the meeting on [redacted]  
[redacted] and had been drinking. They stated [redacted]  
caused so much disruption and argument that [redacted]  
resigned from the Klan and walked out accompanied by two  
or three other members. [redacted] was very upset over this  
situation and claims [redacted] was a trouble maker and  
agitator.

After the above reports came in [redacted]  
wrote [redacted] a letter on approximately [redacted]  
[redacted] and told [redacted] was being suspended from the  
Klan for being drunk and using abusive language at a  
meeting. [redacted] would have an oppor-  
tunity for a hearing at a later date.

b2  
b7D  
b6  
b7C

[redacted] also remarked that while he was in Alabama  
he discussed with [redacted] the situation of [redacted]  
[redacted] who was identified  
as a Klan informant. [redacted] discussed the matter  
briefly but did not show any particular interest and issued  
no instructions.

[redacted] has quit the Klan and no successor  
has been appointed to replace him [redacted]



b2  
b7D

Houston, Texas  
September 26, 1966

It was learned a meeting was held in Houston on approximately [redacted] in an effort to form an overall "conservative" organization including representatives of various conservative groups. The organizer of this meeting was (First Name Unknown) [redacted] along with [redacted]

[redacted] was invited and he in turn called [redacted] who attended along with [redacted]. It was originally announced there would be two representatives of the various "conservative" organizations such as the United Klans, "Minutemen", White Citizens Council, John Birch Society, and the Patriotic Party. All together, there were about twenty people at this first meeting and the Klan was represented by [redacted].

b6  
b7C  
b7D

Meetings of the above group are to be held at [redacted] in a second floor office. They are held at 7:30 p.m.

On [redacted] indicated a second meeting of the above group had been held on Monday, [redacted] and a third meeting was to be held on [redacted]. [redacted] indicated on [redacted] this group had elected a "security man". [redacted] indicated on a later date that he was now out of the Klan for good and did not expect to resume Klan membership.

One of the leaders of the "Minutemen" at the above meeting was believed to be [redacted] not further identified.

The meeting of the above group on [redacted] was very non-conclusive and there appeared to be some question as to whether an actual organization could be formed.

b2  
b7D

[redacted]

[redacted] recently indicated that he planned to make a trip to [redacted] to look into the situation of the Woodville Klavern which is known as [redacted] instructed that this charter should be picked up if the members are not paying their dues. It was understood that [redacted] was no longer in the Woodville area. Someone claimed [redacted] had been involved in a brawl in a [redacted], and charged with carrying a concealed weapon. It is believed [redacted] may have gone to [redacted] [redacted] formerly an active Klan member, agreed to take [redacted] inasmuch as [redacted] knew all of the old Klan members around Woodville and would be able to locate them.

b6  
b7C  
b7D

As of September 26, 1966, [redacted] continued to conduct all UKA business from his residence [redacted]  
[redacted]

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

# Birch Society Secrecy Cloud Is Penetrated

By **ERNEST BAILEY**  
Post Reporter

The shroud of secrecy over the Houston area setup of the John Birch Society has become somewhat transparent.

The Houston Post has obtained a copy of what is purported to be the table of organization listing the names, addresses and telephone numbers of eight section leaders and 53 chapter leaders plus the names and addresses of 106 "home" chapter members.

**INCLUDED AMONG** the home chapter members—who do not attend meetings but get society mail—are the board chairman and president of a bank and trust company, the wife of the president of a mortgage company, a University of Houston associate professor, two physicians, a dentist, a building company head, the wife of a plant manager of a major chemical corporation.

Also, three lawyers, an architect, an insurance agency head, an office secretary of a gas company, an administrative assistant at an oil company, an oil operator, a contractor, the manager of a coffee shop and a lounge operator.

Charles O. Mann, major co-ordinator for the ultra-conservative society for Texas, Louisiana, Oklahoma and Arkansas, and Philip Blair Jones, the former Houston area co-ordinator, have declined to tell how many chapters are in the Houston area or give the names of local leaders and members.

**THEY HAVE** contended it is a Birch Society policy not to release membership figures or the names of members.

"A person's membership is his own business and it's his own privilege to tell if he's a member if he desires," said Jones, who resigned as Houston area co-ordinator to return to the ministry last year.

Robert Welch, a 67-year-old retired candy manufacturer from Belmont, Mass, is credited with forming the society as an anti-Communist movement in 1948.

The local table of organization shows that the eight section leaders are in charge of as few as two and as many as 11 chapters. The membership of Birch chapters usually range from 10 to 30 persons who meet in the homes of members. Chapter members usually know only those society members who are in their own chapter.

**HOME CHAPTER** members do not attend local chapter meetings. The society keeps in contact with them through the mail. Nine on the Houston area home chapter list requested their mail be sent in plain envelopes.

Included among the Houston area section leaders are an accountant, an insurance agent and a department manager of a large department store.

One section leader lives in Lake Jackson. Under him are two Lake Jackson chapters. One of these chapters is headed by a doctor.

Another section leader, who also serves as a chapter leader, gets his mail at the Alvin Post Office. One chapter leader under him lives at Angleton and the other on an Alvin rural route.

**OTHER SECTION** and chapter leaders live in all areas of Houston and Harris County. There are also chapter leaders at Texas City and Missouri City.

Among the chapter leaders are a pipeline company department supervisor, a draftsman for an engineering corporation, a lumber company salesman, a railroad company stenographer, an insurance agent, a civil engineer for a large construction company and an as-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

"THE HOUSTON POST"  
HOUSTON, TEXAS

Date: 4-16-67

Edition:

Author:

Editor: OVETA CULP HOBBY

Title:

Character:

or

Classification: 62-1521

Submitting Office: HOUSTON

☐ Being Investigated

ORIG. SENT TO BUREAU 4/18/67  
COPIES IN: 80-434  
Jen

62-1521-130

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 18 1967	
FBI-HOUSTON	



Assistant secretary of an insurance company.

The society has comfortable offices in a suite in the modern one-story office building at 7603 Hillcroft in Southwest Houston, the area where much of the organization's membership is concentrated.

The John Birch Society has been active in the Houston area since the society was first formed, but was given fresh impetus here when the local office was opened and a permit to conduct its affairs in Texas was issued by the secretary of state on March 25, 1964.

JONES' POSITION as Houston-area coordinator has not been filled, but Mann has taken over the duties of local coordinator. Mann, who hails from Odessa, also has an office in Dallas.

Welch said in Dallas on March 6 that the Birch Society had between 60,000 and 100,000 members nationally. This was about the same as a year ago, he said.

The society was named for Capt John Birch, an Army intelligence officer and a son of a missionary family. He was killed by the Chinese Communists Aug. 25, 1945—10 days after VJ Day near Soochow.

TO: SAC,

- |                                      |   |   |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|---|---|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Albany      | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Houston | <input type="checkbox"/> New York City  | <input type="checkbox"/> Tampa            |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Albuquerque | <input type="checkbox"/> Indianapolis       | <input type="checkbox"/> Norfolk        | <input type="checkbox"/> Washington Field |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Anchorage   | <input type="checkbox"/> Jackson            | <input type="checkbox"/> Oklahoma City  | <input type="checkbox"/> Quantico         |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Atlanta     | <input type="checkbox"/> Jacksonville       | <input type="checkbox"/> Omaha          |   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Baltimore   | <input type="checkbox"/> Kansas City        | <input type="checkbox"/> Philadelphia   | <b>TO LEGAT:</b>                          |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Birmingham  | <input type="checkbox"/> Knoxville          | <input type="checkbox"/> Phoenix        | <input type="checkbox"/> Bern             |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Boston      | <input type="checkbox"/> Las Vegas          | <input type="checkbox"/> Pittsburgh     | <input type="checkbox"/> Bonn             |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Buffalo     | <input type="checkbox"/> Little Rock        | <input type="checkbox"/> Portland       | <input type="checkbox"/> Buenos Aires     |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Butte       | <input type="checkbox"/> Los Angeles        | <input type="checkbox"/> Richmond       | <input type="checkbox"/> Hong Kong        |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Charlotte   | <input type="checkbox"/> Louisville         | <input type="checkbox"/> St. Louis      | <input type="checkbox"/> London           |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Chicago     | <input type="checkbox"/> Memphis            | <input type="checkbox"/> Salt Lake City | <input type="checkbox"/> Manila           |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Cincinnati  | <input type="checkbox"/> Miami              | <input type="checkbox"/> San Antonio    | <input type="checkbox"/> Mexico, D.F.     |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Cleveland   | <input type="checkbox"/> Milwaukee          | <input type="checkbox"/> San Diego      | <input type="checkbox"/> Ottawa           |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Columbia    | <input type="checkbox"/> Minneapolis        | <input type="checkbox"/> San Francisco  | <input type="checkbox"/> Paris            |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Dallas      | <input type="checkbox"/> Mobile             | <input type="checkbox"/> San Juan       | <input type="checkbox"/> Rome             |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Denver      | <input type="checkbox"/> Newark             | <input type="checkbox"/> Savannah       | <input type="checkbox"/> Santo Domingo    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Detroit     | <input type="checkbox"/> New Haven          | <input type="checkbox"/> Seattle        | <input type="checkbox"/> Tokyo            |
| <input type="checkbox"/> El Paso     | <input type="checkbox"/> New Orleans        | <input type="checkbox"/> Springfield    |   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Honolulu    |   |   |   |

Date June 1, 1967 152-131

RE:

[Redacted]

SEARCHED INDEXED  
SERIALIZED FILED

1507  
USTON

- Relayed personally 6-5-67
- b6  
b7C  
For appropriate
- ☐ For information ☐ Retention optional ☐ action ☐ Super
- ☐ The enclosed is for your information. If used in a future report, ☐ conceal all sources, ☐ paraphrase contents.
- ☐ Enclosed are corrected pages from report of SA dated

Attached is a copy of a self-explanatory letter along with a return envelope and general material on the "Ten Most Wanted Fugitives" program. Bufiles reflect nothing identifiable with captioned individual.

A representative of your Office should promptly contact [Redacted] return his enclosed stamped envelope and furnish the background material on the "Top Ten" program. This material will answer the pertinent questions raised.

Please note the obvious misapprehension of [Redacted] who indicates your Office was unable to furnish appropriate statistics on the "Ten Most Wanted Fugitives" program.

Enc. 8 (3) [Redacted] is Secretary & Bufile [Redacted] of John Birch Society  
Urfile [Redacted] 7603 Hillcroft, Houston, Tex 40.

May 24, 1967

Director, Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir,

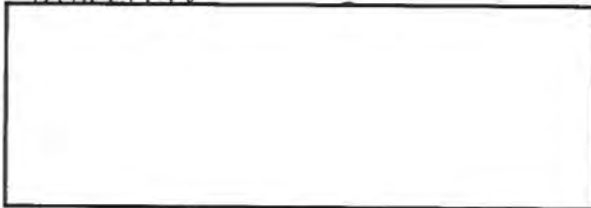
Enclosed you will find a return envelope. Please use it for reply.

The local FBI office has no statistics available on your "10 Most Wanted List". I would like to know what percentage of the persons placed on this are caught, how quickly, on the average. Also, what are the usual reasons for a man or woman being placed on the list aside from length of time at large, seriousness of crime and notoriety. Would there be any other reason for placement on the list.

Thank you in advance for the helpful statistics.

Sincerely

b6  
b7C





UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

# Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON

DATE: 6/7/67

FROM : [redacted] SAC, SAN FRANCISCO (100-47042)

SUBJECT: JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY —  
SM - X

*62-152/  
num other Refs.*

CS [redacted]

[redacted] advised SA [redacted] 6/1/67 that in Mid-August, 1966, while visiting [redacted] she met at a local church, a young white American, accompanied by a native Columbian white female. The young man identified himself as [redacted]. The young woman identified herself only as [redacted] (ph).

[redacted] invited [redacted] to accompany them to a local horse racing track that day since he spoke only English and wished her to act as interpreter between him and [redacted] who spoke only [redacted]. [redacted] accepted the invitation and during the afternoon [redacted] told her he was a member of the John Birch Society in the U.S., and that the FBI had recently questioned him concerning that affiliation. When he learned that [redacted] resided in [redacted] he told her that there were many members of the John Birch Society in San Francisco and that many of them were wealthy, influential, and were storing guns and ammunition which would be used in a forthcoming civil revolution. [redacted] stated that [redacted] was [redacted] resided with [redacted]. He said they would be going into the country so they would not become involved in the forthcoming revolution, and he advised [redacted] to do the same.

She said [redacted] further stated that if [redacted] it would give the John Birch Society the "green light" to move toward the civil revolution. [redacted] said he did not indicate that [redacted] was a member of the John Birch Society or would become involved in such a civil disorder, but indicated that with Mr. REAGAN as Governor of California, it would be easier somehow for the John Birch Society to operate.

- ② Houston (RM)  
3 - San Francisco  
(1 - 105-10998, Columbian  
Activities in San Francisco  
Division)  
(1 - [redacted])

RNB:law  
(5)

*62-152-132*

SEARCHED <i>h</i>	INDEXED <i>h</i>
SERIALIZED <i>h</i>	FILED <i>h</i>
JUN 12 1967	
FBI - HOUSTON	

*1 copy in 100-10476-A2*

SF 100-47042  
RNB:law

She said that [ ] mentioned several times that in the past the FBI had held him in jail for questioning as [ ] however, he did not say where this incarceration or questioning took place, nor did he identify any FBI agents or police officers involved. She said he also stated that the John Birch Society has infiltrated the FBI as well as "the police".

[ ] said she was alarmed and upset by the things [ ] said and did not question him at all concerning his activities. She said he indicated he was staying at the [ ]

b6  
b7C  
b7D

[ ] and he stated he was a native of [ ] [ ] said she saw [ ] and the young woman on one day only and had no further contact with them whatsoever. She gave the young lady her name and address but did not give her address to [ ] Since neither of them have contacted her since August, 1966, she assumes that they will not be contacting her. However, if she is contacted by them she will so notify the San Francisco office.

[ ] said that when the [ ] case in San Francisco received publicity concerning the large quantity of firearms and ammunition found in the possession of [ ] she became more concerned about the information related by [ ] [ ] and this prompted her to notify the FBI.

San Francisco indices negative concerning [ ]

The above information is furnished Houston for information purposes and no additional investigation being conducted by San Francisco concerning [ ]

Date received <b>8/11/67</b>	Received from (name or symbol number) <b>[REDACTED] (PROB)</b>	Received by <b>SA [REDACTED]</b>
Method of delivery (check appropriate blocks) <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> in person <input type="checkbox"/> by telephone <input type="checkbox"/> by mail <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> orally <input type="checkbox"/> recording device <input type="checkbox"/> written by Informant		
If orally furnished and reduced to writing by Agent: Dictated <u>Date <b>8/24/67</b></u> to <u>[REDACTED]</u> Transcribed <u><b>8/29/67</b></u> Authenticated by Informant <u><b>NA</b></u> b2 b7D b6 b7C		Date of Report <b>8/11/67</b> Date(s) of activity <u>[REDACTED]</u>
Brief description of activity or material <u>Meeting of Klan [REDACTED]</u> <u>[REDACTED]</u>		File where original is located if not attached <u>[REDACTED]</u>

Remarks:

1 - [REDACTED]  
1 - 157-236 (UKA)  
1 - 157-630 (UKA, KLAN # 3)  
1 - 157-1065 (UNIVERSAL KLANS)  
1 - [REDACTED] b6  
1 - [REDACTED] b7C  
1 - [REDACTED]  
1 - [REDACTED]  
1 - [REDACTED]  
1 - [REDACTED]  
b2 1 - 62-1521 (JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY)  
b7D 1 - [REDACTED]

ED:mb  
(12)

62-1521-133  
Block Stamp

SEARCHED _____	INDEXED _____
SERIALIZED _____	FILED <u>cd</u>
AUG 31 1967 FBI - HOUSTON	



b2  
b7D

[redacted]  
Houston, Texas  
August 11, 1967

A meeting of [redacted] United Klans of America, Houston, was held on the evening of [redacted] at the new meeting place on [redacted] members were present, [redacted]

b6  
b7C  
b7D

It was reported that [redacted] had decided he would join the Universal Klans inasmuch as [redacted] had offered to get any member of that Klan out of jail who needed it and the United Klans had never made such an offer.

There was a discussion about selling books and records at the [redacted]

[redacted] It was decided to set up a booth and sell this material every Saturday. On Saturday, [redacted] are to get there early and open the booth and they will be relieved later in the day by [redacted]

While this booth was being operated on [redacted] a woman who said she was from the John Birch Society stopped by and engaged the Klan members in a discussion about literature. She gave them the address of the American Opinion Library on Hillcroft Street and invited them to come out. This woman said she thought the Klan and the John Birch Society should work together.

[redacted] said two Klan members from Houston were going to [redacted] and obtain all of the United Klans literature from him. There was a discussion of trying to get the speaker system back from [redacted] but [redacted] claimed this originally belonged to the [redacted] and he intended to keep it.

b7D  
b2

[redacted]

Houston Klan members received letters from [redacted] [redacted] announcing rallies of the Universal Klans. There was to be a rally at Bogalusa, Louisiana, on August 12, 1967, but no one from Houston was going. [redacted] indicated he was leaving on his vacation on approximately August 25, 1967, and would probably stop at Natchez, Mississippi, and attend a rally there. [redacted] indicated he and his family were going to North Carolina to see relatives and would try and stop for Klan rallies along the way. He planned to stop at Tuscaloosa, Alabama, and spend one or two days with [redacted] to find out from [redacted] what should be done about United Klan members attending rallies of the Universal Klan and swapping information with that organization. [redacted] said he would return to work [redacted]

b6  
b7C  
b7D

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

**Do It Today**

Many of you who are reading this letter know that the communist conspiracy is very far advanced in this country—and yet you may be doing nothing about it. Being against communism is not enough. If you're not doing anything to stop the communists, you're not scaring them one bit!

The most effective anti-communist organization in the country is the John Birch Society, and this letter is a frank appeal to conservatives to find out more about the society, in the hope that you will join it. The John Birch Society can stop the communists, if we have enough dedicated members. Don't make the mistake of thinking that you're more effective outside the John Birch Society. It is the concerted action on the part of the members of the society that has the communists scared to death, so much so that they continue to attack it with all the venom at their command. The communists have spent millions of dollars in an attempt to destroy the John Birch Society.

Ask yourself the question—why have they tried so hard to destroy the society? The answer can be found in a quote from the report of the Senate Factfinding Subcommittee of the State of California: "We believe that the reason that the John Birch Society has attracted so many members is that it simply appeared to them to be the most effective, indeed the only organization through which they could join in a national movement to learn the truth about the communist menace and then take some positive concerted action to prevent its spread."

For more information, write to the John Birch Society, Belmont, Massachusetts.

**MRS. JOHN PUCKETTE**  
Route 1, Box 6  
Garland, Texas

ORIG. SENT TO BUREAU 10/29/67  
COPIES IN: 80-424

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

"HOUSTON TRIBUNE"  
HOUSTON, TEXAS

b6  
b7C

Date: 10/19/67

Edition:

Author:

Editor:

Title:

Character:

or

Classification: 62-1521

Submitting Office:

☐ Being Investigated

62-1521-134

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
OCT 20 1967	
FBI—HOUSTON	

154



SAC, CHICAGO

11/22/67

SAC, HOUSTON (62-1521) P

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
SM - X

b6  
b7C  
b7D

On 11/20/67, [redacted]  
advised he received a telephone call at about 8 PM, Saturday  
night, [redacted] from an individual who identified himself  
as [redacted]  
[redacted] apparently thought he was calling [redacted]  
[redacted] stated that he had [redacted]  
[redacted] and thought [redacted] should  
recall him. His purpose in calling was to ask [redacted]  
to send him literature concerning the John Birch Society  
and an application in order that [redacted] might join the  
local chapter.

[redacted] a personal friend of SA [redacted]  
[redacted] advised he would inform the Houston Office in  
the event [redacted] contacts him in the future.

2 - Chicago

① - Houston

JJD:sm

(3)

*WJ*

Searched  
Serialized  
Indexed  
Filed

62-1521-135

Houston, Texas  
July 25, 1968

Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Houston, Texas

I am not writing to turn in anyone, but am hoping you will have the time to answer a few questions for me, which has been bothering me for some time.

I am not a member of the John Birch Society on paper, but do read quite a bit of their literature and agree with it in many ways. The Society has been the object of quite a large amount of smear propaganda and I would like to know if the FBI has cleared it of any taint of communism. I also have purchased books at the American Opinion bookstore including J. Edgar Hoovers, Masters of Deceit. I do not want to leave myself open to any communist propaganda for it has absolutely nothing to offer me.

One other thing I have had on my mind for quite a while is, why do we allow the Communist Party to operate openly. We are spending billions of dollars fighting them 10,000 miles away from home but do not deny them the freedom of teaching their ideas here. It seems like no matter how I try to reason it out I can't come up with a logical answer.

There was a boy on the radio over station KTRH the other night who was from the University of Houston. He belonged to the SDA and admitted that they believed in the communist party and belonged to it. He also admitted that he was going to school on some ~~kind~~ of government funds.

Of course I realize that the Supreme Court has ruled this comes under our right of freedom of speech, and until the act is committed they are not doing anything illegal. I would like to see something done before the action, for by that time it will be too late.

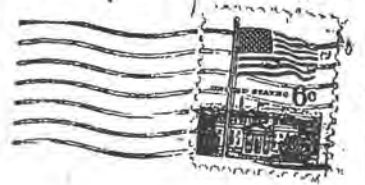
I do want to say that I think the FBI, <sup>and</sup> our police departments do a fine job even with the restrictions placed on them.

Will appreciate very much any information you can give me.

b6  
b7C

62-1521-136

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUL 26 1968	
FBI-HOUSTON	



Federal Bureau of Investigation

515 Rusk

Houston, Texas



P. O. Box 61369  
Houston, Texas 77061  
July 30, 1968

b6  
b7C



Reference is made to your letter of July 25, 1968.

The FBI does not afford clearance for any organization, however, you may wish to correspond directly with the Attorney General, Washington, D. C., relative to the status of the John Birch Society.

Your expression of confidence in the local police and the FBI, and your purchase of Mr. Hoover's book, is greatly appreciated. This office is also aware of the fact that a young boy appeared on television as related by you in your letter.

Very truly yours,

*WJ*

Wesley T. Whaley  
Special Agent in Charge

1 - Bureau  
1 - Houston (62-1521)  
WJS/cbl  
(2) *WJ*

Searched \_\_\_\_\_  
Serialized 44  
Indexed \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_ 44

62-1521-1360

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

## Welch To Speak In City Saturday

Robert Welch, president and founder of the John Birch Society, will give a speech in Houston on Jan. 18. The address, sponsored by the local chapters of the society, will be given at 8 p.m. at the Lamar High School Auditorium.

The title of Welch's speech is "It's All One Package." It concerns the breakdown in the morality and character of American youth. Welch contends that immorality is being actively promoted by communists as a part of their drive to overthrow the U.S. government.

Welch's speech is timed in conjunction with the formation of an ad hoc group known as the MOTOREDE committees (The Movement To Restore Decency). This group hopes to implement plans to stop the rising tide of pornography and subversion currently being introduced into schools all over the U.S.

Welch is expected to contend that certain of the new methods of "modern education" are purposely intended to corrupt the morals of the young.



Robert Welch

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

"THE HOUSTON  
TRIBUNE"  
HOUSTON, TEXAS

Date: 1-20-69

Edition:

Author:

Editor: HAROLD G. PYLE

Title:

Character: 80-424  
or

Classification: 62-1521

Submitting Office: HOUSTON

☐ Being Investigated

ORIG. SENT TO BUREAU 1-20-69  
COPIES IN: 80-424 KV

62-1521-137

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JAN 20 1969	
FBI-HOUSTON	



## Follow up

# Birchers here keep low profile

*Follow Up is a weekly feature that provides updated information on people and events formerly in the news.*

BY ZARKO FRANKS  
Chronicle Staff

About 15 years ago the cries of super-patriots known as John Birch Society members were heard here and throughout the land: Impeach Earl Warren. Get the U.S. out of the U.N.

The society told anyone who would listen that a grand, secret conspiracy was afoot to put the world under a single totalitarian government. Its founder, Robert Welch, suggested that former President Eisenhower and John Foster Dulles were communist sympathizers.

The society was perhaps as vocal here as anywhere else. Its members publicly protested the visit of Russians and opposed trade with communist nations.

Then, for the past 10 years or so, a virtual disappearance of the John Birch Society here. Nary a public peep. What happened? Did its members drift away? Is the conspiracy ended?

The John Birch Society is very much alive in Houston, says Jack McManus, director of public relations for the society at its home base in Belmont, Mass.

"We're five times stronger today than we were back in the early sixties," he said.

Robert Welch, who founded the society in 1958 and named it for an American Baptist missionary and U.S. Army intelligence officer killed in China in 1945, is still very much alive and active at age 76, McManus said.

The trail led to McManus after Frank Childs, 40, the paid area co-ordinator in southeast Texas for the Birch Society, refused to discuss its status here.

He disclosed a few details before he began referring all questions to McManus in Belmont.

Those details: A Birch Society chapter recently closed in Channelview because several men were transferred from Houston.

He was busy setting up another new chapter in the city. There are eight to 10 members in each chapter.

McManus said the Birch Society has 65,000 members in the nation and about 600 to 1,000 in the Houston area.

The society is deliberately maintaining a low profile, he said.

He described Frank Childs, the Houston area co-ordinator, as a "solid, middle-class American concerned with his country. He has a wife and children."

The basic tenets of the Society have not changed, said McManus. "Our goal is to offer a different perspective, to fit together the pieces of the puzzle because people are concerned and don't understand."

What is the puzzle and what don't the people understand?

"The worldwide conspiracy," he said.

He said major conspirators include former President Nixon, Mao, the Rockefellers, Soviet Premier Aleksei Kosygin and Soviet Communist party Secretary Leonid Brezhnev.

In its heyday here, under co-ordinator Philip Blair Jones, the society had its headquarters at 7603 Hillcroft.

Jones, a fundamentalist Presbyterian minister, left the society in the mid-Sixties to return to the ministry. Articulate, flamboyant and a newsmaker, he had sought to organize Birch Society teen-age chapters, claimed a number of police officers were Birchers, and once ducked a confrontation with a visiting Russian journalist.

His body was found on Feb. 9, 1973, in the attic of the Westheimer Chapel Presbyterian Church at 3219 Unity by two members of his parish.

Authorities ruled his death a suicide as a result of alcohol and amobarbital poisoning. He had been despondent because of problems within the church, a relative said.

As far as making news is concerned, the Birch Society here has been out of the public eye since the Jones era.

Today, it quietly operates out of the American Opinion Book Store, 2215 Richmond, and the home of its co-ordinator, Frank Childs.

American Opinion is a Birch publication that is sold at the bookstore on Richmond. Billy Marks, an employee there, said she is a member of the Birch Society and so is Harry Peters, the manager.

"Don't look for demonstrations or protests," said McManus from Belmont, Mass. "That's not our style. Our role is to motivate, educate people to what's going on."



Photo by Sam C. Pearson Jr., Chronicle Staff

Harry Peters, manager of American Opinion Book Store, a John Birch Society center at 2215 Richmond. After 15 years, where have all the causes gone?

"THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE"  
6/21/76

Houston, Texas  
HOFfile: 62-1521\*

62-1521-130

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JUN 22 1976	
FBI - HOUSTON	



6-30-60

PUBLICATIONS RECEIVED FROM C. SCOTT HISEET, 8610 Bintliff, Houston;  
RELATIVE TO THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY; BY SA. L. L. LARMORE:

1. The Blue Book of the John Birch Society
2. Bulletin for March 1960
3. Bulletin for June 1960
4. Booklet - Why People Become Communists
5. Pamphlet - The Scoreboard
6. Application form for membership in the John Birch Society
7. January 1959 issue of American Opinion
8. March 1960 issue of American Opinion
9. Publication in sheet form from Christian Anti-Communism Crusade,  
titled "WILL YOU BE FREE TO CELEBRATE CHRISTMAS IN THE FUTURE?"

✓ NOT TO BE RETURNED

62-1521- 1A1

## Socialism, Communism Are Same

**BUT HE DOES** say that the Blue Book is "simply a transcript, practically verbatim, of that presentation."

The Blue Book first traces the history of Communism and its successes around the world. And to Welch, socialism and Communism are the same.

He says Norway is under the Communist thumb "for all practical purposes," while Iceland and Finland are completely so. Even Hawaii, he says, is Communist-controlled.

He broadly implies that Nehru of India, Nasser of Egypt and

Sukarno of Indonesia are Communist.

**TURNING TO** the United States, Welch is just as jolting. Without benefit of documentation, he sees Communists everywhere.

He sees a gigantic conspiracy of Communists in high places, slyly softening the American people for eventual bloodless conquest.

"This door of betrayal is known to be wide open," he says in the Blue Book, "and nobody—in Congress, in the execu-

tive branch, in the Pentagon it are at least 30 huge Communist espionage rings operating in this country today."

He says a Communist-controlled communications union can tap "75 vital links in the most secret communications of our government itself."

**"THE BEST** informed authori-

ties (not named) say that there are at least 30 huge Communist espionage rings operating in this country today." Welch writes, "against the only two or three that have been only partly exposed." He says the nation's press, radio and television for the most part are controlled by Communists.

## A Plot To Suppress Literature

These news media, he says, President Roosevelt and the late Gen. George C. Marshall of press books written by the few patriots who try to expose the menace for their roles in Pearl Harbor.

**WELCH SAID** one such suppressed book was "The Struggle for the A-Bomb" by Dr. Medford Evans, a onetime chief of security training for the Atomic Energy Commission.

The book convinced Welch, at least, that up until that time (1952) Soviet Russia had never built an A-Bomb of its own.

"Their agents had simply walked off from our plants with the necessary separate parts," Welch said, "which had then been assembled in Russia and exploded whenever it best suited the Soviets' pretenses."

**YET, WELCH** continued, this story of treason that "should have rocked the nation" sold only 2,600 copies. Why?

Welch says press reviewers ignore such books, their publishers are intimidated and the few copies which get printed are slowly stolen from library shelves by Communist agents.

Getting more specific, the Blue Book on Page 99 accuses the late

Moving toward the present, Welch sits his sights on "the amoral man who has no slightest inner concern with right or wrong."

**WELCH NAMES** no name, but he apparently is talking of the then-Sen. John F. Kennedy.

"You will usually find him in church on Sunday morning," Welch writes, "maybe even a Catholic church."

"But as a member of the United States Senate, running for the presidency, and smart enough to know the strong Communist support behind-the-scenes which he will have to get in order to have any chance of being nominated in 1960, such an amoral man can do a tremendous amount of half-carrying on behalf of the Communist aims here in the United States."

**IN HIS** Blue Book, Welch also has a few words to say about then Vice President Nixon, who was a presidential possibility at that time.

## An Appraisal of Richard Nixon

"One of the ablest, shrewdest, most disingenuous and slippery politicians that ever showed up on the American scene," Welch said.

Welch accused Nixon of trumpeting his "highly cautious part" in the Alger Hiss case, while at the same time courting the left "by quietly knifing McCarthy."

IN 1952, Welch wrote, Nixon, aided in or perhaps engineered "the dirtiest deal in American political history."

Welch said Nixon deserted the late Sen Robert A. Taft "to make himself vice president (and to put Warren on the Supreme Court as part of that deal)."

"I don't think Nixon," Welch said, "is committed to anything other than the career of Richard Nixon."

WELCH WAS even blunter in another book he wrote sometime earlier, apparently about 1956.

That book, "The Politician," was distributed privately by Welch to a few close friends. Copies of it have since been recalled. It was never registered in the Library of Congress.

In that book, Welch labeled

former President Eisenhower and high members of his administration as Communists or traitors.

In "The Politician," Welch said of Mr. Eisenhower:

"THERE IS only one possible word to describe his purposes and actions. That word is treason."

At another point in the book: "In my opinion the chances are very strong that Milton Eisenhower is actually Dwight Eisenhower's superior and boss within the Communist Party. For one thing, he is obviously a great deal smarter."

Others described in the book as "Communist agents" include the late Secretary of State John Foster Dulles and his brother Allen, head of the Central Intelligence Agency.

THESE CHARGES are not mentioned in the Blue Book and are not official doctrine of the John Birch Society.

Many society members, in fact, believe "The Politician" is a myth, planted by their enemies to discredit them.

## A Member in Houston Agrees

But here in Houston, on a television debate only last Saturday, one society member agreed with Welch's charge.

Robert V. Gray, a salesman and unsuccessful candidate for a Republican county chairman in 1960, said Mr. Eisenhower is "a Red to me."

WHAT IS Welch's answer to this Communist conspiracy?

It is the John Birch Society, named after a Baptist missionary who became an Army intelligence officer and was killed by the Chinese Communists late in World War II.

Welch uses the last half of the Blue Book to detail the society's philosophy and program.

And to a lot of readers, the last part of the book is no less frightening than the first.

WELCH'S PLAN — now in action — is to fight the Communists with some of their own weapons: An unquestioned central leader, chapters working unknown to each other, infiltration of existing organizations, the use of fronts, the personal attack.

Welch gets down to the bedrock of his philosophy on Page 155 of the Blue Book.

"Democracy," he writes, "is merely a deceptive phrase, a weapon of demagoguery, and a perennial fraud."

In the same vein, he says republican government has its attractions and advantages under certain favorable circumstances.

"BUT UNDER less happy circumstances," he goes on, "it lends itself too readily to infiltration, distortion and disruption."

Welch makes plain that his organization will not tumble into these pitfalls.

"The John Birch Society is to be a monolithic body," he writes. "... The John Birch Society will operate under completely authoritative control at all levels."

Welch elaborates on his theme in the ensuing pages. Some excerpts:

"WE CANNOT stop for parliamentary procedures or a lot of arguments among ourselves."

## 'Business Every Step of the Way'

"We are not going to have are after are meaner and dirtier, and too slippery for you to put your fingers on them in the ordinary way."

Welch points out that this technique was used effectively by the late Sen Joseph McCarthy.

This, however, is only one facet of a 10-point plan of action which Welch lays out for his society:

1) The setting up of reading rooms, similar to a religious sect's reading rooms, in towns and villages everywhere, with rental libraries of approved conservative books not otherwise obtainable.

2) A WIDER distribution of such conservative periodicals as Welch's own American Opinion, a monthly review of current events.

Welch urges that American Opinion and Human Events be put in barber shops, the Dan Smoot Report in doctors' and dentists' offices, the National Review in every college library and fraternity house.

"The question technique, when skillfully used in this way, is mean and dirty," Welch admits.

"BUT THE Communists we

## Letters, Committees, Exposés

3) The support of such conservative radio commentators as Fulton Lewis and Clarence Manion through letters of approval to sponsors, stations and networks.

ALSO, THE development and support of local commentators with similar views.

4) The organized and controlled use of "the powerful letter-writing weapon" on legislators, government executives, newspapers, politicians and anybody else in sight.

As an example, Welch says United Air Lines dropped a plan to put the United Nations insignia with the words "We Believe" on all its planes. He credited a flood of letters to the airline directors.

5) The organization of fronts — "little fronts, big fronts, temporary fronts, permanent fronts, all kinds of fronts."

SOME SUGGESTED by Welch: Committee for Withdrawal of Recognition (of Soviet Russia), Committee to Protest the Firing of Medford Evans, A Petition to Impeach Earl Warren, and a Committee to Investigate Communist Influences at Vassar College ("headed by Vassar graduates, of course").

6) The shocking of the American people by the exposure of highly-placed educators, government officials and others suspected by the society of being Communists.

Welch says that even after spending \$100,000 on detectives to investigate a suspect, "I doubt if we could prove it on him."

BUT HE ADDS that a few



thousands spent for careful research would provide "all the material needed for quite a shock."

7) The heckling and harassing of "slimy characters" who falsely pose as anti-Communists while making speeches and broadcasts or writing books.  
8) The creation of a list of approved speakers to appear before church clubs, P-TA groups

and other organizations of all sizes for small fees or no fees.  
9) Action on the international front, including help for anti-Communist refugees in setting up governments in exile.

In "FINALLY, and probably most important of all these courses of action, we would put our weight into the political scales in this country just as fast and far as we could."

## Leader Can't Be a Politician

Having laid out his goals at the Indianapolis meeting, Welch next turned to the question of a leader for the John Birch Society.

He brought up the name of Sen Barry Goldwater, R-Ariz., praising him as a superb political organizer, "absolutely sound in his Americanism."

BUT WHILE Welch favored Goldwater over any other established leader in sight, he reasoned that Goldwater had one fatal flaw. He was a politician.

Welch decided that Goldwater could not supply the dynamic overall leadership needed because he "will inevitably think and move in terms of political warfare."

Driven by "the imminence and horror of this (Communist) danger," Welch then took the "desperate course" of offering himself as the society's leader.

"IT IS NOT because I want so frightening a responsibility," Welch said. "It is simply that, under the pressure of time and the exigencies of our need, you have no other choice, and neither do I."

One of Welch's critics, Sen Milton R. Young, R-ND, ques-

tioned the mental balance of the self-chosen leader of the society in a speech on the Senate floor on March 8. Referring to the accusation that Mr Eisenhower was a Communist, Sen Young said:

"It is unbelievable that any same person would make such accusations."

What sort of person is Welch? What is his background?

IN A BRIEF biography in the Blue Book, Welch says he was born on a farm in Choivan County in North Carolina.

His Welsh ancestry was heavy with farmers and Baptist preachers.

He spent four years at the University of North Carolina, two at the U. S. Naval Academy and two at the Harvard Law School.

Welch moved from North Carolina to Boston in 1919. He has spent most of his adult life with the James O. Welch Company, run by his brother.

UNTIL HIS retirement in 1957 to become a professional anti-Communist, Welch was vice president in charge of sales and advertising for the candy company.

## Air of Conviction, Sheer Stamina

Welch was on the board of directors of the National Association of Manufacturers for seven years. For three years, he was a regional vice president of the NAM, and he also was once chairman of its educational advisory committee.

Welch, who fancies himself as a public speaker, has taken his message to many business and civic groups in recent years.

A TWO-HOUR filmed speech by Welch is used to recruit new members to the society. Welch spends the two hours covering the main points in the Blue Book, often in the same words.

He is a balding man with faintly pouched eyes.

His chief assets as a speaker are an air of conviction and sheer stamina. In the film, he is not a shouter or a podium pounder. He appears to possess little of that peculiar personal magnetism the late Sen McCarthy had.

Between trips to Europe, Asia

and South America, Welch has lived for 22 years in Belmont, Mass.

USING BELMONT as his headquarters, Welch has organized the John Birch Society along the lines first laid out in the Blue Book.

The society is built around small local chapters, usually of 10 to 20 members, but sometimes larger. When a chapter grows too large, it splits into a new chapter.

Each chapter has a leader appointed by Welch. The chapter leader's main job is to collect the members' dues and forward them to Belmont.

In line with Welch's concept of authority from the top, society members get their orders in a monthly bulletin sent out from Belmont. The chain of command skips over chapter leaders.

THE CHAPTERS normally meet once a month, in the home of the chapter leader or a mem-

ber.

In areas with a number of chapters, Welch names co-ordinators to supervise the existing chapters and recruit new ones. Some co-ordinators draw a salary. Some are volunteers.

Over the co-ordinators, Welch has now named major co-ordinators in several areas. He says more will be added as the society grows.

In areas where there are no local chapters, new members are enrolled in a so-called home chapter at Belmont.

**FROM THE** first, Welch's goal has been a million members.

How well has he done? That is a society secret. As Welch says in a pamphlet given to prospective members:

"Neither the list of our members, of either local chapters or the home chapter, nor their number, is ever given out to anybody."

In the same pamphlet, however, Welch says the society as of last Jan 31 had one to 100 chapters in each of 34 states and the District of Columbia.

**HE LISTED** these states then still unorganized by the society: Alabama, Alaska, Colorado, Delaware, Idaho, Maine, Maryland, Minnesota, Nebraska, Nevada, New Jersey, Oklahoma, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island, Utah and Vermont.

The Los Angeles Times, in a recent series on the society, said the society expects to have 100,000 members by the end of this year.

One Southern California leader of the society told the Times there are several thousand members in that area.

**WELCH HIMSELF** says Greater Los Angeles and Greater Houston are two of the society's strongholds.

One Houston official of the society says there are hundreds of members in the Houston area.

The society is frankly out for all the money it can muster to pursue its campaigns.

The basic annual dues are \$24 for men, \$12 for women. But all members are invited to pay larger dues, if they can, "to support the society's work." The dues are payable monthly.

**A LIFE** membership costs \$1,000, payable in two consecutive annual installments of \$500 each.

At the meeting in Indianapolis, Welch also invited his 11 businessmen friends to contribute to the society as heavily as they could.

Other revenue comes from the sale of Blue Books (price, \$2), Welch's monthly American Opinion, and other pamphlets.

During the national election last fall, one of the society's monthly pamphlets told readers how to order campaign buttons reading: "Goldwater Says Don't Dodge — Vote for Nixon and Lodge."

**THE QUOTED** price was \$1 apiece for up to 20 buttons, 50 cents apiece for more than that.

How the money is spent is another of Welch's secrets. He does not have to account to members for it.

In a Feb 26 editorial criticizing the society, the Santa Barbara (Calif) News-Press observed:

"One million members, divided equally between men and women, would bring him \$18 Million a year. Quite a sum to play with without accountability."

**ALTHOUGH HE** is the society's absolute leader, Welch has set up a council to guide and advise him. The council members include:

Clay G. Parker and William J. Grede, Wisconsin industrialists, and both former presidents of the National Association of Manufacturers; Clarence Manion, former dean of the Notre Dame Law School; Spruille Braden, a former U. S. diplomat; T. Coleman Andrews, former commissioner of internal revenue, and Col Laurence E. Bunker, former personal aide to Gen Douglas MacArthur.

The council also has another assignment: To appoint Welch's successor as head of the society.

**"IF AND WHEN** an accident, 'suicide,' or anything sufficiently fatal is arranged for me by the Communists," Welch explains, "or I simply die in bed of old age and a cantankerous disposition."

Critics of Welch have focused their fire on his apparent contempt for democracy, his disbelief in democratic processes as a match for Communism.

Welch replies that his society could never become the seed of a dictatorship because membership is strictly voluntary.

**IN REPLY** TO growing criticism in California, Welch last week asked for an investigation of his society by that state's Senate Un-American Activities Committee.

Welch pledged that no society member would take the Fifth Amendment.

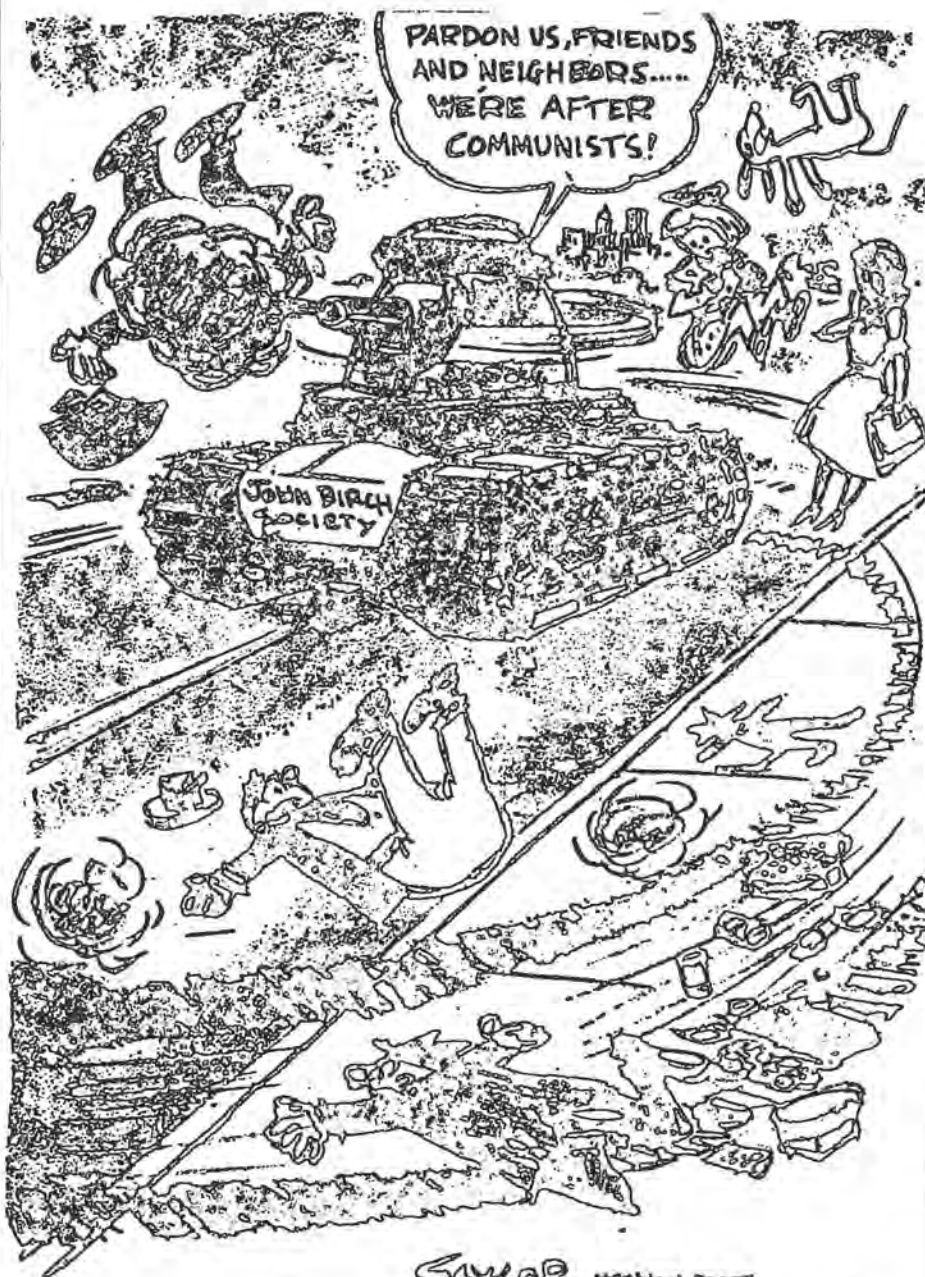
The California investigation is tentatively set for next summer.

In Washington, there has been talk of similar hearings by the House Un-American Activities Committee and the Senate internal security subcommittee.

**WELCH HIMSELF** was asked recently by a Boston Herald reporter if he still believed his earlier charge that Mr Eisenhower was a Communist.

"Now I don't know what I think," Welch was quoted as replying. "Eisenhower may be too dumb to be a Communist."

Some critics have accused Welch of using the very tools employed by the Communists in taking over a country — hate, fear, distrust and contempt for the duly constituted government.



SAYLOR HOUSTON POST  
DRIVER EDUCATION NEEDED

THE HOUSTON POST

3-30-61

Houston, Texas

RE: THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(HO file: 62-1521)

HOUSTON DIVISION

62-1521-38

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 30 1961	
FBI - HOUSTON	



## LET'S END FOREIGN AID

*To All Members Of Congress:*

The undersigned American citizen respectfully urges the discontinuance of all "foreign aid," except for strictly military assistance to our unquestionably anti-Communist allies, for the following reasons:

1. The whole scheme is of Communist origin, and was designed to accomplish Communist purposes. (See, among other sources, Earl Browder's *Teheran*, published in 1944.)
2. It was "sold" to the American people, as a means of fighting Communism, by the Communists themselves, with the support of their sympathizers, dupes, and a lot of misguided idealists who swallowed the Communist line. (Among its earliest supporters were Earl Browder, Alger Hiss, and Harry Dexter White.) It has never been opposed by the Communists and their most ardent sympathizers in this country. (And the Communists know what they are doing.)
3. From the very beginning, to the present, large amounts of American foreign-aid funds have been channelled, under specious excuses or arrangements, directly into the hands of known Communists, bent on subverting their respective anti-Communist countries into Communist hands. (Examples: Madam Sun Yat-sen in China, Souphannou Vong in Laos, Rashid Karami in Lebanon, and many others.)
4. It has been used, and is still used, to keep socialist governments in power, and to enable them to become even more socialistic. (Examples: Belgium, England, India, and many others.)
5. American foreign aid is from government, to governments. It thus replaces, and prevents, the free flow and sound use of American private capital and free-enterprise methods abroad.
6. It heavily subsidizes industrial plants abroad, run as parts of a government-managed economy, so that they can compete unfairly with American free-enterprise plants—which must pay the very taxes thus used to destroy their own businesses.
7. The huge domestic contracts resulting from American foreign aid are used to bribe or beguile an important segment of our whole business community into "going along with," or actual support of, our own government's policies that lead to socialism.
8. The total wastefulness in administration of the program is beyond any understanding except as, in many instances, a deliberate effort simply to get rid of American money. And the cost of the program, added to the extremely profligate other activities of our government, is an important cause of the inflationary movement that is ruining the value of our currency.
9. With our own national government virtually bankrupt today by any sound accounting, giving away billions of dollars to other nations is an act of criminal irresponsibility.
10. The foreign-aid program is used to make truly anti-Communist governments gradually become more and more dependent on the receipt of these American millions, and then to force on such governments policies which are "soft" on Communism and inimical to their countries' own desires and best interests.
11. It maintains huge hordes of American officials and their families in foreign countries, lording it over the natives, and making us more hated as "imperialists by the dollar" than we would be as actual "imperialists by the sword."
12. Increasingly, brazenly, and with ever more flimsy excuses, our foreign-aid money is supplied directly to outright Communist governments that are our avowed enemies. The pouring of American millions into the coffers of Gomulka of Poland, Tito of Yugoslavia, Sukarno of Indonesia, and a dozen other viceroys of the Kremlin, can only be the result of either treason or stupidity. And it is time to put an end to both.

Sincerely,

---

## LET'S END FOREIGN AID

Copyright 1960 by AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts

These cards will be supplied promptly at 12 for \$1.00, 100 for \$5.00, or 1,000 for \$40.00

**WHY  
PEOPLE  
BECOME  
COMMUNISTS**

62-1521-



*"The best short answer I have ever read  
to a question that puzzles so many Americans."*

DR. J. B. MATTHEWS ✓



## WHY PEOPLE BECOME COMMUNISTS

THE AVERAGE AMERICAN, on being shown the present reach and constant progress of the Communist conspiracy in this country, is exactly like the farmer being shown the giraffe. He simply insists that there isn't any such animal.

A main reason for this willful blindness is an inability of the typical American to understand how or why other Americans, very much like himself, could possibly have become Communists. This failure to comprehend or to believe is in turn due to a completely erroneous premise. He thinks that those few misguided souls, who do actually join the strange Communist sect, are moved by some unique and mysterious reason which is beyond the discernment of "normal" people.

There is, of course, no such clear-cut formula for converting any human raw material into the Communist product. The reasons why people become Communists are numerous, diverse, overlapping — and quite orthodox expressions of human psychology. Some of these reasons have been conscientiously reported, by such reconverts to Americanism as Elizabeth Bentley and Whittaker Chambers, out of deep personal experience. ✓ Arthur Koestler, George Orwell, and many other writers have brought detailed knowledge and penetrating insight into discussions of what makes a Communist and what makes him tick. We have neither the wish nor the ability to add anything new to the convincing analyses that are already available from many sources. But we shall try to summarize, in a few pages and plain language, the major inducements whereby Communism recruits and maintains its followers.

### The Star Gazers . . .

1. We should begin our list with the appeal of Communism to the idealism of its prospective converts. For historically



## Why People Become Communists

—though not currently—this has been the movement's greatest drawing card.

The young man or woman dreams of making this a better world. He sees poverty, suffering, injustice, and class distinctions around him. He is told that socialism will abolish these things. He does not know that the very poverty, suffering, injustice, and class distinctions at which he is looking have been reduced, by the americanist form of society, to their lowest levels ever reached, at any place on this planet or at any time in history. He does not know that their reduction to a further minimum is directly dependent on, and proportional to, the freedom of individuals from government paternalism. Many socialists never learn this, despite the clear and irrefutable evidence of all historical experience. Those who do, and remain socialists, carefully keep this knowledge from their young nibblers at the communist bait.

Even less does the idealistic young man know that socialism itself, far from eliminating poverty, suffering, injustice, and class distinction, will inevitably increase them all. He is given no warning that socialist plans automatically require an increasing regimentation of individual lives, which does not and cannot stop short of actual slavery of the citizen to the state. These facts, too, the socialists are careful to hide from him. Indeed, all but the most hardened among them are equally careful to keep these facts well hidden beyond the range of their own conscious attention.

### Who See Only The Stars . . .

So this idealistic young man becomes convinced that socialism offers not only a way, but the only way, to bring about the brave new world of which he has a vision. He accepts the term communism as meaning socialism in its ultimate and most beneficial form. He is led to believe that Communists are the most sincere and praiseworthy of all those who profess to be socialists. For only the Communists are willing to dedicate their lives to the active fight to establish a world-wide collectivist



## Why People Become Communists

Utopia. He is daily taught that the noblest plans are thwarted and delayed only by the willful selfishness of those who exploit their fellow men in a capitalistic system; of those who gain personal advantages from the poverty, suffering, injustice, and class distinctions caused by their exploitations. So he comes at last to accept Communist doctrine, that any means are justified in order to impose a communist organization of society on the whole world for its own good.

By this time the idealistic young man, his soul suffused with a thrilling glow of self-abnegation and self-submersion into a great cause, has become merely a cog in the Communist machine. More and more do action, discipline, and the momentum of the machine displace deliberation in his consciousness. He learns under relentless pressures to be ever more resolute and "realistic", in accepting and carrying out duties assigned to him in furtherance of Communist aims. Finally even treason and murder become methods to condone, or virtuous actions to be performed, when they serve the needs of a crusading army which is marching on to total and glorious victory. To him Communism has now become a fervent and overpowering religion, requiring unquestioning faith on the part of its devotees, and ruling out all other loyalties.

### The Lonely Hearts . . .

2. Another attraction of Communism depends on the basic lonesomeness of so many individuals. The Communist program not only gives meaning and purpose, however criminal, to lives which otherwise would be empty of both. It gives a sense of belonging, of sharing the comradeship and objectives and total strength of a vast army of fellow soldiers, to individuals who otherwise would feel lost and alone and unwanted.

There is a need in each human spirit to be a part of something greater than one's self, to lessen the futility of an ego-centric existence by doing something that is important to a group. The feeling is present in all of us, and very strong in many. Throughout America today this need accounts for bil-



## Why People Become Communists

lions of hours of work on the part of millions of individuals in tens of thousands of voluntary associations, clubs, societies, and organizations of every conceivable variety. But the Communists make far more capital for themselves out of this instinctive behavior than any other group. They do so by their unceasing reiteration of the glories of their cause, by the extensiveness of their disciplined direction of an individual's efforts, and by the consciousness which they instill into each convert of the vastness and power of the organization to which he now belongs. Membership in the Communist Party, or adherence to its organizational hive, is more demanding, more exclusive of other interests, and of far more significance in its impact on the individual's own life, than any other loyalty that individual may assume anywhere in the world today—with the single exception of devotion to fundamentalist Christianity. For this very reason a consuming loyalty to the Communist movement is the most satisfying burial of self in something larger than—again excepting fundamentalist Christianity—our contemporary world can offer. It is tragic but true that many a miserable free man is changed by Communism into a happy slave.

### ✓ Big Snobs With Little Equipment . . .

3. A very important appeal of Communism, not nearly so deserving of sympathy as those discussed above, is to the intellectual snobbishness of the sophomoric mind. There is nobody as fond of the adulation of the "intellectuals" as the pseudo-intellectual who has acquired the jargon, without the knowledge, of ideological scholarship. Being treated by these "intellectuals" as one of them, and hence as superior to the bourgeois herd of Philistines, is the greatest thrill an addleheaded "liberal" can enjoy. And the real Communist scholars, unlike those in any other field, are willing to go along with and encourage the pretensions of a superficial phoney, if their doing so serves any Communist purpose.

Frequently it does. For such an individual, through in-



## Why People Become Communists

herited wealth, or high political position within the family, or the possession of a famous name, or through some other fortuitous means, may be able to supply prestige or money or influence to Communist friends and to Communist enterprises. In that case even the most deeply learned of the Communists are entirely willing to put their tongues in their cheeks, cross their fingers, and lead their patron to believe that he is a reincarnated combination of Plato, Hypatia, and John Stuart Mill.

Many of these victims of flattery, especially in the upper social or political levels, do not join the Communist Party or actually become Communists in any technical sense. For Communism is a serious business. There is nothing the Communists can afford less, or dislike more, than to be made to look ridiculous. And half-baked exhibitionists as prominent—or as conspicuous—as Eleanor Roosevelt, Henry Wallace, and William O. Douglas, would not be wanted as Party members. But many a gain for the Communist side, in the Cold War game, has been made by such players, who either didn't know or didn't care that they were carrying the ball for the Kremlin's team. They were too constantly puffed up and exhilarated by all the applause and mental back-slapping from real members of that team.

### And Just Little Snobs . . .

At the lower levels, however, men who bask in the fellowship and flattery of people whom they inwardly regard as their intellectual superiors—and also as their superiors in daring, initiative, and leadership—are to be found in almost every Communist cell. The likelihood that they will make laughing stocks out of themselves, in any way that would reflect ridicule on Communist activities, is minimized. It is taken care of by the same discipline and detailed supervision that turns these would-be eggheads into useful work horses for the Communist Party. A great many of the half-educated pedants of the academic cloisters, in particular, belong in this classification. They join,



## Why People Become Communists

or affiliate themselves with, the Communists, because their acceptance into such "progressive" circles gives reassuring external support to their false show of scholarly standing—which otherwise is not convincing even to themselves.

### The Green Sickness . . .

4. Since the academic world supplies so much more than its proportionate share of American Communists, the above discussion leads easily into the next compartment of motivation. The label over that compartment is "Envy." College faculties are not the only source of men who are made Communists by envy, of course. Also, many other motives besides envy, or on top of envy, play their part in making Communists out of Phi Beta Kappas. But "operation envy" is simpler to explain and easier to understand in connection with collegiate raw material than any other. We'll develop our argument through an illustration.

John Jones and Bob Brown were classmates in the liberal arts college of Ivy University. When they graduated, John stood third from the top of his class, Bob stood third from the bottom. Today, twenty years later, Dr. John Jones is making seven thousand dollars per year as an associate professor of history at Siwash College. Mr. Robert Brown is making forty thousand dollars per year as vice-president in charge of sales of the Siwash Soapsuds Company. To the professor this is conclusive evidence of the injustice of a capitalistic society.

For Dr. Jones not only has much the more brilliant mind of the two. He is well aware of that fact. Also, he has applied that mind diligently in his profession. Whatever there is to know about history, he knows it; and what he doesn't know isn't knowledge. He has an adequate familiarity with the fundamentals of literacy in many other fields. He is conscious and proud of having acquired that honest scholarship through hard work, done by a good brain. Mr. Brown, on the other hand, hasn't read a book since *Forever Amber* was all the rage. His



## Why People Become Communists

intellect is only fair, and the idea of using it for anything more recondite than how to deal in commodity futures would strike him as absurd. Yet Brown is president of the Siwash Country Club, while Jones cannot afford to be a member.

### And The Wrong Cure . . .

Over the years, while this difference in financial status was evolving, Dr. Jones succumbed to increasing bitterness towards a sociological system that made such a difference possible. He resented the importance and the unfairness (as he saw it) of the money rewards as bestowed by a capitalistic society. He longed for a world in which money had either been abolished altogether, or had been relegated to a role inferior and auxiliary to that of ration coupons, allocations, permits and favors issued by governments. And Dr. Jones was a man who followed his resentments and theories to what seemed to him to be their clearly indicated destinations. He became a Communist.

Of course Professor Jones overlooked many things in his comparative appraisal of the efforts, the contribution to society, and the rewards of Salesmanager Brown and himself. Chief among them was the fact that he had chosen an academic career because of his distaste for, or unwillingness to engage in, the competitive struggle for financial success. Jones loved books and learning more than business and a larger pay check. It was his privilege to follow that preference. But to quarrel with the price put on his labors and accomplishments, by a free-market economy, was to set up his own egocentric sense of values as superior to that which automatically represented the total consensus of his fellow Americans. To follow his sense of values *for himself* was praiseworthy; to insist that everybody else accept it too was sophomoric arrogance.

In the second place, Dr. Jones is pleased with himself that he has never subjected *his* personality to the "vulgar" demands of salesmanship. He is proud of his solid standing in the cap-and gown fraternity; of the respect for his learning on the part



## Why People Become Communists

of his peers; and of many rewards which have come his way, of a kind that he doesn't think Brown would even understand. He considers the publication of his one book so far as a much more satisfying and important form of recognition of his worth than Brown's larger pay check; and he admits his presidency of the regional Association of Historians is a far more substantial honor than Brown's presidency of the country club. Yet he covets all that Brown has too.

Finally, Dr. Jones had never evaluated, nor even become aware of, the most significant terms in his equation. In order to reach a job at forty thousand dollars per year, in competition with other men after the same goal, Bob Brown had given of himself, in efforts more determined and in ways more demanding than John Jones ever dreamed. Jones feels virtuous because *he preferred* to avoid the strains and exactions of a competitive business existence. He doesn't realize that maybe Brown would have *preferred* to avoid them, too. But Brown considered the forty thousand per year, and such incidental returns as being president of the country club, as worth the cost out of his life and peace of mind. He may have been wrong, but the choice was his—just as Jones' choice was his own. And Brown, in the course of meeting the competition which he thus chose to face, helped the productive American economy to make available to Jones, at prices which even Jones could afford, the clothes on his back, the refrigerator in his kitchen, the car he drives, and even the books which he reads.

But Dr. Jones doesn't understand the processes through which he obtained these comforts in exchange for what he offered, nor Brown's part in those processes which made him worth forty thousand dollars per year to his firm and to the productive economy. Jones wants to have his cake and eat it too. This is something which the Communists promise to all fools who will listen, and especially to fools with a doctor's degree. And they obtain converts on the strength of these promises, despite the oft proved fact that in a socialist society both



## Why People Become Communists

Jones and Brown get less cake, either to have or to eat, than in any other.

### Tugwell Turns A Phrase . . .

We are not primarily concerned here, however, with the fallacy of the reasoning, or the unfairness of the invidious comparisons, which made Dr. Jones a Communist. We have wished merely to illustrate how envy serves as a Communist tool. Skillfully used by dedicated hands, it molds many a lukewarm prospect into an ardent member of the Party. And envy itself is only one model of the psychological tool called hatred, which is found in every Communist work box.

✓ For hatred is a very powerful emotion among human beings. In the early days of the New Deal, Rexford Tugwell emphasized the importance of bitterness—toward capitalism and capitalists—in the campaign to bring about those social changes advocated by himself and his fellow “liberals”. He urged the faithful to spur themselves on “by an energizing hatred”.

The driving force in the whole life and philosophy of Karl Marx was hatred—of everybody who was not as foul as himself. (Which was quite a large order, as the reader may easily verify by studying the details of Marx’s personal life.) Hatred was the one, and the decisive, contribution of Lenin to the mood of the Russian Revolution of 1917, whereby he converted it into the October Bolshevik Revolution and a Communist strike for power. We find countless exhibits of the same brand of sulphurous hatred coming to the surface in contemporary America, as in the desecrative utterances of Milton Mayer or the obscene blasphemies of Langston Hughes. ✓

### Both Seed And Harvest . . .

Hatred, of the laborer for his boss, of colored people for their white neighbors and vice-versa, of Protestants for Catholics—wherever there is a climate in which it can be cultivated, hatred is both a product of Communist effort and a necessity



## Why People Become Communists

of Communist progress. Sowing the seeds of such hatred and nourishing the crop is the constant work of many thousands of busy Communist minds and hands, both trained to make the greatest possible use out of every tragic opportunity. One result of all this fomentation of hatred is the continuous recruitment of additional workers, attracted to the trouble-making by a sympathetic feeling for its ostensible aims. These recruits range from Negro tenant farmers to the presidents of great universities. And identically the same envy or hatred of their fellow men, whom they consider better treated than themselves by the American system, may be the most powerful impulse to the acceptance of Communism on the part of both.

### Involuntary Captives . . .

5. But not all Communists become such by persuasion and indoctrination. Many are driven into the fold by blackmail, terrorism, and other forms of coercion. The ordinary reader will say to himself: "Oh, sure. Unfortunately some men are undoubtedly driven by such methods to carry out Communist orders, or even to work on their own initiative to advance Communist causes. They never turn into real Communists, however; and they are always ready to break away from their Communist associations at the first opportunity." This conclusion would be correct in some cases, but in a great many it would not.

Mr. X, when quite young, drank too much one night, got into a brawl in the local tavern, killed a man in the fight which developed, and served three years in the penitentiary for manslaughter. On leaving prison he went to another city, where nobody knew anything about him or his past, started over, and has led an exemplary personal life ever since. He went to a law school in the new city, passed the bar, began the practice of law, got married, had two children, and, at the age of thirty-one or -two was struggling along like most of us to "get ahead" in the world.

Primarily as a result of his undergraduate days in an Ivy



## Why People Become Communists

League college, Mr. X was a "liberal" in local politics, but only to the extent that was currently fashionable. Suddenly, out of a blue sky, he was offered a job in our State Department in Washington. The offer seemed to be solely the result of his friendship for another and more prominent lawyer in the town. It was made to sound entirely plausible to Mr. X by the kind interest of this importantly-connected fellow liberal in Mr. X's career, and by complimentary comments concerning Mr. X's special fitness for the position. These comments also conveyed a reasonable expectation of rapid advancement in government work. Mr. X accepted the appointment, with a few secret regrets about his hidden past, but without any suspicion that the Communists already had him and that past under their untiring observation.

### Become Enthusiastic Converts . . .

In Washington Mr. X did "get ahead" in the State Department. He discovered early that the more he leaned to the left, the more favorably he was regarded by those associates and superiors who were paying the most attention to him, and the more his responsibilities increased. Also, he was encouraged to "liberalize" his views still further by the strength and unanimity of the "liberalism" around him. Caught up in the flood of "enlightened democracy" and one-worldism at work, Mr. X found it a thrilling and happy experience to float along on so benign a wave.

Then a crisis arose. Mr. X found that he was expected to do something, or to take a position, which was so "liberal" that, even to his now slanted sensibilities, it bordered on treason. He rebelled, reluctantly but firmly. And that brought a gentle but equally firm awakening. Mr. X was led, politely and affectionately, to see that a "reactionary" could not be allowed to block the wheels of humanitarian progress, even if his past had to be revealed to get him out of the way of those wheels. He could take his choice. He could be smeared as a jailbird, and tossed out of his job as a "fascist traitor" to the cause of true de-



## Why People Become Communists

mocracy. Or he could continue to work and advance as a member of the noble brotherhood of courageous forward-looking, dedicated souls, who were striving to bring justice and peace and equality and democracy to the whole world. Disturbed, but wishing to be convinced, Mr. X went along with the noble brotherhood.

From that point on the screws gradually tightened on the sides of the trough in which Mr. X moved forward. But so long as he didn't try to jump out of that trough his progress became even faster and more assured. He soon realized the real terms of the two courses open to him. One was to fight an organization which, as he already saw, was too well entrenched and too insidiously powerful for him to make any impression against it. The other was to do the bidding of that organization; to let himself become ever more closely allied in aims and in spirit with its members and dupes; and thus to reap all the rewards of increasing power, prestige, and remuneration which that organization could throw his way. In due course Mr. X wound up as a full-fledged and consecrated Communist, doing his important part to advance the purposes of the international Communist conspiracy — and giving as much of his energy as directed to bringing other prospects along exactly the same path that he himself had followed.

### And The Victims Are Varied . . .

It is not only in every branch of the American government that blackmail pressures of this kind have been used, and are being used effectively today, by the hard-core Communists. Skillfully adjusted versions of the same basic mechanism are at work in our educational world, scientific world, and every area of public influence and authority. Nor is it only the man with a jail term behind him who is the victim of such smooth coercion. The stick for resistance and the carrot for submission are employed very cleverly, complementing each other, on many a poor soul who has been trapped into wearing the Communist harness.



## Why People Become Communists

We took Mr. X for our illustration simply because this article is dealing with the question of why "normal" people become Communists. In actual fact the blackmail approach is most widely and profitably used by the Kremlin's agents on brilliant men who have the extreme misfortune to be homosexuals. Such men seem to gravitate almost automatically into government service. They have a built-in and fundamental predisposition to resent the accepted standards and beliefs of our society. They also have, always over their heads, a threat of personal disgrace far more disturbing than the record of a jail sentence. So these unfortunate individuals become easy putty for molding by Communist techniques into disciplined and devoted members of the Party. Also, because of the introvert brilliance of their minds, and their obsessive desire for success and public recognition to counterbalance a guilt-consciousness that is ever with them, they develop into some of the most high-placed and potent Communists in any government. For these reasons it is not too surprising or unusual to find one of these agents of the conspiracy smoothly and subtly promoting its aims, as a high functionary of our State Department or as the administrative head of some great international organization.

### "Most Flagrant Of The Passions" . . .

6. This brings us logically to the next classification, which consists of those who are converted into Communists by the appeal of the carrot, without any brandishing of a stick being necessary. And the most effective carrot—especially for the ruthlessly ambitious spirits whom the Communists wish most to have on their side—is the promise of personal power.

In Russia, since Stalin consolidated his dictatorship and liquidated all of the old Bolsheviks along with whatever idealistic revolutionary fervor still remained; in China almost from the very beginning of the Communist drive; in most other countries since Stalin's control over international Communism became virtually complete; everywhere, for the past two decades, the sheer lust for power has been the primary motivation



## Why People Become Communists

of those who achieved high standing in the Communist "aristocracy". What has been presented to the world as a revolutionary movement based on ideological considerations, and what is still so presented to the outside masses and to millions of its own proletariat today, long ago degenerated in fact into a plain conspiracy of gangsters.

So the cunning man without conscience, in any country, who sees in the whole vast Communist apparatus the opportunity and means of achieving power over others, may join the Party for that ultimate purpose. The more clearly he sees from the very beginning that the Party's ideological pretenses are merely a sham and a weapon, so far as those in the top ranks are concerned, the more rapidly he advances within the hierarchy. In time he benefits at the level of baron, earl, or prince, from all the labor of the serfs at the bottom of the Communist organizational pyramid. And whatever his position at any given moment, in this unconfessed but rigid order of ascending privilege and power, he never ceases scheming and striving to climb higher still.

### Even As Gould And Capone . . .

In the United States of the nineteenth century such men would have set out to acquire this desired power through amassing great wealth by almost any means. Some of them still do. A generation ago men like Al Capone went into the rackets. Some of them still do. Twenty years ago men of the same type went into the lush fields of mushrooming labor unionism. Many still do. But increasingly over the past two decades men with this lust for power have gone into the vastly more expansive racket of imposing a secret Communist gangsterism on all the rest of America.

There are differences, of course. The earlier racketeers were willing to use *almost* any means to accomplish their ends. The Communists use *any* means, without qualification. The power of these earlier overlords was less tangible but more visible than that of their Communist counterparts. In America



## Why People Become Communists

today, for obvious reasons, the most powerful and successful Communists are the secret ones, whom the public—and most of their Communist underlings—do not even suspect of having Communist sympathies. The fact that their power is exercised behind the scenes, and that their authority and standing are known only to an inner circle, apparently adds to the thrill for men with minds of a certain type.

But the differences fade away before the likeness, in the paths and aims that have been pursued—with one exception. Because of the importance attached to the ideological argument, in the arsenal of Communist weapons, education and suavity are of far more value to the ambitious Communist than they ever were to the buccaneering financier, to the Tommy-gun gangster, or to the boss of a hoodlum battalion in some so-called labor union. So the Communist racket has attracted far better educated, more deceptive, and hence more dangerous men, to its ranks. Then, out of these lower ranks, the *most* cunning, *most* ruthless, and *most* dangerous have risen to be its leaders.

### "The Way To Promotion And Pay" . . .

7. Finally we come to the pure opportunist. Here is the man who does not consciously chart the course of his own future. But he does want always to float with, instead of to struggle against the current. And he is keen enough to sense the direction of the current, even in waters that seem placid to the less shrewd observer. It is a frightening fact that he and his kind now probably constitute the largest single source of converts to Communism—or at least to an actively sympathetic attitude towards Communists—as more and more "wise guys", even in America, become convinced that Communism really is "the wave of the future."

Whether these contemporary vicars of Bray are correct as to the ultimate total victory of the side they have chosen remains to be seen. But the evidence of their wisdom, as to the immediate practical and material results of their betrayal of both country and civilization, is visible on every hand. To pay



## Why People Become Communists

off, this betrayal does not even have to be active or premeditated; it can be passive, or unintentional, or both. So strong and all-pervasive has now become the Communist influence and the secret Communist strength in this country, that you do not even have to be pro-Communist to reap the rewards of Communist favor. All you have to do, for the ubiquitous wheels of this conspiracy to start turning on your behalf, is to be visibly and vigorously anti-antiCommunist. You fight to put down the enemies of the Communists, and they will fight, in dozens of ways which you cannot see and may not suspect, to lift you up.

The adherents to the anti-antiCommunist line range all the way from active participants in the Communist conspiracy to good patriots who are honestly duped into belittling the menace of that conspiracy. But all benefit from following it.

For Example . . .

Isn't it arguable, for instance, that Nathan Pusey's bitter opposition to McCarthy was an important factor in having him chosen as president of Harvard University? Or that General Zwicker's promotion in rank was largely due to the same influences at work behind the scenes? These influences wanted not only to reward Zwicker for his testimony, protecting the protectors of Communists; they wanted the whole American public to see that such acts of anti-antiCommunism would be rewarded.

Does anybody believe that Dore Schary's leanings to the left did not materially aid his meteoric career in Hollywood? Or that Drew Pearson's column would be syndicated in as many newspapers today, if he had not done such a grand job in the past of making trouble for those who made trouble for the Communists? Or that Walter Reuther would already have such tremendous and growing power in the American labor movement, if he had not once written a letter glorifying Soviet Russia and urging an equally glorious form of society for the United States?



## Why People Become Communists

### And In Reverse . . .

The other side of the coin has the stamp of the same regime. Does anybody think that George Meany's standing and future in the AFL-CIO have not been seriously damaged by, or will not gradually be undermined because of, his outspoken opposition to international Communism? Or that John O'Donnell's syndicated column has not been turned down by newspapers—even good newspapers which would really like to carry it—because of his known intolerance for traitors in our midst? Or that Corinne Griffith's movie career was not hurt by her crusading speeches in opposition to Communist doctrines? Or that General Kirk Lawton's retirement was not forced as a result of his patriotic effort to help in the exposure of Communists under his command at Fort Monmouth? Or that so brilliant a teacher and sound a scholar as Felix Wittmer would not long ago have become the president of some university but for his anti-Communist lectures and books?

Enough specific illustrations of Communist favor and disfavor at work, in every field of American opportunity, could be given to fill many magazines the size of this one. But the benefits of fellow-traveling for profit—unintentional or otherwise—are only presented as background for the real point of this section. We are concerned here with those members of our society, with great cleverness and little conscience, who observe the unfailing effectiveness of Communist hands pulling countless strings. They carry their analysis of the significance of this observation to its logical conclusion. Guided by that conclusion, they go all of the way into membership in, or affiliation with, the Communist Party.

### No List Can Be Complete . . .

This catalogue of reasons why people become Communists is by no means comprehensive. We have, for instance, barely touched the edge of the thinking expressed by "if you can't lick 'em, join 'em." The target most vulnerable to this shaft is the very man who sets out most energetically to fight the



## Why People Become Communists

Communists. He gradually finds, on digging in, that they are so much more insidiously penetrating every cranny of our collective existence, and are already so much further advanced, than he had ever dreamed. He succumbs to a feeling of hopelessness over the blind complacency of his fellow citizens, and over their unwillingness even to take an honest look at the flood creeping up around them.

It is all right to say, and it is true, that a man who goes over to the enemy for such a reason didn't have the right stuff in him in the first place. But it is certainly no secret after these thousands of years that the "stuff" in individual human beings varies a great deal. It is also no secret that most of the readers of this page can name a man, once holding a high position in American political life and highly respected for his firm opposition to the schemes of the Left, who is now ardently wielding a whitewash brush for his pro-Communist and Communist pals. He was badly beaten by the Communists — working through the usual "liberal" front—so he went over to their side. And he is merely one example of these defectors because of despair.

Then there is the phony reason, given by the Communists themselves, and even more noisily shouted by their gullible "liberal" stooges, that men become Communists as a result of their own poverty and illiteracy. The truth is that the over-educated man in highly industrialized and prosperous America is a far easier prey to Communist arguments than the most miserably poor and illiterate peasant of non-industrialized Asia. The more poverty-stricken and more ignorant the population of any country or any area may be, the more completely do the Communists have to depend on force and terrorism—with less help from an ideological fifth column—to impose their police-state rule. Our humanitarian instincts make us wish very much to see the standards of living and of literacy raised in all the poorer nations of the world—but not as a means of saving those nations from Communism. It takes at least a little learn-



## Why People Become Communists

ing and a little leisure to make the Communist sophistry a dangerous thing.

### And The Motives Combine . . .

There are other reasons, both real and imaginary, for the steady influx into the Communist camp. But we believe our list includes the most important. We have presented these appeals and motivations which make men Communists, however, as if each one acted alone; as if each appeal was successful only if the right type of "persuasion" was applied to exactly the matching susceptibility in a prospect for the Party. And of course this is not the case.

With the single exception of the man who is propelled by pure idealism alone, into a foul conspiracy which he mistakes for a self-sacrificing brotherhood, every convert to Communism has been pulled into the fold by a combination of reasons and arguments of varying proportions. Nor do the indoctrination, persuasion, and coercion ever stop, even after he has become a veteran Party member. Only the very clearminded, the very brave, and the very determined, ever break completely out of the web that binds them, once they have put themselves within its toils.

And so, year by year and month by month, the Communist flood rises. Especially do the secret members of the Communist conspiracy — which outweigh the open members in America, in both numbers and importance, by at least ten to one—increase their permeation of our whole social body. They go about their daily business or professional jobs, and their social and civic undertakings, exactly as do you and I, with nothing outward to distinguish them from loyal citizens. But the power and reach of their cumulative effort are visible on every hand, in the results they steadily achieve. You merely have to look each New Year's Day at how much closer the United States is to becoming a Communist nation than it was a year before, at how much closer the whole world is to becoming a Communist empire, to realize how unmistakably and steadily



## Why People Become Communists

the Communists are winning their Cold War everywhere. They are winning it in, among other places, the press, the public, the radio and television media, the labor unions, the schools, the courts, and the legislative halls of America. They expect to go on winning it while most of us refuse to believe that, in our country, anybody but a few crackpots ever become Communists. We had better start believing — fast — the overwhelming evidence of our sense and our senses.

### ABOUT THIS ARTICLE

These reprints of *Why People Become Communists* will be sent post-paid to any address in the United States at the following prices:

In Quantities of	1-99	.....	20¢ each
In Quantities of	100-999	.....	15¢ each
In Quantities of	1,000 or more	.....	12¢ each

This article, by the editor of the informal monthly review, *AMERICAN OPINION*, first appeared in the February, 1958 issue of that magazine. The subscription rate to *AMERICAN OPINION* is five dollars per year, to any address in the United States and Canada; seven dollars for other countries. For either reprints or subscriptions address

AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts



## AMERICAN OPINION REPRINTS

<i>Article</i>	1-99	100-999	1,000 or more
The World Health Organization ..... by <i>J. B. Matthews</i>	10¢ each	8¢ each	7¢ each
The Federal Reserve System ..... by <i>Hans Sennholz</i>	5¢ each	4½¢ each	4¢ each
A Letter To The South .....	10¢ each	8¢ each	7¢ each
A Letter To Khrushchev .....	3 for \$1.00	25¢ each	20¢ each
The American Opinion Scoreboard .....	8¢ each	5¢ each	4¢ each
Why People Become Communists .....	20¢ each	15¢ each	12¢ each
<i>Report of</i> American Bar Association .....	20¢ each	15¢ each	12¢ each
<i>Committee On Communist Tactics, Strategy, and Objectives</i>			

AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts



## ABOUT THE MAGAZINE

Among our recent contributors have been William Schlamm, Holmes Alexander, Dr. J. B. Matthews, T. Coleman Andrews, Medford Evans, Geraldine Fitch, Dr. Hans Sennholz, Colm Brogan, Hubert Kregeloh, Dr. Elizabeth Wilson, Rodney Gilbert, and other outstanding commentators on current history and its causes. And our regular feature, IF YOU WANT IT STRAIGHT . . ., cuts through the pretenses of government and press on both sides of the Cold War front.

We know that you can get "your money's worth" of reading value and pleasure, in any of a dozen periodicals at any newsstand. Our goal is to offer "your time's worth." We do our utmost to give you, for whatever minutes you invest in this magazine, a compacted bargain of information, analysis, authoritative opinion (and a suspicion of humor)—concerning the events and personalities of a sometimes pleasant, increasingly chaotic, but always exciting world.

## AMERICAN OPINION

Belmont 78

Massachusetts



DIRECTOR, FBI (62-104401)

2/26/60

9  
SAC, HOUSTON (62-NEW)

ROBERT H. WELCH, JR.  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

RE: SAC Letter 59-13 (F), dated 3/10/59 and  
SAC Letter # 60-5 (C), dated 1/26/60.

[redacted] advised that he attended  
a meeting of a group [redacted]

[redacted] He stated that he  
learned that this was a meeting to organize a chapter  
of "The John Birch Society". He stated that the meeting  
consisted of listening to a tape recording approximately  
2½ hours in length which was narrated by ROBERT H. WELCH,  
JR. He stated that [redacted] of the  
meeting appeared to be one [redacted]

b7C

b7D

[redacted] He advised that he was unable to obtain the names  
of all in attendance but estimated there were ten or twelve  
individuals present which included [redacted]

[redacted] advised  
that he attended a meeting of individuals [redacted]

[redacted] He stated that this was apparently an organizational  
meeting for a chapter of "The John Birch Society" which was  
being organized [redacted]

[redacted] He stated that the meeting  
consisted of listening to a tape recording narrated by  
ROBERT H. WELCH, JR. which appeared to him to be simply  
a reading of "The Blue Book" a copy of which was sold to  
him at this meeting. [redacted] stated that he did not  
know to what extent "The John Birch Society" was active in  
the Houston area and pointed out that he felt this was the  
first such meeting.

b7C

b7D

2 - Bureau  
2 - Houston

GWK:jj  
(4)

- c -  
[redacted]  
62-1521-73

HO 62-NEW

[redacted] did not comment as to whether he would  
continue meeting with this organization or whether or not  
he actually joined it. [redacted]

b7C

No further action is being taken in this  
matter.



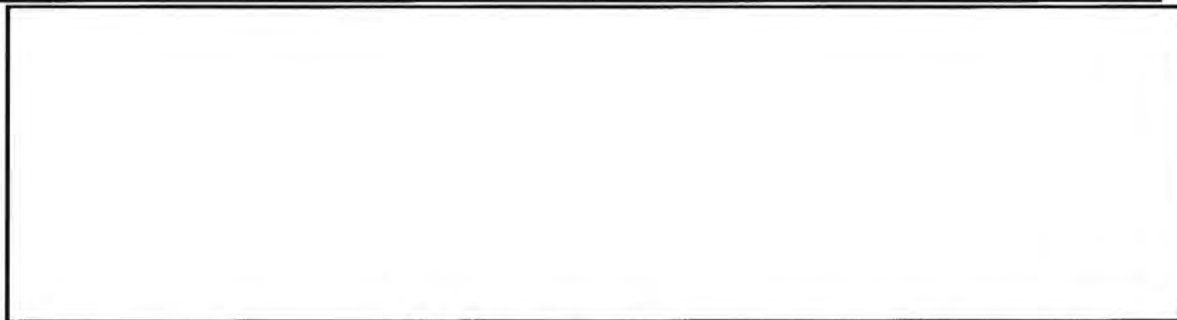
DIRECTOR, FBI (62-104401)

3/21/60

*RM* SAC, HOUSTON (62-1521)

ROBERT H. WELCH, JR.  
INFORMATION CONCERNING  
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

Re: Houston letter dated 2/26/60.



b7C

b7D

No further action is being taken in this matter.

2 - Bureau  
2 - Houston

QWK:gw  
(4)

*Close*  
*6/4/1/60*

5  
62-1521-2

TRUE COPY

April 8, 1960

J. Edgar Hoover  
Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Washington,  
D.C.

Dear Mr. Hoover:

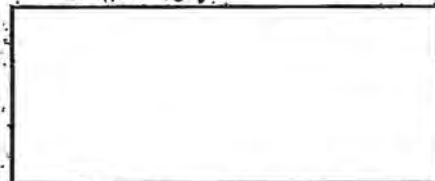
Recently my husband and I were asked to listen to a three-hour tape recording which was made by John Welch (from Boston, I think, or at least from that area). In this recording he told of Communist Activities and asked those listening to join a group called the John Birch Society, which would have as its goal an attempt to halt the spread of Communism, especially in the United States. Everything sounded quite logical; but having read how people have been duped into joining organizations only to find out later that they are fronts for communist activities, I prefer to find out from the top source just what information your bureau has on this society. After all, if we can't trust you, who else is left?

May we hear from you soon? This group will meet again in about two weeks and we would like to have our answer as to whether we want to be included in their work.

Many thanks from a fellow American, who by the way is secondly also a Catholic.

Sincerely,

/s/



-b7C

TRUE COPY

62-1521-7  
100-111118

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 19 1960	
FBI - HOUSTON	